Prostitution in London : with a comparative view of that of Paris and New York, as illustrative of the capitals and large towns of all countries : and proving moral deprivation to be the most fertile source of crime and of personal and social misery : with an account of the nature and treatment of the various diseases caused by the abuses of the reproductive function : illustrated by numerous plates / by Michael Ryan.

Contributors

Ryan, Michael, 1800-1841.
Francis A. Countway Library of Medicine

Publication/Creation

London : H. Bailliere, 1839.

Persistent URL

https://wellcomecollection.org/works/gthmeafs

License and attribution

This material has been provided by This material has been provided by the Francis A. Countway Library of Medicine, through the Medical Heritage Library. The original may be consulted at the Francis A. Countway Library of Medicine, Harvard Medical School. where the originals may be consulted. This work has been identified as being free of known restrictions under copyright law, including all related and neighbouring rights and is being made available under the Creative Commons, Public Domain Mark.

You can copy, modify, distribute and perform the work, even for commercial purposes, without asking permission.

wellcome collection

Wellcome Collection
183 Euston Road
London NW1 2BE UK
T +44 (0)20 7611 8722
E library@wellcomecollection.org
https://wellcomecollection.org

31. B. 16

vengeance

18/

Dr. Wigglesworth



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2011 with funding from
Open Knowledge Commons and Harvard Medical School

http://www.archive.org/details/prostitutioninlo00ryan

REVIEWS

OF

DR. RYAN'S WORKS.

I.

THE PHYSICIAN'S VADEMECUM, or a Manual of the Principles and Practice of Medicine and treatment of Diseases. Greatly enlarged, and adapted to the present state of Science. By Michael Ryan, M.D. &c. 1837.

Five thousand copies of Dr. Ryan's edition of this work have been sold within four years.

The late Dr. Hooper expressed great gratification at the maner in which Dr. Ryan edited this work in 1833. It is now (1837) much more improved.

Part I.—Physiology, Pathology, and Therapeutics. By Dr. Ryan.

Part II.—Practice of Medicine.

1. Fevers, Continued—Typhus, Intermittent, Remittent, Eruptive, Scarlatina, Small Pox, &c. Dr Hooper and Dr. Ryan.
2. Diseases of the Skin, Hair, and Nails. Dr. Ryan.
3. Diseases of the Brain and Spinal Marrow. Dr. Ryan.
4. Diseases of the Heart and large Blood-vessels. Dr. Ryan.
5. Diseases of the Respiratory Organs, Air Tubes, and Lungs. Dr. Hooper and Dr Ryan.
6. Diseases of the Digestive Organs, Stomach, Intestines, Liver, Spleen, &c. Dr. Hooper and Dr. Ryan.
7. Diseases of the Genito-Urinary Organs, Kidneys, Bladder, Urethra, Vagina, Uterus, and Ovaries. Dr. Ryan.
8. Diseases of the Senses—of the Eye, Tongue. Ear, and Nose.
9. Diseases of the Cellular, Mucous, Serous, Synovial, Muscular, Tendinous, Osseous, and Glandular Tissues. Dr. Ryan.

"It is a service rendered to physicians, to prepare for them a compendium of what is most essential in practice; but such a work cannot be done but by an experienced and clever physician. The Vademecum to which we allude has these advantages.

"The foundation of the work belongs to the late Dr. Hooper, but the improvements, and the discriminate and talented selection of the most positive progress of the healing heart, are due to Dr. Ryan. Indeed, we feel happy to have this opportunity of giving our opinion on the incessant and valuable contributions, with which this gentleman has enriched the medical literature of his own country. The Vademecum of Dr. Ryan con-

tains, in the most lucid and yet condensed manner, all that it is necessary to know in the practice of the present day—the etiology, symptomatology, and—semeiotic have been considerably enlarged; the article on auscultation contains the latest improvements—that on diseases of the skin, of the heart, of the respiratory, digestive. and genito-urinary organs, contains such valuable aud progressive additions, that this Vademecum is stamped more with the talented judgment of Dr. Ryan, than with the original plan of Dr. Hooper, who necessarily would be a little behind in time. We are of opinion this Vademecum reflects great credit on Dr. Ryan, and we think a translation of it would be well received on the Continent."—*The Continental and British Medical Review, August* 1838.—*Edited by Dr. Bureaud Riofrey.*

The sale of this work since its publication has been almost unprecedented. It is a text book in every medical school in the kingdom, and is in the possession of a large portion of medical students and practitioners.

II.

A MANUAL OF MIDWIFERY; or Compendium of Gynæcology and Pædonosology; comprising an Account of the Symptoms and Treatment of the most important Diseases of Women and Children, with the Management of the various forms of Parturition. Third edition —Plates.

"A work replete with useful information."—*Good's Study of Medicine,* by Professor S. Cooper, 1830.—*Cooper's Surgical Dictionary,* 1830, art. Cæsarean Section.

"The work of Dr. Ryan evinces considerable research, discrimination, acuteness of observation and talent."—*Medico-Chirurgical Review.*

"Dr. Ryan's work will contribute, in a high degree, to maintain the respectability and importance of Midwifery. It contains, according to its size, more useful information on the subject than any work with which we are acquainted. Instead of spreading out the subject into an extensive systematic treatise, the author has drawn together all the facts both in ancient and modern writing, and has condensed them into 353 duodecimo pages. (The present edition extends to 737 pages). Every page of it is full of information, highly interesting to the practitioner; and we feel satisfied that it will be appreciated by every scientific member of the profession."—*London Medical and Surgical Journal.—Late Editors.*

"Your Manual appears to me to contain a great deal of most useful information, in a very concentrated form. I have no doubt that it must prove useful to the profession, more especially to the younger part, who, from its size, can carry it along with them and consult it when they wish to refresh their memory on any point on which they may have doubt."—*Extract of a Letter from Professor Burns, of Glasgow, Author of the Elements of Midwifery to the Author.*

"M. Ryan vient de faire en Angleterre pour les accouchemens, ce que M. Le Professeur Duges et M. Tarvenier avaient fait en France, pour la même branche de l'art et pour la chirurgie.

"Ce Professeur pour supplier a quelques lacunes qui existaient dans les ouvrages du même genre publiès avant le sien, s'est attaché à faire connaitre les maladies des organes de la génération, celles qui se developent pendant la grossesse, apres l'accouchement, et enfin les affections propres a l'enfant nouveau né.

"Aux mots généralement usités, M. Ryan a cru dévoir substituer des expressions nouvelles, telles que gynæcologie, gynæcotomie, gynæcophysiologie, parthenosologie tokologie, &c. &c., qui forment autant le chapitres dans les quels il examine a fond toutes les questions qui s'y rapportent. Le Manuel d'Accouchement de M. Ryan est un livre destiné a devenir classique, aussi croyons nous devoir le recommander aux étudiens de Paris et de Montpellier, qui veulent étre au courant des progres de cette partie de

la chirurgie chez nos confrères d'outre mer."—*Dr. Martinet, Revue Medicale Francaise Etrangere.*

"M. Ryan a resemble, dans un manuel fort bien résumée ce qu'on possede de mieux sur la tocologie."—*Trait Complet de l'Art des Accouchemens, &c. &c. Par Alf. Velpeau, Professeur de Clinique Chirurgicale, &c. &c. Troisieme edition*, 1835.

"Though we have an utter abhorence at all 'royal roads' to practical Midwifery and its relations, as explained in the title-page of this work, we are, nevertheless, bound to confess, that the author has redeemed his promise with more success than has been done in any work we have yet seen, which purported to be a 'Manual.' The author appears to have been laborious in research; and to possess the happy art of condensing the sense of his authorities, without destroying the spirit of their meaning. He appears truly (as he declares it was his intention) 'to compress, in a small compass, all the valuable matter connected with the anatomy, pathology, and therapeutics of the organs peculiar to females, and to have furnished his readers with the opinions of many authors that cannot be consulted in this country. This culling is acceptable to all readers; and is particularly valuable to those who may be desirous of consulting the literature upon the various subjects of which he treats. He rarely fails to instruct by his erudition, and as seldom misleads by his practical precepts, or his therapeutical views; he appears to be well qualified to choose, from the many sources to which he has resorted, as he manifests a tact for selecting, which can only be derived from both experience and correct reasoning. In a word, it is a work that we can confidentally recommend, not only as safe to follow, so far as his directions go, but as one from which the experienced and well-instructed practitioner may find considerable information, and under these impressions we do most cordially recommend its perusal to the American public."—*American Journal of the Medical Sciences.*

"Dr. Ryan has done great credit to his own talents and learning, and a service to mankind by his industry."—*North American Medical and Surgical Journal.*

"This work contains three times more matter, according to its size, than any one we have seen."—*Medical Gazette*, 1832.

III.

A MANUAL OF MEDICAL JURISPRUDENCE; compiled from the latest Medical and Legal works; intended for the use of Barristers, Solicitors, Coroners, Magistrates, Jurors, and Medical Practitioners.

"This work, which is an elementary compilation from the best authors, interspersed with many original and acute observations, we can only notice briefly, since it is as incapable of being analysed as a dictionary. If the author only laid claim to the merit of *industry*, that merit would be not a little laudable; but he is, in fact, possessed of great talent as a learned writer, a judicious compiler, and an instructive lecturer. The ability and diligence with which he conducts our contemporary, the *Medical and Surgical Journal*, have made him quickly and very favourably known throughout the profession; and the versatility of his talents as an author and a teacher is exceedingly creditable in so young a man.

"Dr. Ryan's object, in this cheap and well-constructed volume, is to give a concise, yet comprehensive view of the received principles of Medical Jurisprudence, and to collect in a small compass, the scattered and isolated facts from the standard works of legal and medical writers. In many portions of the work, however, Dr. R, is not a mere compiler; for, in both the ethical and legal chapters, he has interwoven a great deal of original—and, what is of more consequence, of enlightened, liberal, and independant remarks, which cannot fail, if duly appreciated to be of great use to all classes of the profession, but more especially to the junior members The laws relating to the different orders of the faculty, in these kingdoms, are

more clearly enunciated, and more succinctly compiled, than in any other publication in the English or any other language. In the selections on medical evidence and the adulteration of alimentary matters, much original and important information is concentrated in a small space. We have, indeed, been astonished that Dr. Ryan has been able to dedicate so much time to the laborious research which this volume displays, considering his other avocations as an editor, a lecturer, and a practitioner. After this declaration it is hardly necessary to say, that we recommend the work."—*Medico-Chirurgical Review.* Edited by Dr. James Johnson.

"The main object of Dr. Ryan has been to afford the greatest quantum of information in the smallest compass, and in the most familiar manner; or, in fact, to simplify the subject as much as possible, so as to render it intelligible to every class of medical practitioners, as well as to gentlemen of the bar, jurymen, and even general readers. This task the author has executed in a satisfactory manner; and although we do not agree with him in some points, we are acquainted with no work on Medical Jurisprudence that presents so much valuable information, in so condensed and yet so clear a form. Dr. Ryan has freely availed himself of the labours of his predecessors in this department of knowledge; and it is one peculiar merit of his, that he frankly acknowledges his obligations to his fellow labourers in science, and that he never avails himself of the observations of others without giving them due credit; this is so rare in the present book-making age, that we are happy in holding up our author's scrupulous attention in 'rendering unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's,' as an example by which we might all profit.

"An American edition of it, with such additions and alterations as may be required to adapt it to the jurisprudence of this country, would we think, be a valuable addition to our medical and legal libraries; not as a substitute for the more extended work of Dr. Beck, but as a *catalogue raisonné* of the various questions in which jurisprudence calls on her sister science for elucidation."—*American Journal of the Medical Sciences.* Nov. 1. 1831.*

"This work is calculated to attract the attention of professional men, and, indeed of the general reader, by the variety of its matter and perspicuity of style."—*Herald, Courier.*

"It is replete with interesting and valuable information"—*Literary Gazette, Sun, Globe.*

"It is invaluable to medical practitioners, and may be consulted safely by the legal profession."—*Weekly Dispatch.*

IV.

THE PHILOSOPHY OF MARRIAGE, in its Social, Moral, and Physical Relations, and on the Diseases of the Genito-Urinary Organs, which impair or destroy their functions, with the Physiology of Generation in the vegetable and animal kingdoms, being part of a course of Lectures on Obstetric Medicine, annually delivered in London. Fourth edition in the press.

"In the whole range of bibliography there is not a more taking title. The work will have a prodigious sale, and does not contain a word which ought not to be known to medical practitioners."—*Dr. Johnson's Medico-Chirurgical Review, July,* 1838.

One thousand five hundred copies of this work have been disposed of in one year, and another edition of three thousand is about to go to press. The work has met with the approbation of many medical philanthropists, and other distinguished personages, including clergymen of every denomination. The author has a voluminous correspondence to this effect.

---

* An American edition was published by Professor Griffith.

V.

Third Edition in two years—In the Press, greatly enlarged and improved.

THE UNIVERSAL PHARMACOPŒIA OF HOSPITALS, of England, Ireland, Scotland, France, Germany, Italy, Spain, Portugal, Sweden, Russia, and America: or, a Conspectus of Prescriptions of the most eminent Physicians and Surgeons, in Medicine, Surgery, and Obstetricy—of MM. Magendie, Lugol, Dupuytren, Alibert, &c.; with the doses and modes of administration of all new and ordinary Medicines, action of Medicines on the Animal Economy, and rules for prescribing and compounding Medicines. Translated from the new French edition of MM. Milne Edwards and P. Vavasseur, and considerably augmented by Michael Ryan, M.D. &c.

"One of the most valuable Vademecums we have ever seen."—*Medico-Chirurgical Review, Oct.* 1835.

"Upon the whole, we can very properly recommend this work, not only to our readers in general, but to those medical men in particular who, amid the wear and tear of practice, sink into a hurtful sterility of prescription, and take up the convenient doctrine that there are only half a dozen good medicines in the world."—*British and Foreign Medical Review, July,* 1836.

"A sort of Polyglot Pharmacopœia."—*Medical Gazette.*

VI.

THE MEDICO-CHIRURGICAL PHARMACOPŒIA; or, a Conspectus of the best Prescriptions: containing an account of all new medicines, doses, &c.—Magendie's and Lugol's Formularies—the Improvements in the London Pharmacopœia—New Nomenclature—the Treatment of Poisoning—Dislocations, Fractures, and natural and difficult Parturition.

"A vast mass of information is in this little work, all useful at the bedside of sickness, or in the short hour of leisure from professional toils and anxieties."—*Dr. Johnson's Review, July,* 1838.

Two editions of this little work, one thousand each, were required during the last year, 1838.

VII.

Obstetric Aphorisms on the management of natural and difficult Parturitions, Puerperal Diseases, and the Physical management of Infants.

VIII.

Prostitution in London, with a comparative View of that of Paris and New York, as illustrative of the capitals and large towns of all countries; and proving moral depravation to be the most fertile source of crime, and of personal and social misery, with an account of the Nature and Treatment of the Various Diseases caused by the abuses of the Reproductive Function. Illustrated by numerous plates.

IX.

A complete Atlas of Midwifery, containing thirty-four plates, and one hundred and twelve figures, illustrative of the Science and Practice of Obstetricy; with descriptive and practical remarks; being a companion to all elementary and systematic works on the subject, and the first perfect delineation of this branch of surgery hitherto published in this country. The work will appear in ten monthly numbers, each containing sixteen pages 8vo. of letter-press, with three highly finished plates, averaging three figures on each.

X.

A complete Manual of Auscultation and Percussion, applied to the Diagnosis of Diseases of the Heart, Lungs, Abdominal and Pelvic Viscera; with an account of the Treatment of Phthisis, Asthma, &c.

The author has condensed the conclusions of all modern celebrated authors, and added the results of his own personal experience. The substance of this work appeared in the *London Medical and Surgical Journal*, Vol. IX., 1836, edited by him, and afterwards in the Physicians' Vademecum. He felt much interest in this class of diseases, as two of his relatives and namesakes had written on Asthma and Pulmonary Consumption, and he was determined to describe these diseases, as well as those of the Heart, in strict accordance with the present state of science. He has published several most interesting and distressing diseases of the heart, which were relieved by a new mode of treatment.

NEW WORKS

PUBLISHED BY

H. BAILLIERE,

219, REGENT STREET.

DR. ROBERT WILLIS'S

ILLUSTRATIONS OF CUTANEOUS DISEASES.

A Series of Delineations of the Affections of the Skin in their more interesting and frequent forms; with a Practical Summary of their Symptoms, Diagnosis, and Treatment, including appropriate Formulæ.

By ROBERT WILLIS, M.D.

Licentiate of the Royal College of Physicians, Physician to the Royal Infirmary for Children.

The Drawings after Nature; and Lithographed by Arch. Henning.

These Illustrations will be comprised in about Twenty Fasciculi, in Folio; the Drawings will be Originals, carefully Coloured.

Each Number will comprise Four Subjects, delineated on the same number of Plates. The price will be Five Shillings per Number, which will appear regularly on the *first* of each month, till the completion of the Work.

Three Numbers are already out.

BRITISH ANNUAL,

AND EPITOME OF THE PROGRESS OF SCIENCE.

Edited by ROBERT D. THOMPSON, M.D.

1 *vol.* 12*mo. cloth boards, lettered, 3s. 6d.*

FIRST YEAR, 1837, contains numerous Practical Tables of Weights, Measures, and Coins. The popular papers are by the following gentlemen:—

The Rev. BADEN POWELL—Recent Progress of Optical Science.

CHARLES TOMLINSON, Esq.—Experiment and Observations on Visible Vibration and Nodal Division, illustrated with 8 wood-cuts.

W. S. B. WOOLHOUSE, Esq.—Recent Progress of Astronomy.

THOMAS S. DAVIES, Esq.—The History of Magnetical Discovery, with 3 wood-cuts.

ROBERT D. THOMSON, M.D.—Recent Progress of Vegetable Chemistry.

SECOND YEAR, for 1838, 1 vol. 12mo. price 3s. 6d. The popular papers are by

THOMAS THOMSON, M.D., Regius Professor of Chemistry in the University of Glasgow—Sketch of the History and Present State of Geology.

ROBERT E. GRANT, Professor of Comparative Anatomy, University of London—On the Principles of Classification as applied to the Primary Division of the Animal Kingdom, illustrated with 28 wood-cuts.

ROBERT D. THOMSON, M.D.—Notice of New Chemical Substances discovered during the past year.—Life of James Watt, Illustrated with his portrait.

H. H. LEWIS, Esq.—Table of the Analogous Properties of the Imponderable Agents.

THIRD YEAR, for 1839, 1 vol 12mo. price 3s. 6d. will also contain popular papers by J. Scott Russell, Esq., Robert E. Grant, Garnier, Robert D. Thomson.

New Works Published by H. Baillière.

DR. WILLIS'S RAYER ON THE SKIN.

A THEORETICAL AND PRACTICAL TREATISE ON THE DISEASES OF THE SKIN.

BY P. RAYER, M.D.

Physician to the Hopital de la Charité, Paris.

Second Edition, remodelled and much enlarged, in one thick volume 8vo. of 1300 pages, with Atlas, royal 4to. of 26 plates, finely engraved, and coloured with the greatest care, exhibiting 400 varieties of Cutaneous Affections, 4*l.* 8s. London, 1835.
The text separate, 8vo. in boards, 1*l.* 8s. The Atlas, 4to. separate in boards, 3*l.* 10s.

"This is an incomparable work on Cutaneous Diseases. Some notes are added by the Translator, Dr. Willis."—Medico-Chirurgical Review, July, 1835.

"Je dois dire, que cet ouvrage m'a paru presenter un Tableau complet de l'Etat actuel de la science sur cette branche de la Pathologie; que la Therapeutique surtout a reçu de nombreaux et d'utiles developpements.

"Enfin, pour que rien ne manquat a l'utilite et au succes de cet ouvrage, l'auteur a reuni dans un Atlas pratique la generalite des maladies de la Peau; il les a groupes dans un ordre systematique pour en faciliter le diagnostic; j'ajouterai que leurs diverses formes y ont ete representees avec une fidelite, une exactitude et une perfection qu'on n'avait pas encore atteintes."—Brichetau Archives Generales de Medecine, Juin, 1835.

"We believe this to be by far the most complete work on the skin that exists in any language, The Atlas is the cheapest work we have ever seen, as it contains twenty-six beautifully coloured plates, each containing numerous figures."—Medical Gazette, June 27, 1835.

GRANT'S ANATOMY.

OUTLINES OF COMPARATIVE ANATOMY.

BY ROBERT E. GRANT, M.D., F.R.S.L. & E.

Professor of Comparative Anatomy and Physiology at the London University College, Fullerian Professor of Physiology at the London Institution.

8vo. Illustrated with 160 wood-cuts. London, 1835—38. 1*l.* 8*s.*
*** Parts 4 and 5, to complete sets, 4s. each.

GRANT'S CLASSIFICATION.

ON THE PRINCIPLES OF CLASSIFICATION,

As applied to the PRIMARY DIVISIONS of the ANIMAL KINGDOM.

BY ROBERT E. GRANT, M.D., F.R.S.L. & E.

Professor of Comparative Anatomy and Physiology in the London University College, Fullerian Professor of Physiology at the London Institution.

12mo. Illustrated with 28 wood-cuts. London, 1838. 3s. 6d.
*** In the British Annual, 1838.

GRAHAM'S CHEMISTRY.

ELEMENTS OF CHEMISTRY,

Including the APPLICATIONS of the SCIENCE in the ARTS.

BY THOMAS GRAHAM, F.R.S.L. & E.

Professor of Chemistry in the London University College.

Parts 1, 2, 3,—2s. each.

THOMSON'S VEGETABLE CHEMISTRY.

CHEMISTRY OF ORGANIC BODIES—VEGETABLES,

BY THOMAS THOMSON, M.D., F.R.S.L. & E.

Regius Professor of Chemistry in the University of Glasgow, Corresponding Member of the Royal Academy of Paris.

One large vol. 8vo. London, 1838. 24s.

New Works Published by H. Baillière.

WARDROP'S BLOOD-LETTING.

ON BLOOD-LETTING;

An account of the Curative Effects of the Abstraction of Blood, with Rules for employing both local and general Blood-letting in the Treatment of Diseases.

BY JAMES WARDROP, M.D.

Surgeon to the late King.

12mo. London. 4s.

"As a summary of our opinions of Dr. Wardrop's Treatise, we are compelled to say that it comprises much judicious and valuable matter."—Forbes' British and Foreign Medical Journal, July, 1836.

THE EDINBURGH DISSECTOR;

OR, SYSTEM OF PRACTICAL ANATOMY.

For the use of Students in the Dissecting Room. By a FELLOW OF THE COLLEGE OF SURGEONS IN EDINBURGH. 1 vol. 12mo. London, 1837. 9s.

"Students will find this to be an exceedingly useful manual."—Medical Gazette, Oct. 21, 1837.

BELINAYE'S LITHOTRIPSY.

COMPENDIUM OF LITHOTRIPSY;

Or, an Account of the Removal of the Stone from the Bladder without Incision; adapted for general comprehension, with a series of Statistical Tables, and 45 wood-cuts, representing the most important instruments, and improvements up to the present time.

BY HENRY BELINAYE, ESQ.

Surgeon extraordinary to H. R. H. the Duchess of Kent, Medical Officer attached to the Embassies of France and Austria.

8vo. London, 1836. 8s.

LEBAUDY'S ANATOMY.

THE ANATOMY OF THE REGIONS

Interested in the Surgical Operations performed upon the Human Body, with occasional Views of the Pathological conditions, which render the interference of the Surgeon necessary.

In a Series of 18 Plates on India Paper, the size of Life.

BY J. LEBAUDY, M.D.

With Additions. Folio. London, 1835. 1*l.* 4s.

"As a series of plates, we admire the execution of Mr. Lebaudy's work, both for clearness and accuracy."—Forbes' British and Foreign Medical Journal, July, 1836.

EVEREST'S HOMŒOPATHY.

A POPULAR VIEW OF HOMŒOPATHY.

Exhibiting the Present State of the Science.

BY THE REV. T. R. EVEREST, RECTOR OF WICKWAR.

Second Edition, Amended and much Enlarged. 8vo. London, 1836. Price 6s.

New Works Published by H. Baillière.

DUNSFORD'S HOMŒOPATHY.

The PATHOGENETIC EFFECTS of some of the PRINCIPAL

HOMŒOPATHIC REMEDIES.

Translated from the German, with Introductory and Practical Observations.
BY HARRIS DUNSFORD, M.D.
8vo. London, 1838. 9s.

SIMPSON'S HOMŒOPATHY.

A PRACTICAL VIEW OF HOMŒOPATHY;

Or, an Address to British Practitioners on the General Applicability and Superior Efficacy of the Homœopathic Method in the treatment of disease; with Cases.

BY STEPHEN SIMPSON, M.D.

Late resident Practitioner at Rome.

8vo. London, 1836. 10s. 6d.

CURIE'S HOMŒOPATHY.

PRACTICE OF HOMŒOPATHY.

BY P. F. CURIE, M.D.

8vo. London, 1838. 9s.

A. D. LAMARTINE.

SOUVENIRS PENDANT UN VOYAGE EN ORIENT,

PAR A. DE LAMARTINE.

2 vols. 16mo. 12s.

H. G. OLLENDORFF'S GERMAN GRAMMAR.

A NEW METHOD

OF LEARNING TO READ, WRITE, AND SPEAK THE

German Language,

IN SIX MONTHS. BY H. G. OLLENDORFF,

Translated from the Fifth French Edition. By G. J. BERTINCHAMP, 12mo. cloth boards, 9s.

The Hand-writing separately, stitched, 2s.

IN THE PRESS,

ETYMOLOGICAL AND EXPLANATORY DICTIONARY.

IN THE LATIN, ENGLISH, FRENCH, GERMAN, ITALIAN, AND DUTCH LANGUAGES.

Of the Nomenclature of the Natural Sciences—Anatomy, Physiology, Medicine, Surgery, Chemistry, Materia Medica, Zoology, Botany, and Physics. In one large 8vo. volume.

BY ROBERT WILLIS, M.D.

Librarian to the Royal College of Surgeons in London.

PROSTITUTION IN LONDON.

DE LA PROSTITUTION DANS LA VILLE DE PARIS, considérée sous le rapport de l'hygiène publique, de la morale et de l'administration ; ouvrage appuyé de documens statistiques, puisés dans les archives de la préfecture de police, avec cartes et tableaux, par A. J. B. PARENT-DUCHATELET, Membre du Conseil de Salubrité de la Ville de Paris ; *deuxieme édition*, revue et augmentée, ornée du portrait de l'auteur. Paris 1837. 2 forts vols. in 8vo. 16*s*.

" Pour composer ce livre," dit l'auteur, " j'ai eu recours aux documens renfermes dans les archives de la préfecture de police. Il existe dans cette administration une division connue sous le nom de *bureau des mœurs ;* là se trouvent des registres et des papiers d'une haute importance. J'ai puise largement à cette source précieuse, et je puis dire que c'est dans ce bureau que j'ai composé mon livre ; j'en suis redevable à la bienveillance de MM. les préfets de police *Delaveau, Debelleyme, Mangin, Girod* (de l'Ain), *Raude, Vivien, Gisquet, &c.*

" Il m'a fallu plusieurs années pour achever dans le *bureau des mœurs* le relevé, non seulement des écritures qu'on y tient et des registres qu'on y conserve, mais, encore des *dossiers individuels*, tenus sur toutes ces femmes, qui se trouvent à la tête des maisons de prostitution, et sur chacune des filles publiques que l'administration a pu soumettre à sa surveillance."

PROSTITUTION IN LONDON,

WITH A

COMPARATIVE VIEW

OF THAT OF

PARIS AND NEW YORK,

AS ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE CAPITALS AND LARGE TOWNS OF ALL COUNTRIES; AND PROVING MORAL DEPRAVATION TO BE THE MOST FERTILE SOURCE OF CRIME, AND OF PERSONAL AND SOCIAL MISERY;

WITH

AN ACCOUNT OF THE NATURE AND TREATMENT OF THE VARIOUS DISEASES, CAUSED BY THE ABUSES OF THE REPRODUCTIVE FUNCTION.

ILLUSTRATED BY NUMEROUS PLATES.

By MICHAEL RYAN, M.D.,

MEMBER OF THE ROYAL COLLEGES OF PHYSICIANS AND SURGEONS IN LONDON,
SENIOR PHYSICIAN TO THE METROPOLITAN FREE HOSPITAL,
LECTURER ON THE PRACTICE OF MEDICINE, ETC.

LONDON:
H. BAILLIERE, 219, REGENT STREET.
PARIS: J. B. BAILLIERE, RUE DE L'ECOLE DE MEDECINE.
LEIPSIG: J. A. G. WEIGEL.

MDCCCXXXIX

1680

TO

PHILANTHROPISTS AND PUBLIC FUNCTIONARIES,

THE FACULTIES OF

LAW, MEDICINE, AND DIVINITY, LEGISLATORS, JUDGES,

TO THE CONDUCTORS OF THE PUBLIC PRESS,

AND ALL ENLIGHTENED INDIVIDUALS;

AND MORE ESPECIALLY

TO THE

FOUNDERS, PATRONS, AND GOVERNORS

OF ALL

PUBLIC HOSPITALS AND OTHER CHARITIES,

PARTICULARLY OF

FEMALE PENITENTIARIES, THE SOCIETIES FOR THE SUPPRESSION

OF VICE, AND THE PREVENTION OF PROSTITUTION,

THIS WORK IS

MOST RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED

BY

THE AUTHOR.

PREFACE.

THE author of the following pages cannot fix upon a more proper patronage for a work of this kind, than that of all philanthropic and enlightened individuals, whose compassion for the misfortunes and miseries of all classes of society, and more especially of the female sex, has led them to establish public charities, for the alleviation of moral and physical suffering, and the improvement of public morals.

According to our contradictory, anomalous, and absurd laws, statute, common, ecclesiastical and civil—women are most shamefully and inhumanly exposed to seduction, prostitution, adultery and ruin ; they seem to be considered the lawful prey to the lust, treachery, cruelty, and artifices of licentious and profligate men, who may seduce and then abandon them at will, as is evinced by that infamous charter of libertinism, the Poor Law Bill ; by the irrational and unchristian Marriage Laws, which encourage adulterers, fornicators and seducers, while they severally punish helpless and degraded women.

It must be apparent to the very commonest observer, that a want of wise legislation in these respects, is the

source of all the evils which the disinterested and humane endeavours of philanthropists, are intended to prevent and remedy.

It is also obvious, that a system of laws, which leaves the horrid crimes of seduction, adultery, and other sexual vices, not only out of the list of its capital punishments—but even exempts them, as public offences, from any animadversion whatsoever, in our ecclesiastical, criminal, and civil courts of judicature, must promote all those mischiefs, which arise from the encouragement that impunity affords to vice. According to our present laws, any man may seduce and abandon at his pleasure as many unfortunate, deluded objects of his brutal appetite as he pleases, and then consign them to infamy, disgrace, and to the horrible alternatives of suicide or infanticide, which are punishable with the penalties of transportation for life, or even an ignominious death.

The following pages will clearly show the alarming increase of moral depravation, seduction, bastardy, prostitution, adultery, and a multitude of other monstrous crimes, which philanthropists, legislators, clergy, and public functionaries endeavour to prevent or diminish. But whilst human laws are opposed to the divine and natural, such evils will continue. Every effort, therefore, should be made by the benevolent to influence the Legislature, and to procure laws based upon nature and religion. If the Legislature and Government will take nature and the Sacred Scripture for their guides, they will find the remedy in their own hands; if they will but consult medical advisers—individuals well acquainted with the subject—not the antiquated members of our medical corporations, whom chance and intrigue may have placed in office, they

will legislate wisely; but not under ordinary circumstances, which are influenced by ignorance and folly. To all desirous of this kind of legislation, this volume is most respectfully addressed.

It will be found in the following pages, that the author has had the kind co-operation of the Commissioners of Metropolitan Police, the Societies for the Suppression of Vice and the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution; and more particularly, that he has obtained the most important information from Mr. J. B. Talbot, the humane founder of the truly excellent society last mentioned. He has acted in concert with these public functionaries, in the ardent hope and full expectation of obtaining better legislation for the protection of public morals, and the diminution of crime and punishment.

With respect to the second part of the work on Venereal and other Diseases, it was introduced in consequence of the suggestions of able reviewers of M. Duchatelet's voluminous production, "that the statistical should be followed by medical facts; thus connecting causes and effects." This arrangement, though decidedly the best, has not been hitherto adopted. It renders the work complete, and is also calculated to diminish much personal and social misery. It will deter many from the commission of vices most injurious to health, and to the interests of society.

The numerous diseases of the genito-urinary organs are illustrated by original drawings, very carefully made by the author's former pupil, Dr. Hills; and the illustrations are, perhaps, the most numerous hitherto published, presenting to the medical student and junior practitioner a

faithful guide to the study of a class of maladies, too much neglected hitherto.

Were medical critics fair and impartial, it would be unnecessary to observe, that none but a fool would ever think of referring to a medical work for the excitement of vicious passions, as its tendency is certainly the very reverse. Nevertheless, such is the unfair spirit of reviewing now-a-days, that the author, despite of the best motives, cannot expect to escape the unjust censures of certain critics. In fact, however well-intended may have been the tendency of his works hitherto, they have been unfairly attacked and abused by rivals at home, though highly commended by contemporaries abroad, as well as at home.

At the end of these pages a few hints will be found, addressed to this class of critics, explaining the cause of their hostility.

4, Charlotte-street, Bloomsbury, Bedford-square,
February 1, 1839.

CONTENTS.

PART I.

CHAPTER I.

Observations on the diseases arising from venereal abuses, 1 —Extent of the subject—it embraces not only the various venereal complaints, but diseases in the head, chest, abdomen, and all parts of the body, 2—Exposure of the ignorance and frauds of advertising quacks, 3—Objections of pseudo-moralists, hypocritical and pharasaical persons answered, 4—Remarks on prostitution and immorality in modern times—during the French revolution in 1789—in New South Wales and other penal colonies, in Paris, London, and New York in 1838—showing the almost universal prevalence of vice, crime, and diseases, 8—Commiseration of persons imposed on by ignorant quacks, who ruin their health and plunder them, 9—No specific remedy—every case requires different treatment, 10—Irrationality of mankind about the reproductive function, 11—Most men monomaniacal concerning it, 11 —Deluded by quack advertisements, hand-bills, &c. 12—Moral depravation in all ages and nations, 13—Not yet fifty years since,—horrors—violations, murders, drownings, termed republican marriages—national baptisms, bathings, &c. during the French Revolution, 14-15—Horrible barbarities now, 1838, committed in Spain, 15—Immorality of the ignorant equal in all countries, as fully illustrated by our own convicts, who were vitiated at home, 16.

CHAPTER II.

Moral depravation in penal colonies—authentic report of the state of immorality in New South Wales, Van Diemen's

Land, and Norfolk Island, published by Parliament in 1838, and attested by twenty-three official witnesses, including governors, judges, clergy, &c. 17—Abstract of Parliamentary Report, 18—Origin of transportation—foundation of the colony of New South Wales, 19—Report of the very Rev. Dr. Ullathorne on the state of immorality of convicts—the natives schooled in horror by English prisoners, 21—Progress of convicts after landing,—and their horrible treatment, 21—Their assignment—their incomparable immorality, 22—The lash the incentive to industry and good conduct, 23—Number of floggings and lashes inflicted, 23—Punishment shamefully disproportioned, 24—The chain-gangs—their confinement in wooden cribs, so small that they must stand and lie down alternately, 24—Account of female convicts; their immorality—marriages—almost all drunken and abandoned prostitutes—objects of constant pursuit and solicitation, 26—Their pregnancies;—convict men preferred to women as domestic servants, 27—Married women the common property of male convict servants, who rob their masters, 27—The factory or prison for females, a lying-in hospital, 28—To supply the scarcity of women, companies sending out ship-loads of free and virtuous females from this country, under the falsest pretensions of making happy marriages with convicts!!! which leads to disappointment and self-abandonment, 28—The penal settlement of Norfolk Island worse than Sodom and Gomorrha; the horrible description of the very Reverend Dr. Ullathorne, and of the parliamentary report on transportation, 29—Unparalleled degree of immorality, 30—Reformation—apostrophe to British governments—Tory and Whig, 31—Transportation to Norfolk Island worse than death, 32—Dr. Ullathorne's laudable motive for writing—his heart-rending appeal to the Christian world on behalf of convicts, 33. 39.

CHAPTER III.

PROSTITUTION IN PARIS.

Commendation of M. Duchatelet's work by all medical reviewers, 40, 41—Its object to improve public morals in

all countries. Different nations have applied to the French magistracy for an account of their sanatory regulations, 42—Which ought to be studied by legislators, judges, magistrates, and medical practitioners, 43—Sections or chapters in M. Duchatelet's valuable work. Number of prostitutes in Paris—nations which furnish these women, 43—Chiefly of the lower classes;—smallness of remuneration of young women—equally applicable to this country, 44, 45—Education of prostitutes—ages from ten to sixty-three years—causes of prostitution, 45—Laziness—misery—vanity—love of fine dress—seductions by military officers, students, commercial travellers, &c., domestic troubles and ill-treatment of relatives and friends—a long sojourn in prisons, hospitals, and low lodging-houses, 46—Insufficiency of wages the most common cause of prostitution, 47—Prostitution increased by civilization—its injurious effects on all families, 48—Opinion of those women, truly unfortunate, of themselves, 49—Their religious feelings, 49—Their feeling of shame—turn and character of mind, 50—Manner of passing their leisure hours—extraordinary example, 51—Slovenliness—bad and good qualities, 52—Their lovers and bullies the greatest villians, 53—Some students of law and medicine—letters addressed to them, 64—Conduct of lovers or bullies, 54—Tribades, 56—Classification of prostitutes, 57—Registered and unregistered, procuresses, soldiers, and other classes of prostitutes, 59—Physical characters—alteration of voice—colour of the hair and eyes, 60, 61—Morbid changes in the sexual organs not different from other women, 61—Local signs of virginity equivocal, 62—Most important to be borne in mind in charges of female violation, 62—New sign of pregnancy, 63—State of the clitoris, 63—Nameless offences, 64—State of menstruation, fecundity or number of children of prostitutes, 65—Frequency of criminal abortion, 65—Prostitutes strenuously declare that they can fix on the father of their infants, 66—Mortality among their infants, 66—Diseases most common to prostitutes—hæmorrhages, tumours, abscesses, fistulæ, 68—Cancer of the womb, convulsions, and various species of

hysteria, 69—Mental alienation or insanity, ordinary diseases, 70—Health better than with virtuous labouring women, 71—Toleration of brothels, 72—Localities of brothels, and situations in which they are not allowed, 73—Landlords—localities and streets, 74, 75—Disturbances in brothels, 76—Cigar, coffee-shops, and other houses of accommodation, 77—Assembly rooms, 78—Should prostitute be banished from particular places? 79—Suppression of immoral works in Paris, 80—Failure of legislation against prostitution, 81—Indecent behaviour at the windows—bad effects of window admiration, 83—Impossibility of legislating publicly against prostitution, 83—Are prostitutes necessary? 84—The divine and natural law on the subject, 85—All penalties against contrary to reason, morality, and Christianity, 86—Horrible consequences of depriving depraved men of the other sex, 86—British laws award the punishment of death for the commission of certain crimes at home, which they render inevitable in penal colonies, 86—Is it advisable to employ means to ward off the direful consequences of prostitution? 87—Are asylums for the reception of repentant prostitutes advisable? 87.

CHAPTER IV.

PROSTITUTION IN LONDON.

The author's sources of information, the Society for the Suppression of Vice, the Reports of the Commissioners of Metropolitan Police in 1837-38; the reports of the Society for the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, 1836-37-38, and the police report published for the Secretary of State for the Home Department from 1837 to 1838, 88—The late Mr. Wilberforce's history of licentiousness in this country from the French revolution of 1789, 89—The origin and laudable objects of the Society for the Suppression of Vice, 90—The prevention of the profanation of the Lord's day—blasphemous and obscene publications, prints, &c.—proceedings against disorderly houses and fortune-tellers, 91. 93—Vendors of obscene books, prints, &c., 93—Against disor-

derly houses and fortune-tellers, 94—Copious extracts from the evidence of Mr. Pritchard, secretary to the Society, before Parliament in 1817. Extraordinary and authentic account of the trade in obscene books, prints, toys, &c. imported from France, and sold in every part of the United Kingdom, 96—The principals and agents chiefly hawkers, who bribed servants and introduced their infamous articles into boys' and girls' schools, 97—Prosecutions instituted by the Society and the salutary effects, 98—Renewal of the traffic from the Continent after the peace, 98—Open sale in the prisons at Bristol, 99—Suppression by the Duke of Portland, and likewise by the agents for the prisoners of war at Norman Cross, Dartmoor, Chatham, Yarmouth, Foxton and Edinburgh, 100—Astonishment expressed by the magistrates when the Society first prosecuted offenders, 105—Mode of proceeding most constitutional, 101, 102—Prosecutions, how and where instituted, 103—Repeated commendation of the Society by the Lords Chief Justices of the Queen's Bench, 103—Most defective state of the existing law against the vile offence under notice, 105. 113—Hesitation of the magistrates to interfere, until a late order from the Secretary of State for the Home Department, 105—Committals for introducing obscene works, &c. into ladies' boarding schools, 106, 107—Seizures and destruction of obscene articles, 107—Prosecution of disorderly houses and fortune-tellers, 108—Defects of the present law, which renders prosecutions tedious and exorbitantly expensive, 108—Magistrates should have a power of summary conviction, 109—Summary of prosecutions against profanation of the Sabbath; publishers of blasphemous and obscene publications up to the year 1819, 109, 110, 111—Quantity of books, prints, copper-plates, toys, snuff-boxes seized, 112—Conduct of miscreants at race-courses, 113—Enormous expense of two prosecutions, 113—Society's efforts against the nuisance at Notting-hill, 115—Additional evidence given before Parliament in 1838, 117—Reports of the London Society for the Protection of Young Females, and Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, with list of patrons, vice-patrons, and

officers, 118—Society instituted 1835, on account of the dreadfully immoral state of the British metropolis, 118—Account of crime, debauchery, and immorality, 119—Seduction of female children, and initiation of juvenile thieves, 119 Barbarous treatment of such female children, 120—Horrible suffering of youthful profligates, 121—Two-thirds of criminals connected with prostitutes, 121—Extent of seduction, desertion, sacrifice of life by suicide and disease, 121—Revolting language in the streets. The Society the only one for diminishing female ruin, 122—Appeal to parents, and the benevolent, 123—Laudable efforts and success of the Society, 124—Restoration of unfortunate juvenile prostitutes to a virtuous life, 125, 131—Brothels the most fertile source of crimes, 133—Rescue of fifty unfortunate females from infamy, 135—Suppression of brothels, 137—Punishment of procurers and procuresses, 141—Weekly committee for the application of unfortunate objects, 142—Establishment of a probationary asylum, 143—Society's report in 1838; prosecution of the most infamous brothel keepers, 148, 154—Immense number of juvenile prostitutes, 155—Two-thirds educated in Sabbath-schools, 156—Various modes of decoying and seduction, 156, 157—Extraordinary case of a brothel keeper, 160—Mr. Talbot's reasons for informing the public of the extent of prostitution in London, 156—His replies to the following questions, which I submitted to him and other official individuals, 158—Number of prostitutes in London? 80,000; nations and countries which supply them, 159—State of their education, 159—Ages; causes of prostitution; seduction; the poor-law charter of libertinism; encouragement of men; ruin of women; contrary to nature and Christianity, 162—Bad effects of dramatic entertainments, walking in parks, squares, streets, &c. 163—Trades and occupations of prostitutes; opinion of themselves; religious feelings; sense of shame; bent and character of mind; manner of passing their leisure hours; moral defects; good qualities; lovers and bullies horrible vagabonds, robbers, and murderers, 166—Enormous rent of brothels, 167—Usual con-

duct of bullies, 167—classification of prostitutes, 169—Private lodgers; impossibility of escape in the streets, 169—Servants; young female children, 173—Procuresses, procurers, and panders; their extraordinary mode of proceeding, 170—Frequenting bazaars, coach-offices, workhouses, prisons, and penitentiaries for the ostensible purpose of hiring servants, 171—No expense spared in this horrible traffic, 171—The Sabbath the favourite day for intercepting children going to or coming from church or Sunday-schools, 172—Remarkable examples; trepanners and touters, 173—Physical characters of prostitutes; their good general health, but premature decay, 173—General fecundity; mortality of their infants, 174—Diseases most common to, and immense mortality of prostitutes, 175—Number of venereal cases of children from the age of eleven to sixteen years, in four of the London hospitals, 175—Encouragement of boys in brothels, 175—Evil results on health, on families, and society at large, 176—Number of patients admitted in the London Lock-hospital from 1747 to 1836, 176—Institutions for reclaiming prostitutes—their results, 177—Eleven thousand benefitted, four millions allowed to perish, 177—Scarcely a family in the kingdom which has not suffered, mere or less, from the effects of prostitution, 177—Number and localities of brothels in London, 178—Not half the number of churches, chapel-schools, &c., 178—Brothels close to churches, 178—Cigar, coffee, beer, pastrycook, and other shops, or places of assignation and accommodation, 179—Saloons, taverns, and long-rooms, 179—Extraordinary conduct in long-rooms, 180—Sailors' "wives" in men of war, 180—Horrible depravity, robbery, and murder, or transmission of destructive contagious disease, 181—Disturbances, robberies, and murders in brothels,—the seat of all crimes against the public, 182—Number pandering to prostitution in London, 182—Immense income derived from this vice, 183—Conduct of Jews and Christians contrasted, 183. 186—Houses for the sale of improper productions, 187—Improper books, prints, &c. 188—Universal depravity of the lower classes in this and all

countries, 188—Police and other reports in October 1838, 189—Bad effects of penny-theatres, dancing and music-rooms, low lodging-houses, 200—Suggestions for corrective legislation: defective state of the law, 201—Magistrates should have summary powers to punish brothel-keepers, 203—Replies of the Commissioners of Metropolitan Police, 206—Number, ages, and offences of criminals arrested and punished for abuses of the reproductive functions, 207—Appeal to the virtuous on the amount of evil and misery caused thereby, 209.

CHAPTER V.

PROSTITUTION IN AMERICA.

Effects of licentiousness on nations, 212—Number of prostitutes in New York, 216—Ages and classification;—causes of prostitution, 218—Seduction; drunken and bad husbands; lower classes most numerous, 219—Seduction of children and young girls, 220—Cruelty inflicted on them, 221—They cannot escape, 221—Remarkable cases of private prostitution, 222—Most extraordinary and horrible narrative, 223—Countries which supply prostitutes; houses of prostitution, 224—Assignation houses, 225—Boarding and lodging houses, 226—Panders and male seducers, 227—Corruption of children; necessity of maternal vigilance, 228—Girls and boys of eleven years old contaminated, 228—And these contaminate others, 229—Thirty thousand youths corrupted in New York, 230—The character of prostitutes, 231—Crimes against nature, 232—The Sabbath-day profaned, 232—Murder committed, 232—Deaths in brothels uninquired into, 234—Suicide, infanticide, 235—Criminal abortion, intemperance, 236—Dram-shops, 237—Gamblers, drunkards, and thieves, 238—Sailor-boarding-houses, 239—Theatres and opera-houses, their bad effects on morals, 239—Boys and girls steal to visit theatres; examples, 241—Licentiousness leads to stealing, 241—Is an inexorable tax-gatherer, 244—Effects of licentiousness on men's intellects, morals and bodies, 244—Shocking effects of venereal disease, 246—

Boarding in brothels; the expense, 248—Income and expense, 248—Number of visitors to brothels, 249, 250—Expenditure, 251.

PART II.

CHAPTER VI.

Venereal abuses in relation to health and disease, 255—Diseases caused by venereal abuses, 256—Bad effects of unnatural or excessive indulgence, 257—School-boy vices, 259—Unnatural habits, 261—Symptoms and derangements produced, 262—Alleged excuses for youth, 263—Natural resources. Gall's physiological and correct defence of all continent individuals, and the Roman-catholic clergy, 264—Immorality of unnatural indulgences, which are strongly condemned in the sacred volume, 265—Infantile contamination, 267. 271—Vices of domestics, 271—Increase at the age of puberty, 272—Diseases caused by masturbation, 274—The Jewish laws, 274—Physiology of reproduction, 275—Modification by age, 277—And by other causes, as poverty, famine, diseases, excess in wine, &c., 279—Symptoms of diseases caused by venereal excesses, 281—Several illustrations by cases, 282—Diseases excited in the head, chest, and abdomen, 283—Insanity, idiocy, and mental aberration, 289.

CHAPTER VII.

Special history of diseases caused by venereal excesses, 291—Diseases of the brain and spinal marrow, or cerebro-spinal system, 291—Apoplexy, inflammation of the substance and membranes of the brain and cerebellum, with cares, 293—Chronic inflammation of the cerebellum, with cases, 294. 298 Epilepsy, 298—Chorea, or St. Vitus's dance, idiocy, mental alienation, insanity, melancholy, 299—Diseases of the spinal marrow, tabes dorsalis, 300—Symptoms, 301—Cases, 302—Tetanic spasms, 303—Paralysis, 304—Caries and curvatures of the spine and contraction of the lower extremities, 305—Diseases of the senses; loss of vision and hearing, 305—

Amaurosis, 306—Defect of hearing and deafness, 307—Disorders of the senses of smell, taste, and touch, 308—Diseases of the circulatory system, 308—Typhus and other fevers in the East and West Indies, 309—Diseases of the digestive system, 309—Indigestion, confined bowels, flatulency, deranged appetite, lowness of spirits, 309—Diseases of the lymphatic system, 310—Glandular enlargements, scrofula, 310—Rickets, and deformities of the bones, 311—Phthisis and consumption curers, 311—Asthma, and diseases of the heart 314. 274—Violent palpitations, 313—Diseases of the reproductive organs. 314—Genito-urinary diseases, with cases, 314—Satyriasis and nymphomania, 314—Erotic monomaniacs, 317. 322—Non-contagious urethral discharges, 323—Diseases of the whole genito-urinary organs, 324—Incontinence of urine, 324—Spermatorrhœa, or involuntary seminal emission, 325—Causes, 326—Species; convulsive and non-convulsive, diurnal and nocturnal, 327—Treatment, 330—Prostatic disease a common cause, 331—Morbid appearances, 332—Symptoms, 333—Different urethral discharges, 334—Most effectual cure, 334—Chronic purulent urethral discharges, 338—Chronic inflammation of the neck of the bladder, 338—Extending to the prostate gland, ejaculatory ducts and seminal vesicles, causing spermatorrhœa, 339—Cases, 340. 342—Extension to urethra and prostate gland, 343—To spermatic organs, 343 (see Plates at the end)—ejaculatory canals, 344—Vesiculæ seminales; seminal reservoirs, 345—To deferent or excretory seminal canals, 345—To urinary organs, kidneys, ureters, and bladder, 348—Sympathy between the spermatic and urinary organs, 349—Spermatic diabetes, 350—Bad effects of strictures of the urethra, 350—Incontinence of urine of infants predisposes them to pollutions at puberty, 351—The most common causes, 352—Diseases of the testicle and spermatic cord, 352—Enlargement and neuralgia of the spermatic cord, 353—Varicocele and hydrocele, 353—Recapitulation of all the diseases of the genito-urinary organs, 353—Diseases peculiar to women, 355.

CHAPTER VIII.

Causes of venereal excesses, 358—Phrenological conclusions, 358. 362—Chronic diseases of the cerebellum and its membranes, with cases, 362, 363—Diseases of the spinal marrow, 364. 366—Influence of erectile tissue, 367—Removal of the clitoris, 369—Influence of the genito-urinary mucous membrane on venereal impulse, 370—Influence of various cutaneous eruptions, 372—Pruritus vaginæ, diseases of the uterus and ovaries, 374—Retention of the testes in the abdomen, 375—Castration, 376—Influence of gout, rheumatism. phthisis, 377—Recapitulation of all the chief causes of venereal excesses, genital excitement, seasons, climates, aliments, immoral and physical incentives, &c., 379, 380—odours, perfumes, irritation of the skin, flagellation, 381—Certain articles of clothing, 382—Years of plenty; diet, 383. —General account of remedies; narcotics, 385—Moral and religious injunctions, 386—Exercise and idleness, 387—Mental and corporeal exertion, 388—Hints to parents and teachers, 389—Treatment of diseases induced by venereal excesses, 391—Diet and regimen, 398.

CHAPTER IX.

Special venereal diseases; symptoms and treatment of syphilis, 401—Ravages of the disease, 402—Contamination of the fœtus in utero, 403—Supposed, though ill-cured syphilis, 405—Transmission of venereal virus, 406—Prevention of syphilitic infection, 406—Secondary symptoms, 407—Syphliitic neuralgiæ in different parts of the body; cases in illustration, 407—Venereal eruptions, 409—Baldness; pains in the bones, 409—Excrescences and ulcerations, 410—Mr. Carmichael's views on syphilis, 410.

CHAPTER X.

Urethritis, blenorrhagia, gonorrhœa; symptoms, 412—Affecting the whole of the genito-urinary organs in some cases, 412—Causing stricture, irritable urethra, prostate gland,

neck of the bladder, ureters, and kidneys, 413—Female gonorrhœa and leucorrhœa, 414—Phymosis and paraphymosis, 416—Sloughing of the prepuce and penis, 416—Hernia humoralis, inflamed testis, 418—Enlargement of the epididymis, 419—Blenorrhœa, or gleet, 419—Strictures of the urethra, 420—Bad effects of stricture; local and general progress and form of stricture, 422—Suppuration of the prostate gland; bad effects of stricture on reproduction, on the prostate gland, testes, &c., 423—Gradually and finally obstructs the urethra; bursting of the urethra, and abscess in the perineum followed by fistulæ, 425—Long retention of the urine causes inflammation of the mucous coat of the bladder and mucosities which are passed with the urine; mode of distinguishing this discharge from that supplied by the prostate gland, 426—Disease excited in the corresponding kidney often mistaken for lumbago, psortis, &c., 427—Symptoms of disease of the kidney, 427—Morbid appearances, 427—Diagnosis, 428—Hœmorrhoidal and circum-anal diseases, 428—Prolapsus recti, 429—Hernia, stricture, may cause disease of the prostate, bladder, and rectum, and simulate intermittent fever, 429—Morbid appearances after death, 429—Cases in illustration. Object, tendency of the work, hints to unfair and dishonest critics.

Explanation of Plates - - - - - - p. 435

GENERAL OBSERVATIONS.

CHAPTER I.

GENERAL CONSIDERATIONS.

It will be admitted, by every well educated as well as experienced medical practitioner, that diseases of the urinary and reproductive organs are as numerous as frequent, and as fatal as any incidental to humanity. The truth of this position will be apparent after the perusal of the following pages.

It is, however, only of late years that the entire of the diseases alluded to have been fully investigated; and even as yet, there is no monographic work, so far as I know, which treats of the whole.

In proof of the truth of this statement I have to observe, that the valuable productions of Hunter, Sir E. Home, the Bells, Dr. Marcet, Dr. Prout, Mr. Wilson, Sir Charles Bell, Sir Astley Cooper, Sir B. Brodie, Mr. Guthrie, Mr. Carmichael, Mr. Colles, Mr. Macilwain, Mr. Phillips, Mr. Stafford, Mr. Crosse, Dr. Bright, Dr. Osborne, Mr. Wallace, Mr. Coulson, and M.M. Sabatier, Swediaur, Chopart, Ducamp, Tarvenier, Deslandes, Lallemand, Magendie,

Amussat, Ricord, Civiale, Rayer, &c., as well as the numerous essays, both foreign and national, comprise but a small portion of genito-urinary diseases. It is, however, but right to state, that the individual labours of so many distinguished physicians and surgeons, and of others whom I shall quote in the succeeding pages, have proved highly valuable, and have laid the foundation of a systematic work on the subject.

All medical practitioners will allow, that such a work ought not only to comprise an account of the nature and treatment of syphilis, blenorrhagia (gonorrhœa), strictures, diseases of the prostate gland, bladder, ureters, and kidneys; but of the various diseases in every part of the body —in the head, chest, and abdomen, which are induced by venereal abuses. It is true, that the primary and secondary diseases of the organs now mentioned, are partially described by some of the preceding authors I have mentioned, but no one has hitherto treated of the whole. Even the great work announced by M. Rayer, will not accomplish this subject, if we may judge from its title.* There is no mention made in it of the diseases of the brain, spinal marrow, of the heart and arteries, of the digestive system, &c. arising from venereal excesses and abuses, and frequently observed by many distinguished pathologists, whose reports will be noticed in the following pages. The most comprehensive account of the various diseases induced by sexual excesses is that of M. Deslandes, which I shall freely quote hereafter, entitled, *De l'Onanisme et des Autres Abus Veneriens, considérés dans leur rapports avec la santé.* Par M. Deslandes, D. M., 1835. This work abounds with numerous authentic cases. It is far superior to the productions of Tissot. Wichman, A. P. Buchan, &c.

* *Traite des Maladies des Reins, étudiés en elles-memes, et dans leur rapports avec les Maladies des Ureters, de la Vessie, de la Prostate, de l'Uretre Par M. Rayer, M. D.* Paris, 1838. Baillière,

M. Lallemand has also enriched science by two recent and valuable works—*Des Pertes Seminales involontaires. Observations sur les Maladies des Organes Genito-urinares.* Par M. Lallemand, D. M. &c., 1836.

But however valuable these works may be, they are like all their precursors, only partial, and do not embrace the whole class of genito-urinary diseases.

With a view of supplying, in some measure, this want in medical literature, I shall, very briefly, notice the most important of the diseases of the urinary and sexual organs, as well as those induced by them in all other parts of the body ; and describe the baneful results of venereal excesses, and the injuries which they inflict on public morals, health, happiness, and longevity. A brief history of these multiform and frequent complaints may warn a most licentious and vicious age, against the incessant commission of vices, which do much more injury to health than, perhaps, all other causes of diseases collectively.

It is a singular fact that the medical authors of this country, have not hitherto followed the example of the French and German writers, and that we have no such works on venereal excesses as those of Tissot, Wichman, Deslandes, Lallemand, &c. The productions in circulation amongst us, generally emanate from ignorant pretenders to medical knowledge, unprincipled dishonest persons, who profess to cure all diseases, of whatever description, with one remedy, a nostrum, which, in most cases, does much more harm than good, and too often embitters the remainder of the victim's life.

The time I should hope has arrived, when some educated, respectable, and experienced medical practitioner may follow the examples of our continental neighbours, by describing the whole of the diseases caused by venereal abuses in all their ramifications, and prove to the comprehension of every rational individual, that there is no single remedy

or nostrum, capable of effecting a cure of the most opposite maladies, general or local.

It is however lamentable to acknowledge that there are as yet, some affectedly grave and pseudo-moralists in this kingdom, who entertain the antiquated and foolish notion, that any allusion to venereal excesses and their baneful consequences is injurious to public morals; and according to this class of moralists, the circulation of all works on morality, theology, law, legislation, and medicine, nay, the Bible itself, which most graphically discusses them, ought to be interdicted. But, most unfortunately for this portion of the medical faculty, the world is of a very different opinion. It merely holds, that civilized society imperiously demands wise legislation on the subjects of population, marriage, bastardy, seduction, female violation, adultery, divorce, legitimacy, prostitution, criminal abortion, child murder, and many other crimes relative to the function of reproduction—crimes fully noticed in the sacred volume, occupying the reflexion of theologians, philosophers, legislators, judges, moralists, all the learned professions, and daily recorded by a free public press in all countries. There are, however, a few hypocritical and pharasiacal persons amongst us, even in the enlightened profession of medicine, who strain at a gnat and swallow a camel, and who perhaps might be justly compared to the white sepulchres of old, "beautiful without, but unclean within"—men who pretend to shut their eyes and to close their ears against the prevalence and extent of profligacy, and obscenity, so common both at home and abroad, and so fully described by various witnesses in the succeeding chapters. To reason with men of such strait-laced morality would be a useless task, and I shall therefore leave them to the enjoyment of their own absurd and mischievous opinions.

It would be important were such modest gentlemen to draw the line of demarcation, between what they call

morality and immorality, and obscene and admired productions of the arts, and between modest and indecent exhibitions.

It cannot be denied that many of the most admired paintings, statues, and other works of art exhibited in our public galleries and collections, and though highly patronised by some, are loudly condemned by others as indecent and obscene. The Titian gallery in Marlborough House belongs to the last class according to many. The colossal statue at Hyde Park Corner, with no covering but a fig-leaf, stands there for all to gaze at.

The drama is patronized by all classes of society, from the highest to the lowest, though often the scene of the grossest obscenities. Who has not seen actresses appear in tight flesh made dresses as white as marble, and fitting so tightly that the shape of their bodies could not be more apparent, had they come forward on the stage in a state of nature? Again, the Opera dancers appear nightly before crowded moral audiences, in dresses made for the express purpose of exposing their shape and figure, while the style of dancing is such as to excite the most wanton thoughts and lascivious desires. The attitudes and personal exposure of these females are most disgusting to every really modest mind, and more suited to an improper house than to a public exhibition. But the drama and the fine arts are patronized by rank and fashion, though, were the scenes and figures depicted in prints or drawings, and offered for sale, they would be considered outrages on public morals. Nevertheless, these things have long existed, and will perhaps continue, while society and literature continue to exist.

Look at the scenes described in Shakspeare, and publicly enacted; read the poems of Byron, the works of Le Sage, Fielding, Smollett, Behnn, De Couvery, Pigault Le Brun, and all the standard authors in their class of iterature, down even to Bulwer, and then point out any-

thing in medical publications half so exciting to the passions, as what is to be found in the works of these moral philosophers. Look—I say it with reverence, and simply because the truth of the remark will be admitted by all—look to the Bible itself, and tell me whether every fact in it, is as chaste as it might be. Take up a volume of Swift or Rabelais, and tell me if it is not full of the most *abominable particulars;* and yet, where is the man who professes to admire literature that has not got these works in his library, and is not intimately acquainted with every page of them? Again, look at the disgusting reports of trials which are given every day by the public press; see how minute they are in their descriptions, and mark the way in which they emulate each other, in giving what they call the most correct report, and yet, who thinks of finding fault with this? "That's true enough," reply our moralists, "but the details thus given are facts, which the press in this country is allowed to have the power of stating and making comments upon; but you must not publish objectionable matter, however less objectionable it may be, even than those facts which are stated in the newspapers." Very well, if that is the law, then I say, it is at variance with the natural simplicity of the Bible—let most of the plays of Shakspeare and the old dramatists be entirely suppressed—let such works as those of Swift and Rabelais be burnt by the common hangman—let those of Fielding, Smollett, Byron, and many others, both of the past and present day, be treated as obscene publications, and let there be a public censor of the press to prevent authors from putting forth impurities in future. Moreover, suppress *indecent exhibitions*—let us have no more opera dancing after the present fashion—pull down your naked statues—shut up your galleries of sculpture—don't let images of the purest and lovelist objects of creation be carried about the streets—and then, when you have done all this, I will give you

some credit for being consistent in your hypocrisy, and not complain of your pretended indignation against the truths and evils, which the medical history of licentiousness may happen to exhibit.

From the preceding facts, it would be a very difficult matter to define, what are obscene and immoral productions and what are not. A public functionary to whom I am indebted for much information, has arrived at this conclusion, and considers it almost impossible for the legislature to frame laws on the subject. This is also the opinion of many others, as will appear in the succeeding chapters.

There are, however, too many superficial observers, who cannot comprehend the importance of the subject under consideration, or the necessity of some more efficient means being adopted for the general improvement of the public morals.

The history of all periods attests, that theological, legal, and medical authors of all civilized ages and nations, fully considered and discussed the most of the important questions relative to the reproductive function, and that every class of society from the highest to the lowest, was more or less influenced by it. Impressed with this conviction, and following the example of the many national and foreign authors of distinction and celebrity, whose names have been, or will be hereafter, mentioned in these pages, I have deemed it of great importance to the welfare of society, the improvement of public morals, and the prevention as well as cure of a variety of diseases, to give a faithful, though brief epitome of the history of prostitution and immorality in modern times, and of the nature and treatment of the numerous disorders and diseases resulting from this and other excesses and abuses. In order to shew the universal prevalence of sexual vices, I shall first very briefly allude to moral depravation in all ages and nations, but especially during the French revolution of

1789, in our penal colonies, and the present state of licentiousness and crime in Paris and London, which will enable the reader to form some estimate of the almost universal prevalence of vice, crime, and the numerous diseases induced by the abuse of the reproductive function. Were I at once to enter on the consideration of the medical part of the subject, there are some who would consider my account exaggerated or too highly coloured, although it is strictly true in every particular. But the preliminary matter in the four succeeding chapters, will put all doubt and cavil out of the question.

I can conscientiously state, that I might occupy a large volume in detailing the histories of cases which have fallen under my own observation, or about which I have been consulted, whose victims were seriously injured and grossly imposed upon, and plundered by the unprincipled gang of advertising empirics, who abound in this and other cities, and who daily set forth their fraudulent and false pretensions in the leading newspapers.

How many unfortunate individuals, in the different ranks of life, have I known, who were maltreated, and imposed on by paying large sums of money, and in the end driven to utter despair, even to the verge of suicide, by these advertising quacks. How many declared incurable, whose various shades of nervousness, despondency, melancholy, and monomania or insanity, or an imaginary state of impotence, whose remorse, and even despair were their real disorders, resulting from vicious school-boy habits, or intemperance of whatever sort, the multiform species of indigestion and morbid sensibility of the stomach and bowels, biliousness, derangement of the general health, whose cases were curable in most instances, and how many were, now are, and yet will be, on the point of abandoning advantageous matrimonial alliances without any real cause, alarmed by the terror inspired in their minds as to their incurability,

and the gross deceptions practised upon them by advertising empirics. I should, therefore, beg to ask our most *modest* medical critics, but more especially all rational practitioners of the healing art, as well as sensible men, whether this numerous and truly unfortunate class of patients is to be deprived of proper medical advice and aid, because a few prudes and hypocrites happen to entertain the contrary opinion? For myself I think not.

For my own part, I cannot but consider, that such patients require great commiseration as well as relief, and that their distressing disorders deserve as much attention from medical practitioners, as any other class of human infirmities. Many of these individuals are in despair, or harassed by the deepest remorse which induces indigestion, hypochondriasis or melancholy, monomania, lunacy, insanity, and suicide; while all are deprived of the happiness of conjugal life. Others suppose that they labour under many or most of the diseases hereafter described, as if the following pages did not refer to different ages, nations, and constitutions, and not to particular individuals, unless those whose peculiar diseases are recorded. But this class of patients, very seldom consider, that no two constitutions or diseases are exactly alike, or that every case requires a peculiar treatment according to circumstances or symptoms, or that no single medicine or nostrum is a specific for all diseases hereafter described. They do not know, and perhaps cannot understand, that where there is no physical defect, the improvement of the general health, by proper remedies, and the avoidance of vice and excesses, will almost, invariably, effect a cure, more especially if the mind be tranquillized and groundless fears be dissipated. I shall fully prove the truth of this statement hereafter, and now offer these remarks, in passing, for the correction of very prevalent and erroneous impressions.

I fearlessly maintain, that proper remedies for the im-

provement of the general health, the digestion, and for securing the regularity of the alvine function, with due attention to diet, exercise, sleep, dress, &c., will in general effect a cure. But there are, however, many cases totally incurable.

It was long and erroneously considered by medical practitioners, that there were no medicines which possessed the power of acting on the reproductive organs; but modern observations have shewn the fallacy of such conclusions. I agree with those distinguished practitioners and authors, both national and foreign, who consider that there are medicines which have a peculiar influence on the urinary and sexual organs, and ample experience has convinced me of the truth of this opinion. I have accordingly enumerated these medicines, in my *Formulary of European and American Hospitals*, second edition, 1836, in my *Medico-Chirurgical Pharmacopœia*, second edition, 1838, and also in the *Philosophy of Marriage*, 1837. It is, however, right to observe, that these remedies are seldom beneficial, unless the general health is improved by all appropriate means, and the mind tranquillized. This conclusion is in direct opposition to the professions and false promises of advertising nostrum-mongers; and I entertain the hope, that it will be thus received by an enlightened profession and public.

It is necessary to observe, that many well-intentioned individuals, who are not close reasoners, and who are imperfectly acquainted with the history of human nature, cannot duly or properly estimate the full extent of the evils, barely alluded to in the following pages, although they are only a small part of what might be described would prudence, decency, or morality permit. But the imperfect enumeration I have given, is sufficient, in most cases, to restrain vice in some degree, and to prevent the occurrence of formidable and too often fatal diseases. There

cannot, I presume, be a second opinion among enlightened men, that every one who voluntarily injures his constitution, by whatever means, and consequently opposes the dictates of nature, violates the divine precept of self-preservation, and may be justly considered a monomaniac or maniac, or in other words, wholly or partially insane. Nevertheless, how few are there, from the age of puberty to the middle period of life, who are exempt from this state. There is, perhaps, no function in the human frame, which so often induces hypochondriasis, melancholy, and monomania, as the generative. Most persons after the age of puberty, some before it, and even many in decrepid old age, evince more or less irrationality with respect to it. I might adduce several proofs of the correctness of this observation from numerous consultations, but I prefer to give the many attestations of others, which will be found in the succeeding pages, as well as my own.

The validity of this conclusion will be apparent by the perusal of the following ancient epitaph of love:—

"Nec vir, nec mulier, nec androgyna; nec puella, nec juvenis, nec anus; nec casta, nec meretrix, nec pudica, sed omnia: sublata neque fama, neque ferro, neque veneno, sed omnibus: nec cœlo, nec aquis, nec terris, sed ubique jacet. Nec maritus, nec amator, nec necessarius; neque mœrens, neque gaudens, neque flens; hanc nec molem, nec pyramidem, nec sepulchrum, sed omnia, scit, et nescit, cui posuerit."

The preceding quotation clearly shews the many shades of insanity caused by the abuse of the reproductive function. It would require a large volume to describe them. There are perhaps but few adults, who have not been monomaniacal at some time or other, concerning sensual enjoyment, and who have not violated the dictates of nature concerning it. Empirics readily take advantage of this fact, and thus dilate upon it, as far as they can

in the newspapers, and in hand-bills in the following terms:—

"*A word of advice on a certain destructive habit.*—Of all frightful consequences and various evils that human nature is ordained to suffer, there cannot possibly be any passion more appalling than that which arises from self-abuse (onanism). a passion fraught with the most destructive consequences, dreadful even in imagination, and in its exercise fatal to all human happiness; a practice to which many devote themselves without being acquainted with the enormity of the crime, and all the ills which are its physical consequences.

"This dreadful and delusive habit, which is generally learnt at schools, is the most destructive thing that can be practised. Young people should take time to consider, that every act of this kind strikes deep at the root of their constitutions, inevitably hastens many alarming diseases, and brings on all the infirmities of the most languishing old age, and premature dissolution. The whole mass falls to decay; all the bodily senses, and all the faculties of the soul are weakened; the loss of imagination and memory; imbecility, contempt, shame, ignominy, its constant attendants; all the functions disturbed, suspended, and painful; continual disorders, disagreeable, capricious, and disgusting; violent pains ever renewing; all the disorders of old age in the prime of youth; an incapacity for all the functions for which man was created; the humiliating character of being an useless load upon the earth; the mortification to which he is daily exposed; a distaste for all decent pleasure; lassitude, an aversion to others, and at length for self.

"A person unfortunately tainted with this vice, soon affords manifest tokens to the discerning eye, that a canker is seated in the germ of life. He resembles a faded flower, a tree blasted in the bud. The eyes lack their usual lustre,

the purple bloom of youth vanishes, the features shrink, he becomes lean, pallid, and sallow; complains of weakness, particularly in the back and legs, a symptom which has obtained for this complaint the name of Tabes Dorsalis; stoops, and is unable to endure fatigue, the appetite is irregular, frequently voracious, but if indulged in is attended with the most distressing indigestion. The face is frequently covered with dark-coloured pimples. Society is avoided, seclusion sought after, and this species of self-destroyer at last assumes the appearance of a moving skeleton, enveloped in a leaden shroud. Hectic fever takes place, which finally terminates in an early death."

It must be scarcely necessary to observe, that there is a vast deal of exaggeration and nonsense in the foregoing extracts, though very well calculatad to alarm a vast number of weak-minded young persons, and to fill the purses of the pretended curers. Every well-informed and respectable physician and surgeon will agree with me in this conclusion. No one will deny, that many disorders or temporary derangements, as well as actual diseases in different parts of the body, are induced or excited by excessive indulgences of all kinds, but that a preponderating majority of these complaints will disappear on the sufferers abandoning their evil habits, and by a judicious employment of ordinary remedies.

The history of mankind in all ages and nations, affords the most ample proof of the almost universal prevalence of moral depravation. It would occupy too much space, and be foreign to the more immediate object of this work, to enter into historical details, which are almost universally known. I shall only notice a few facts under this head. I shall pass over the archives of antiquity, and confine my remarks to the occurrences of the end of the last century, and the present period.

It is not yet fifty years, since infidelity and unparalled

libertinism were followed by the perpetration of the most savage atrocities in France. The few details which I grieve to indite, were authenticated by many eye-witnesses, some of whom are still living, and are recorded by numerous historians of the revolution of 1789. I insert the following horrible facts in proof of the extent to which abuses and excesses of the reproductive function may be carried; when religion, and the laws founded upon its principles are abolished, even for a short time:—"The bodies of the clergy, whose virtues, modesty, and beneficent services were acknowledged even by the atheists and deists of the mock National Assembly, were stripped naked, indecently mutilated, and with the bowels hanging out, were exposed to view on the heaps of murdered victims. Ladies of rank and many respectable women, were also stripped naked, rubbed over with oil, and then put to the fire; while many were first violated by the savage mob, and then most cruelly butchered." "Young men and women were picked out from the mass of innocent prisoners, respectability being their only crime, stripped naked, and tied together, face to face. After being kept in this situation for about an hour, they were put into an open lighter (or drowning ship); and after receiving several blows on the skull with the butt-end of a musket, thrown into the water. These were called '*republican marriages.*'"

"Carrier," the most sanguinary wretch of the unfortunate period to which I allude, "chose from among the female prisoners, those whom he thought worthy of his foul embraces, and after being satiated with their charms, sent them to the guillotine." This was a member of the National Convention, a representative of the people, a law-giver! a true patriot! This inhuman wretch also sent a set of cut-throat villians, to plunder the church-plate of a nunnery, and furiously upbraided the monsters because they had not killed all the d—d b—hes. To these

dejected and defenceless females, every insult and indignity were offered, not forgetting the last, of which beastly libertines can be guilty.

Five pretty women, who were seized on by the negroes, emancipated by the nation, would not be given up by the savages to the assassins. "Two days afterwards, the inhuman negroes, satiated with their captives, left them. One of these women, had been obliged to endure the approaches of more than a hundred of them. She had fallen into a kind of stupor, and was unable to walk or to stand. The whole five were shot soon after!"

Thousands of infants were murdered and drowned, while Carrier and the committee used to turn the drownings into jests, and call them *immersions, national baptisms, vertical transportations, bathings, &c.* Numbers of the naked bodies of girls and women were among the slain. Every crime that the mind can imagine, was hourly perpetrated at this period. All was folly and madness; the genius of Napoleon alone, could regenerate the nation. The victims were the royal family, the nobility, clergy, and gentry; indeed every one who had anything to lose. The motto of the rabble was, "war to the gentlemen's houses, and peace to the cottages;" and this included the whole doctrine of *equality,* and *liberty* of the republic! The reign of terror was, however, short, and religion, order, and social peace, were speedily re-established.

The horrible barbarities now being committed in Spain, 1838, by the contending armies, are an indelible disgrace to civilized Europe, in the ninteenth century. I have my information from distinguished officers of the British Auxilliary Legion, who were eye-witnesses, and on whose veracity I can rely.

Captivarum partes omnium genitales, horribile dictu; semper cultris vel ensibus truncæ, et in morientium vel mortuorum ora intrusæ sunt!

Eodem modo, capilli capitis et pudendæ muliebris abrasi, milites sex, decem, et aliquando vigenti vicissim rapere stuprum virgines singulas matronasque.

It cannot be denied, I presume, that the common people of all nations, the ignorant and vulgar, who are uneducated, are extremely vicious; and would perhaps be as sanguinary as the French in 1789, and the Spaniards in 1838, did not legislation, in some measure, control and punish them. I am not quite certain, that the upper and educated classes are not almost as immoral and depraved, though their vices are not so apparent to the world. This will be proved in the account of prostitution hereafter. If we compare the accounts of licentiousness in all civilized and savage nations, it is proportionately the same. It is common to all, "*amor omnibus idem,*" but less frequent, according to the state of religion. It would be easy to give an abstract narrative of the wars, and miseries, and vices caused by the reproductive function, from the most remote antiquity to the present period. Neither would it be difficult to enumerate many sanguinary wars, which originated, in different ages and nations, on account of women. How many kingly divorces and depravities have occurred on the earth from this cause; how much licentiousness degraded, and now degrades, the human species in all countries, and among all classes of the people. I cannot enter into details, and can only refer to the state of morality of this age, in order to demonstrate the necessity and expediency of describing, a few of the errors, vices, and diseases caused by the abuse of the generative function.

If we peruse the histories of expatriated criminals in different countries, we likewise find a great similarity, amounting almost to an identity, necessarily modified by the causes already mentioned. If we examine the immorality of our own convicts, we shall find it most appalling and depraved.

CHAPTER II.

MORAL DEPRAVATION IN PENAL COLONIES.

If we carefully examine the state of moral depravity in our large towns and cities, we observe it displayed in infancy, childhood, adolescence, manhood, and old age. The truth and justness of this observation will appear by the reports of the Societies for the Suppression of Juvenile Prostitution and Vice, hereafter noticed. The conduct, language, and vices of the lower classes of the population, are become quite intolerable. We detect vice even in our homes, abroad, in our schools, colleges, and seminaries; we observe it on the highway; we find it punished in our law courts, and we follow it to our penal settlements. But let us peruse the melancholy report of the Rev. Dr. Ullathorne, vicar-general of Australia, New South Wales, Van Diemen's Land, and Norfolk Island—a narrative which has been substantially authenticated to me by Sir John Hamett, whose integrity, ability, and veracity, as our British Medical Commissioner for the investigation of cholera at Dantzig, in 1831, gained for him the general applause of his profession, both at home and abroad, while he contributed by his unequalled reports, to give a death-blow to the doctrine of contagion. After I had made the following extracts from the Rev. Dr. Ullathorne's work, I fortunately obtained the *Parliamentary Report*, 1838, which was published in the *Times*, "On the system of transportation, its efficacy as a punishment; its influence on the moral state of society in the penal colonies, and how far it is susceptible of improvement;" and this fully corroborates the truth of every thing stated by the reverend author, from whom I

am about to quote freely. Several most respectable witnesses agreed in their evidence; and among these were Sir George Arthur, late governor of Van Diemen's Land; Sir Richard Bourke, late governor of New South Wales; Mr. Barton, Judge of the Supreme Court in the last-named colony; Captain Maconochie, secretary to Sir John Franklin, the present governor of Van Diemen's Land; Sir E. Parry, &c., &c. Before I insert the history of moral depravity in New South Wales, I deem it necessary to prefix the Parliamentary conclusions, 1838, on the origin of that penal settlement, which will indubitably convince every rational person, of the stupidity and criminality of the foolish government of the unfortunate period to which I refer.

The committee commence their lucid report by observing, "The punishment of transportation is founded on that of exile, both of which are unknown to common law." It was introduced as a punishment by the legislature of this country in the 39th year of Elizabeth, and the first time it was mentioned was in the 18th Charles II., c. 3:—

"It appears, however, to have been the practice at an early period to subject transported offenders to penal labour, and to employ them as slaves on the estates of the planters, and the 4th George I., c. 11, gave to the person who contracted to transport them, to his heirs, successors, and assigns, a property and interest in the services of such offenders, for the period of their sentences. The great want of servants in the colonies was one of the reasons assigned for this mode of punishment, and offenders were put up to auction and sold by the persons who undertook to transport them, as bondsmen for the period of their sentences. Notwithstanding, however, the dearth of labourers, many of the colonies, especially Barbadoes, Maryland, and New York, testified their disinclination to have their wants supplied by such means; and the opinion of Franklin as to the letting loose upon the new world the outcasts of the

old, is too well known for your committee to repeat it. With the war of independence, transportation to America ceased. Instead of taking that opportunity for framing a good system of secondary punishments, instead of putting in force the provisions of the 19th George III., c. 74, by which parliament intended to establish in this country the penitentiary system of punishment, the Government of the day unfortunately determined to adhere to transportation. It was not, however, deemed expedient to offer to the colonies that remained loyal in America, the insult of making them any longer a place of punishment for offenders. It was determined, therefore, to plant a new colony for this sole purpose; and an act was passed in the 24th year of George III. which empowered His Majesty in council to appoint to what place beyond the seas, either within or without His Majesty's dominions, offenders shall be transported; and by two Orders in Council, dated December 6, 1786, the eastern coast of Australia and the adjacent islands were fixed upon. In the month of May, 1787, the first band of convicts departed, which in the succeeding year founded the colony of New South Wales.

"To plant a colony, and to form a new society, has ever been an arduous task. In addition to the natural difficulties arising from ignorance of the nature of the soil and of the climate of a new country, the first settlers have generally had to contend with innumerable obstacles, which only undaunted patience, firmness of mind, and constancy of purpose, could overcome. But whatever the amount of difficulties attendant on the foundation of colonies, those difficulties were greatly augmented in New South Wales, by the character of the first settlers. The offenders who were transported in the past century to America were sent to communities, the bulk of whose population were men of thrift and probity; the children of improvidence were dropped in by dribblets amongst the

mass of a population already formed, and were absorbed and assimilated as they were dropped in. They were scattered and separated from each other; some acquired habits of honest industry, and all, if not reformed by their punishment, were not certain to be demoralized by it. In New South Wales, on the contrary, the community was composed of the very dregs of society—of men proved by experience to be unfit to be at large in any society, and who were sent from the British gaols, and turned loose to mix with one another in the desert, together with a few task-masters, who were to set them to work in the open wilderness, and with the military who were to keep them from revolt. The consequences of this strange assemblage were vice, immorality, frightful disease, hunger, dreadful mortality among the settlers; the convicts were decimated by pestilence on the voyage, and again decimated by famine on their arrival; and the most hideous cruelty was practised towards the unfortunate natives. Such is the early history of New South Wales."

Let us now peruse its history at the present period; and we shall see that this colony deserves to be swept from the face of the earth. Let us hear, and reflect on, the deplorable narrative which follows, and which is amply confirmed by no less than twenty-three official witnesses, some of whose names were already mentioned.

"The eye of God," says the Rev. Dr. Ullathorne, "looks down upon a people, such as, since the deluge, has not been. Where they marry in haste without affection; where each one lives to his senses alone. A community without the feelings of a community; whose men are very wicked, whose women are very shameless, and whose children are very irreverent. Whose occupation has been, and is, as that described by the prophet of sorrow, '*to steal, to murder, to commit adultery, to swear falsely.*"

"The naked savage who wanders through those endless

forests, knew of nothing monstrous in crime, except canibalism, until England schooled him in horrors through her prisoners. The removal of such a plague from the earth concerns the whole human race."

The learned and pious author, goes on to describe the progress of the convicts after landing.

" They arrive in numbers of from two to three hundred in a ship, under the authority and superintendence of a surgeon of the royal navy. Thrown together for four months, with no occupation, they live over again their guilty joys and exciting hazards, devising new ones for the future. Their emulation, especially on board the English ships, is, to exhibit to admiration their accomplishments in wickedness—to prove the most diverting of their comrades by the clever recital of their past infamies—to enrich the effect of the whole by the most profane and obscene language. Facts exhausted, imagination is ready with her teeming stores—thus they go on—incessantly applying the whet-stone to their wit, and sharpening the edge of their guilty cunning. The day over, they are closed down under night hatches, each rolled in his blanket, three, four, or more, placed together in one wooden crib —the seven years' prisoner couched with the convict for life—the petty thief with the murderer—the simple countryman with the gaol polluted felon, and the monster from the hulk. With such a mass of individuals crowded together so long a time, wonder not if you hear that the more decent soon rival the worst in depravity of manners, insensibility of mind, and corruption of heart. Bibles, common prayers, and tracts, are plentifully distributed, even on board the Irish ships, where they are worse than useless; whilst there is no anxiety to furnish the Catholic with one single book of prayer, or instruction, which he would gladly read. On Sunday, on board the Irish as well as English ships, the prisoners, a few Protestants

sprinkled amongst them, are driven, like sheep, to the pasturage of Protestant common prayers and homilies, the only effect of which is to stir up a secret spirit of dissatisfaction and revolt, and to plant the feeling of a grievance. The prisoner does not very nicely discriminate qualities, but balances within his mind the wrong-doing of his task-masters against his own misdeeds, and deducts from the sum of respect which he considers due to the constituted authorities.

"Arrived at their destination, and placed, in the first instance, in their barracks, they are not allowed to associate with the "*old hands*," lest, say they, the new ones should be contaminated—an admission that they are not yet so bad, but they are destined to become worse. Until lately, the boys were confined in a separate establishment, but it proved such a hive of busy wickedness—sent out on the wing such a swarm of accomplished pests, that it is now broken up, and boys and men are lodged in the same great barrack. Here begins the initiation into the deeper mysteries of the masonry of crime. I have known the well-disposed prisoner rejoice, after labouring all day, to be allowed to watch an unenclosed building during the inclement night, rather than be locked up there. I have known the infirm man invoke any torture elsewhere, so he might not rest there; I have known the blind consider his privation of sight a blessing, as shutting out wickedness through one sense from his knowledge. I remember a youth who, expressing his astonishment at the infamies amongst which he suddenly found himself, observed, 'Such things no one knows in Ireland.' I think I now see the newly-arrived convict, his frame shuddering and shrinking together, whilst, with his feelings yet fresh, he recurs to the iniquities of those barracks. Colonel Arthur has spoken of the prisoner's 'exposure to ill usage from criminals worse than himself.'"

The preceding account is fully attested by the Report of the Committee on the System of Transportation, and it is highly gratifying to state, that the committee suggest extensive amelioration in the condition of convicts, and propose classification of crimes and punishments. The horrible treatment of our convicts loudly demand it.

"The incentive to industry and good conduct is the lash. This is the favourite and most frequent punishment. Where a master in England finds fault, the master in Australia threatens the lash; where the master here grows angry, the master there swears, and invokes the lash; where here he talks of turning away, there he procures the infliction of the lash: for idleness, the lash; for carelessness, the lash; for insolence, the lash; for drunkenness, the lash; for disobedience, the lash; wherever there is reason, and wherever there is not reason, the lash. Ever on the master's tongue, and ever in the prisoner's ear, just as he himself urges his drowsy bullocks, sounds the lash!—the lash!—the lash!"

Let us now hear the corroboration by the committee just referred to.

"The convict may likewise be punished by imprisonment, solitary confinement, and labour in irons on the roads. That this law is by no means inoperative is proved by the fact, that in 1835 the number of summary convictions in New South Wales amounted to 22,000, though the number of convicts in the colony did not exceed 28,000; that in one month in 1833, 247 convicts were flogged in that colony, and 9,784 lashes inflicted, which would give for the year 2,964 floggings, and above 108,000 lashes inflicted chiefly for insolence, insubordination, and neglect of work. In Van Diemen's Land the law which determines the condition of a convict servant is severer, and the number of summary convictions proportionately more numerous, than in New South Wales. In 1834 the

number of convicts in Van Diemen's Land was about 15,000; the summary convictions amounted to about 15,000; and the number of lashes inflicted was about 50,000. On the other hand, a convict, if ill-treated, may complain of his master; and if he substantiate his charge, the master is deprived of his services; but for this purpose the convict must go before a bench, sometimes 100 miles distant, composed of magistrates, most of whom are owners of convict labour. Legal redress is therefore rarely sought for, and still more rarely obtained, by the injured convict."

In short, to use the words of the late Chief Justice of Australia, "It frequently happens, that lesser offenders against the law come to be punished with disproportionate severity, while greater criminals escape with comparative impunity."

The committee have strongly suggested to the legislature and government, to confine and subject criminals sentenced to transportation, to hard labour in penitentiaries and other prisons at home, and to relinquish the immoral custom of sending them to penal colonies.

When these unfortunate wretches are driven almost mad by the lash, they are then sent to the chain-gangs, and worked in irons, under a military guard. At night, they are locked up in square portable boxes, some sixteen being crowded together in a space considerably less than two feet square for each person. The countenances of these men are shocking to behold. On board the Sydney hulk, ten or twelve are crowded together into a cell so small that they cannot lie on their backs; and they are often compelled to stand and lie down alternately, for want of room.

According to the philanthropic author from whom I quote, the female convicts are far worse, and more difficult to be reformed, than the male. Their general character is immodesty, drunkenness, and the most horrible language.

They are intrigued with by their masters or their servants, whose illegitimate children are nursed for two years, and then sent to the orphan school, where no inquiry is made, and the mothers return again and again. "I have baptized," says the author, "fourteen of these children at one time, whose mothers seldom showed any sign that they felt ashamed, or were conscious of such a feeling." According to him, the female houses of correction are sinks of abomination. The observations of M. Duchatelet, quoted hereafter, amply confirm the truth of this statement. In some are six hundred inmates, whose principal occupation is the work of mutual corruption. "I know a lady," says the author, "who, from her experience, durst not entrust her infant children with women, but actually employed men convicts as nurses in preference."

As marriage makes the female convict her own mistress, by assigning her from her service to her husband, it is eagerly sought after. The motive is, to obtain personal liberty. A slight, often the merest accidental acquaintance—affection unconsulted—disparity of age, of character, and of manners, thrown out of consideration—the possibility of a previous union in the mother country unheeded—the known fact of such a prior engagement concealed—and they are married, to drag each other through a life of misery and mistrust. The numerical disparity between the sexes amongst the prison population, is about ten to one, and is the cause of indescribable evils. It must be manifest to the commonest understanding, that the transportation and chaining of a number of depraved men together, in the prime of life and strength, and totally excluding them from the opposite sex, must be productive of the most horrible crimes. This is forcibly dwelt on in the Parliamentary Report on Transportation, which also contains the following corroboration of the former extracts.

"Assignment is the punishment for female, as well as for

male, convicts; the proportion of the former to the latter is about *ten to one.* In respectable families the condition of convict women, as respects their food, clothing, and indulgencies, is much the same as that of women servants in this country. Their general conduct, according to the testimony of every witness examined before your committee is (to use the words of Sir E. Parry) 'as bad as anything could well be;' he could 'hardly conceive anything worse.' At times they are excessively ferocious, and the tendency of assignment is to render them still more profligate; they are, all of them, with scarcely an exception, drunken and abandoned prostitutes; and even were any of them inclined to be well conducted, the disproportion of sexes in the penal colonies is so great, that they are exposed to irresistible temptations; for instance, in a private family, in the interior of either colony, a convict woman, frequently the only one in the service, perhaps in the neighbourhood, is surrounded by a number of depraved characters, to whom she becomes an object of constant pursuit and solicitation; she is generally obliged to select one man as a paramour, to defend her from the importunities of the rest; she seldom remains long in the same place; she either commits some offence, for which she is returned to the Government, or she becomes pregnant, in which case she is sent to the factory, to be there confined at the expense of the Government; at the expiration of the period of confinement or punishment she is reassigned, and again goes through the same course; such is too generally the career of convict women, even in respectable families. It can be easily imagined what a pernicious effect must be produced upon the character of the rising generation of the Australian colonies, in consequence of the children of settlers being, too frequently, in their tenderest years, under the charge of such persons. Many respectable settlers are, however, unwilling to receive convict women as assigned servants, when they

can possibly dispense with the services of females; and in many instances convict men-servants are preferred for these domestic occupations which are performed in this country by women only. A considerable portion, therefore, of the female convicts are retained in the service of the lower description of settlers, by whom it is notorious, that they are not uncommonly employed as public prostitutes.

"Female convicts are allowed to marry free men, but they remain under the surveillance of the police, and are liable to be sent back to the factory in case of misconduct. Marriages between female convicts and persons who have been convicts, are encouraged; and the Government even permits the marriage of convicts in assigned service, provided that the permission of the master is obtained, and a security given by the master to the Government that the offspring will not become chargeable to the state. From the female factory at Paramatta, most of the convicts who are permitted to marry obtain their wives. Such marriages among convicts rarely, however, turn out well; for the woman not unfrequently becomes the common property of the convict servants on the establishment, and gives rise to innumerable quarrels among the men, who purchase her favours generally by petty larcenies upon their master. Female convicts are punished by being sent to the penitentaries, where, according to the nature of their offence, they are either placed in solitary confinement with bread and water, or employed in picking wool, or in breaking stones; some few are sent to the penal settlement of Moreton Bay. The labour imposed on women in the factory at Paramatta, in New South Wales, is said to be very slight, and many convicts prefer being sent there to being assigned. Assigned convict women, who are with child, are generally returned to the factory when near their period of confinement; they are placed in a separate class, intermediate between the punishment class and that of the

women who are waiting to be assigned. This class appears to be a very numerous one, as out of 590 females in the factory at Paramatta, in 1836, 108 were nursing children; what portion of the remainder were pregnant women is not stated; at the same time there were in the factory 136 children between the ages of one and three years, the illegitimate children of convicts. The factory at Parmatta is, therefore, in reality a lying-in hospital."

To prevent these evils, a company has been sending out shiploads of free and virtuous females, wholly unprotected, and with a view of marrying depraved convicts! The false and extravagant hopes held out to these poor creatures, are followed by complete disappointment and self-abandonment. The lure is, to induce the unthinking and uninformed to suppose, that the convict's must be a happy lot, and that it is a delightful thing to receive his hand in marriage! I have known respectable and virtuous young women imposed on by this shameful deception; and I have been repeatedly informed by some surgeons to the emigrant vessels, some of them my old pupils, that modern female emigration is a gross and vicious imposition.

But of all our penal colonies, Norfolk Island is the worst.—"It is as bad as those cities on which the Lord rained down his fire and his fury; so corrupt was the ordinary language, as incessantly to present the imagination with the absent objects of the passions, as though present, —so perverse, that in the dialect of the prisoners, *evil* was literally called *good*, and *good*, *evil*; the well-disposed man was called *wicked*, whilst the leader in monstrous vice was styled *virtuous*. The human heart seemed inverted, and the very conscience reversed."

"There is another class of crimes in this island, too frightful, even for the imagination of other lands, which St. Paul, in detailing the vices of the heathens, has not contemplated; which were unknown to the savage, until

taught by the convict—crimes which are notorious—crimes that, dare I describe them, would make your blood to freeze, and your hair to rise erect in horror upon the pale flesh. Let them be enfolded in eternal darkness." Most unfortunately for morals, the crimes alluded to are common in all civilized countries, and were known to convicts in their native homes.—" Many convicts declared on the scaffold that they preferred suffering death to being sent to Norfolk Island, fearing more the depravity of that place than death itself."

The Report of the Transportation Committee, so often cited, fully attests the statements of Dr. Ullathorne respecting Norfolk Island, as it equally does every part of his report. I cannot conclude my quotations from his admirable report without a few more extracts, which clearly show the superior influence of Christianity over modern mock philosophy, licentiousness, and vice.

I most cheerfully make the succeeding quotations, with an ardent wish and sincere desire to see the horrible condition of our convicts ameliorated and more humanized :—

" So indifferent had even life become, that murders were committed in cold blood ; the murderer afterwards declaring he had no ill-feeling against his victim, but that his sole object was to obtain his own release. Lots were even cast ; the man on whom it fell committed the deed—his comrades being witnesses, with the sole view of being taken, for a time, from the scenes of their daily miseries to appear in the court at Sydney, although, after the execution of their comrade, they knew they should be remanded to their former haunts of wretchedness. So notorious is this fact, that it was made the ground of a legislative enactment, by the power of which, criminals are now tried by a special commission upon the island. This arrangement has, in a great measure, suspended such atrocities, though it has not altogether put an end to them. The life of these

men was one of despair; their passions, severed from their usual objects, centred in one intense thirst for liberty, to be gained at whatever cost. Their faces were like those of demons. If a comrade was suspected of betraying their practices, he could no longer, with safety, sleep amongst them, but was separated to secure life.

"In 1834, a conspiracy was formed by the prisoners to destroy the military and seize the island. They were defeated, and thirty-one of their number condemned to death. In 1835, I sailed to the island to prepare such of them as might be Catholic to meet their end. My unexpected appearance, late on the night of my arrival, came on them like a vision. I found them crowded in three cells, so small as barely to allow their lying down together—their upper garments thrown off for a little coolness. They had for six months been looking for their fate. I had to announce life to all but thirteen—to these, death. A few words of preparation, and then their fate. Those who were to live, wept bitterly; whilst those doomed to die, without exception, dropped on their knees, and, with dry eyes, thanked God they were to be delivered from so horrid a place. Who can describe our emotions? I found only three of the condemned to be Catholic—four others wished me to take them also to my care. During the five days permitted for preparation, they manifested extraordinary fervour of repentance. The morning come, they received on their knees the sentence as the will of God. Loosened from their chains, they fell down in the dust, and, in the warmth of their gratitude, kissed the very feet that had brought them peace. Their death moved many of their comrades. On the two successive days of execution and burial, I preached, from the graves of the dead, to their former associates. During the week still allowed before the departure of the ship, twenty conversions followed, and one hundred and fifty general confessions. I

left books behind me before departure, arranged a form of prayer for their use on Sunday, and obtained the appointment of one as reader, whose duty also it should be to teach those to read who were unable, in the intervals between labour and food.

"At the close of 1836, my good bishop permitted me again to visit Norfolk Island, a duty I had much at heart. I was received with great joy by my poor penitents, who, through all sorts of ridicule and persecution from their comrades, had persevered in their resolutions. I admitted them to the holy communion. Nearly sixty had learned to read their prayer books. The commandant assured me, that crime had considerably diminished, and that the Catholics were remarkably attentive to their duties of religion. Let me not forget how much of this was owing to the prudence and solicitude of the commandant himself. I record the name of Major Anderson with unmingled satisfaction. His minute personal knowledge of the desperate men under his charge, and the discrimination with which he encourages the well disposed, whilst he strikes terror into the obstinate, has been attended with most salutary consequences. What was my delight to find that, for the fifteen months elapsed since my last visit, there was not one Catholic to be brought before the judge. During the fifteen days allowed me before our return, three hundred confessions, and twelve conversions, rewarded my labours. I saw these dreaded characters come to the arms of religion like children. What may she not do with men when every hope from this world is departed, and nothing appears on their path but sufferings. The penitents, now become the greater number of Catholics, begged to be locked up in separate wards from the rest, that they might say their morning and night prayers together. Except these two visits, *no priest* has been at Norfolk Island!" Oh! British Governments, Tory and Whig!

The Report on Transportation thus proceeds:—" The condition of the convicts in these settlements has been shown to your committee to be one of unmitigated wretchedness. Sir Francis Forbes, Chief Justice of Australia, stated, in a letter to Mr. Amos on the subject of transportation, that 'the experience furnished by these penal settlements has proved that transportation is capable of being carried to an extent of suffering such as to render death desirable, and to induce many prisoners to seek it under its most appalling aspects.' And the same gentleman, in his evidence before your committee, said, 'that he had known many cases, in which it appeared that convicts at Norfolk Island had committed crimes which subjected them to execution, for the mere purpose of being sent up to Sydney; and the cause of their desiring to be so sent was to avoid the state of endurance under which they were placed in Norfolk Island; that he thought, from the expressions they employed, that they contemplated the certainty of execution; that he believed they deliberately preferred death, because there was no chance of escape, and they stated they were weary of life, and would rather go to Sydney and be hanged.' Sir Francis Forbes likewise mentioned the case of several men at Norfolk Island cutting the heads of their fellow-prisoners with a hoe while at work, with a certainty of being detected, and with a certainty of being executed; and, according to him, they acted in this manner apparently without malice, and with very slight excitement, stating they knew they should be hanged, but it was better than being where they were. A similar case was mentioned by the Rev. Henry Stiles, in his report to Sir Richard Bourke on the state of Norfolk Island; and Sir George Arthur assured your committee that similar cases had recently occurred at Port Arthur. Sir Francis Forbes was then asked, 'What good do you think is produced by the infliction of so horrible a punish-

ment in Norfolk Island; and upon whom do you think it produces good?' His answer was, 'That he thought that it did not produce any good;' and that 'if it were to be put to himself, he should not hesitate to prefer death, under any form that it could be presented to him, rather than such a state of endurance as that of the convict at Norfolk Island.'"

"These few pages, dear readers, give you some little information respecting the lot of the transported convict, and the labours and wants of the Australasian mission, They appeal to the heart of every Catholic and every denomination of Christians in the United Kingdom.

"If I am asked my motive for writing, and means of information, I answer, as to my means of information, that for five years I have conversed, and almost lived with the convict. I have often received him on his arrival in New South Wales; I have thrice visited him in Van Diemen's Land; I have attended him in his barracks; I have followed him through every district of the country to his place of assignment; I have collected him from the ploughing oxen in the fields—from the sheep wandering in their vast tracts—and from the wild cattle in their distant runs. I have been familiar with him in every township, and on every highway; I have celebrated the mysterious rites of our religion in the bark hut, beneath the gum tree in the valley, and on the blue mountain's top, which the white cloud covers. The daughter of crime has burdened my ear with her tale of folly and of woe; the dark-faced man has come to me, in his dress of shame and clanking fetters, from the degraded iron-gang; the sentenced criminal has wrung my heart, filling my eyes, in the cell of death. I have twice sailed with him to that last region on earth of crime and despair, Norfolk Island. He has confided himself to me, like a brother to an afflicted brother, and has poured his whole soul into my breast.

"As to my motive, I have but one on earth. It occupied me years before I was permitted to follow it. It has taken me round the world; it has induced me to return to my mother country now, for a time; it, alone, will persuade me to return. This is my motive—the reformation of the convict.

"If I am thought bold, consider my cause. Fifty thousand souls are festering in bondage. The iron which cankers their heel corrodes their heart; the scourge which drinks the blood of their flesh, devours the spirit of their manhood. They are cast out for intimidation, and they encourage; for purification, and they are infinitely worse than when their country threw them away. To these we are yearly adding above six thousand more. Would to heaven the common error were removed, and the poor people knew the bodily sufferings, and the moral horrors, which, at those remote extremes, await the hapless convict, now blind to his fate.

"We have been doing an ungracious and an ungodly thing. We have taken a vast portion of God's earth, and have made it a cesspool; we have taken the oceans, which, with their wonders, gird the globe, and have made them the channels of a sink; we have poured down scum upon scum, and dregs upon dregs, of the offscourings of mankind, and as these harden and become consistent together, we are building up with them a nation of crime, to be, unless something be speedily done, a curse and a plague, and a by-word to all the people of the earth."

The following appeal on behalf of the misery of our truly wretched convicts in New South Wales, and other penal colonies, cannot fail to prove beneficial, and I therefore, insert it with melancholy pleasure.

"You are not called, like us, to leave all things for the sake of the miserable; but to aid us in the work of their reparation is the vocation of all. I am but a voice—the

voice of many thousands crying to you from the ends of the earth—the voice of lamentations—the groans of the captive—the call for help—the cry of despair—the burden of Australia. Fifty thousand souls are festering in bondage. The iron has entered their souls—the scourge devours them. Their calamities can only be expressed by inspirations of sorrow. 'They went down in great ships upon the sea, they saw the wonders of God in the deep—through evils their souls pined away. They are cast upon the ends of the earth, deprived of all their dear ones. Bitter things are written against them—they are consumed for the sins of their youth. Sorrow oppresses their lives; wrinkles bear witness against them. They reap the sorrows they had sown. Their bread is loathsome to their eye—their meat unto their soul. As slaves they long for the shade; they sigh for the end of their work. They lie down to rest saying, when shall I rise? They rise, and walk through sorrow to the darkness. Their skin is withered and drawn together; their flesh is devoured by the sun and dust. They are encompassed round about with stripes, the scourge comes upon them and they faint. The eyes that saw them shall see them no more; their place no more beholds them. Their children are oppressed with want; they know not whether they come to honour or to dishonour. Their hands render unto them sorrow. Their bones are filled with the corruptions of their youth. The riches they swallowed are cast forth; they are punished for all they did. They are straitened; God hath rained down war upon them; the sword is drawn—as it cometh forth, it glittereth in bitterness; the terrible ones come and go upon them. A fire that no hand kindled devours them; they are afflicted when alone in their tent. They look for death, as those who dig for treasure, and it cometh not; they are exceedingly rejoiced when they have found a grave. The offspring of their

house is exposed. What remains of them is buried in death, and their widows do not weep. As for me, when I remember, I am afraid; trembling seized my flesh. Am I not enclosed in a prison with the dead? Shall I speak but in the affliction of my soul? Shall I remain silent whilst strength remains?'

"We have given ourselves—we have nothing left; we call on you for help. If in your love of God, you would see banished from before his face this army of crime, which offends him—help us. If, in your charity, you look out for the poorest objects, if those most lost, if those who have least aid within themselves—help us. If you would descend to the deepest miseries, and carry down there the most blessed good, and pour it out to the greatest number of the unhappy—assist us. If you would aspire to a godlike work, if to emulate the perfection of that Eternal Father, whose work is the creation of good, and the diffusion of light through the places of darkness, and the preparation of enjoyment, co-operate with him in the divinest of all his divine works, the salvation of the fallen —help us.

"If you would be associated in the redemption of Christ, who came down with sacrifice to deliver *us* when heathens, and preached to the souls in prison—help us. If to share in the merits of our apostleship without the toil, and in our blessed consolations without the sacrifice —if to combine the works of mercy spiritual with those corporal, and present them in one act to Christ—help us. If to these despairing thousands you would be as the visible providence of God—if at that last dread day you would hear their appealing voices on your behalf, '*The Lord sent this his angel, who delivered me out of prison*"—if, in that great hour, you would hear from the Eternal Son the decision of your election, '*I was in prison, and ye came unto me*'—if you would snatch from perdition these

souls, wash them in the blood of the cross, and place them, as celestial rubies, in your own immortal crown—bring to us help.

"If ever there was a prayer, deep, solemn, earnest—if ever a supplication of the heart from which all pride and confidence were gone, crushed out by the force of calamity and the pressure of distress—if ever an entreaty from the soul, it is the cry of the convict to you. He has offended; is he not punished? He put you in danger; is he not cast out? He deserves; are you then the avenger of blood? '*Forgive us our sins, as we forgive others.*' Have you then nothing to forgive? Shall the cross be taken down? the wounds of Christ cease to flow? the gates of mercy be closed, and all pardon be at an end? Whatever have been their crimes, are they not now sacred, anointed with sorrow and consecrated to affliction? What if their conditions of life had been yours, yours theirs? We are relentless and undiscerning in our condemnations of the fallen. I have often compared the monster hunted from before man with the poor penitent trembling before God, and have found them in one person. How many good tendencies and sources of right feeling are there even in the worst of men, for which the world gives them little credit, and which, had they been duly appreciated and rightly directed, would have made all the difference? I have known men who, though death awaited them, and all the moving mysteries of religion were displayed before their faith, yet felt themselves hard and insensible as the iron that bound them; but they felt it as a torture of the soul, from which they strove and prayed deliverance in vain. Were these men impenitent? Yet how could the world have comprehended their repentance? Could you but see those dark-browed men, when we recall to them their innocent years; when we oppose their sufferings with the passion of Christ; when, unfolding the mystery of

grace, we show them that, with this world and its hopes vanished, all is far from being lost: could you but mark the fixed gaze — the tremble — the long sob — the tear, frozen since infancy, bursting down the furrowed cheek of clay—the hard-clasped hands—the shudder, as some great truth comes forth—the prostrate form, the glowing face, the fervent prayer—you would confess in them the power of grace, the will broken of its stubbornness, the heart subdued. Oh, who will give them of those apostolic men, who dwell beneath the shadow of the cross and preach nothing but its excellencies. Men who will go forth under the banner of the bleeding King, insatiable of suffering; who will seek no rest but where they bring peace; and who will count their wealth but in the number of rescued souls.

"But let me conclude—rest I am not allowed; for wherever I go and whatever I do, the voices of these wretched men follow me. Their shrunken forms gather round me, an army of distress reproaching my delays. The stagnant gaze from the interior—the dissolute features from the factory—the red glare through the sunken eye of the barrack—the down-bent dejection of the iron-gang—the swollen head raised from the death-cell floor, repressing the bursting heart—the shame-sunk female from her destroyer, bowed down with memory—the palsied head, white with age, but without reverence, from the asylum—the haggard despair from Norfolk Island; their spectral forms gather round us, like a forest of humanity blasted by the visitation of God. Oh, remember the human lot, and have pity! The presence of Christ is amongst them; his wounds and his agonies bleed anew; he calls on you for help. Will you refuse him? No; for you also are the child of his sorrows. The wild heathen wanders through them deprived of light. The little children point with their finger, and ask you whether they shall become like

these. From the shadow of death that covers them, 'bound in poverty and iron,' they stretch forth their arms with mine to supplicate you." *

It is highly gratifying to state, that there is every reason to expect, that the present government and legislature of this country will speedily endeavour to ameliorate the condition of our convicts, and support a sufficient number of clergymen, of different denominations, in our penal settlements. The able and humane Report on Transportation so largely quoted, fully warrants this conclusion. The reporters strongly suggest the total abolition of transportation to penal colonies, and the substitution of imprisonment for 7, 10, or 15 years in our hulks or penitentiaries in its stead. The Secretary of State for the Home Department, Lord John Russell, and the Secretary for the Colonies, Lord Glenelg, have already ordered the discontinuance of corporal punishment in Australia, &c.

Having now given the preceding deplorable account of immorality in our penal colonies, I proceed to describe it in civilized countries, and shall select two European capitals, Paris and London, as examples of all others. Let us now examine the present state of prostitution in these two cities, with a view to its diminution, and to its evils on health and morals.

* Donations, including religious books, are received for the Australian Mission, by Messrs. Wright and Co., bankers, Henrietta Street, Covent Garden, and by Messrs. Keating and Brown, booksellers, Duke Street, Manchester Square, and St. Martin le Grand, opposite the General Post Office, London.

CHAPTER III.

PROSTITUTION IN PARIS.

I HAVE enumerated the principle vices of mankind in relation to the animal function under consideration, in my works on the *Philosophy of Marriage*, *A Manual of Midwifery and Diseases of Women and Children*, and *A Manual of Medical Jurisprudence*, or the evidence afforded by medical practitioners to the legislature or in the different courts of justice; and therefore shall now confine my observations to evils resulting to morals, and from venereal abuses. I shall now rapidly draw these preliminary remarks to a termination, by giving a short review of the principal facts and conclusions contained in a most philantrophic and valuable work, very favourably eulogised by medical reviewers in all civilized countries, and entitled—*On Prostitution in Paris.* By Dr. Parent Duchatelet.

The facts attested in this work comparatively apply to all civilized nations, and afford ample ground for the serious reflection of every member of society; but more especially of the virtuous, the religious, and the legislative. There is nothing in this book, to excite the passions, every thing to humble and chasten them; and there is abundance of evidence to prove the expediency and necessity of the improvement of public morals not only in France, but likewise in all countries.

The medical reviewers of this work, have occupied several numbers of our best periodicals, and the information given cannot fail to interest every rational individual who has arrived at the adult age.

The leading and by far the best medical review in this capital, thus notices it:—"The volumes will be read very extensively beyond the sphere of the medical profession, and they will remain a lasting memorial of the author's unexampled industry. We agree with a contemporary reviewer, that there is scarcely a sentence in these volumes calculated to offend the most delicate ear, notwithstanding the revolting nature of the subject! We are not sure that a considerable portion of these volumes might not be perused in the *boudoirs* of our ladies, without any serious injury—perhaps with advantage. But be this as it may, the politician, philosopher, philanthropist, and physician will read these volumes with no common interest." (*The Medico-Chirurgical Review and Journal of Practical Medicine.* Edited by James Johnson, M.D., Physician Extraordinary to the late King, and Henry James Johnson, Esq., Lecturer on Anatomy at the School of St. George's Hospital, in Kinnerton Street, No. 51, Jan. 1837.) Indeed this review expresses the universal opinion of the work in all countries. (See also *The Lancet, Medical Gazette, Ryan's London Medical and Surgical Journal, The Dublin and Edinburgh Medical Journals, The British and Foreign Medical Review,* and the *Continental and British Medical Review,* for equally favourable criticisms on this work.)

With every sentiment of respect for the late revered author, I cannot help remarking, that though he has told "the truth," I cannot think, he has told "the whole truth," when his conclusions on being compared with those deducible from many sources in the succeeding chapter, would lead to the belief that Paris is less depraved than London. The contrary opinion is, I believe, universally received in this country. It is, however, to be recollected that the mode of living, and the amount of wealth are widely different in the two capitals, and that the degree of affluence and luxury have close relation to each other.

The most positive evidence will be adduced hereafter, that the immoral productions of France, Germany, Italy, &c. are infinitely more vicious than those of this country. There is abundant occular demonstration of this fact. I am ready to acknowledge that M. Duchatelet's work is entitled to all the praise it has received, because it is highly calculated to effect great improvement in public morals; and being strongly impressed with this conviction, I quote it freely, and imitate the author in giving an account of prostitution in London and America, with the most sanguine hope of doing good to mankind.

The laudable object of the author of Prostitution in Paris, was to obtain information from the medical profession, the magistracy, and the police, so that the subject of his inquiry has been examined in all its bearings; and the legislator, the magistrate, the physician, the surgeon, and the philanthropist, now possess a store of knowledge to guide them in their amelioration of the social intellectual, and pathological conditions of a deeply degraded but important class—important from the influence it may exert upon the rest of society. It is important to state that the author expended no less than eight years in collecting his materials, and not only describes the causes of prostitution, but what is the best policy to be adopted towards the wretched victims, for the preservation of their health, and for the diminution of the amount of evil, which they inflict on the whole community, without at the same time giving encouragement to a vice, which prevails to so great an extent at present.

It appears that the happy results of the sanitary surveillance exercised by the police in Paris since 1800, have led the authorities of Rome, Naples, Milan, the chief towns in Germany, Holland, Belgium, the Brazils, and the United States, to request information respecting the management and treatment of prostitutes in the French

capital; but there was no source from the records of which satisfactory and conclusive replies could be given.

M. Duchatelet found, on a careful examination of all the records on the subject, that these were for the most part, replete with errors, and the falsest notions, with the exception of some few historical notices. He, therefore, examined for himself, and refuted or confirmed the received opinions.

I cannot however follow him through his minute details, but shall only notice his leading conclusions, strongly recommending every legislator, judge, magistrate, and medical practitioner to carefully peruse the original production.

Number of Prostitutes in Paris.—According to this author, the number of prostitutes in Paris in 1836, was about 18,000, one half of whom were kept women. The number was about 30,000 during the republic after 1793. The number in London, according to the reports of the police superintendents is from 8000 to 10,000.

The variations of those in Paris from 1812 to 1832 are remarkable; in 1812 there were only 1293; in 1832, 3558 ; and the increase is to be attributed to the invasion of foreign armies, and various other causes.

Four hundred and fifty-one were Europeans not natives of France—of these, Belgium supplied 161, Switzerland 59 ; Prussia, 58 ; Holland, 23 ; England, 23 ; Savoy, 22 ; Austria, 15 ; Spain, 14 ; Piedmont, 11 ; Rome, 7 ; Poland, 6 ; Ireland, 4 ; Naples, 3 ; Scotland, 1.

The regularity with which foreigners of this class arrive every year in Paris is very remarkable. The number of prostitutes, natives of France, were, from 10th April, 1816, to April 30, 1831, a period of fifteen years, 12,201, including 506 foreigners, in all 12,707.

Nations which furnish these women.—The prostitutes born in Paris are almost exclusively of the class of artisans,

and only four belonging to respectable families. The families of the labourers and others, who cannot attend to the education of their daughters, nor watch, nor provide for their wants when they attain a certain age, are those which supply servants, and women of the workshops.

A third of the fathers were men who could not write their names; and those of the departments were still more illiterate. The prostitutes of Paris and the departments belong to the poorest and most miserable families. A great majority of the former were legitimate, and not illegitimate or foundling infants, as many imagine.

"The influence of the sedentary employments of the manufactory and workshop is very remarkable upon certain classes. The smallness of the remuneration of their labouring inmates is well known; and as the workpeople have frequently no resource but their labour, it may well be asked, how is it possible for them, with such means, to obtain even the merest necessaries of life? It should be observed, too, that a number of causes continually occur to suspend the works of these establishments, and throw out of employment, for two or three months at a time, workwomen, who find it impossible to put by any part of their receipts, and who frequently, from the division of labour introduced into our manufactures, only know how to produce one particular thing. Destitute girls, under such circumstances,—isolated, and without friends, without having received even the commonest education, a prey to many passions, surrounded with temptations and bad examples, frequently a prey to every privation, and having in perspective the cruellest of deaths, that of hunger,—fly to resources the most repugnant to the wealthy and virtuous, in whose minds their condition is well calculated to arouse philanthropic reflection."

The reader will admit, that the author from whom I quote, has accurately described the actual condition of

those numerous girls and women in this country, who are compelled to work or earn the means of their support.

Education.—The education of prostitutes is very defective. Of 4,470 born and brought up in Paris, 1,780 signed very badly, 110 signed well, 248 doubtful, 2,232 could not sign their names; and of 7,600 born in the departments, 4,352 were unable to sign.

Ages.—Of 3,245, 2 were registered above 10 years; 3 at 11; 3 at 12; 6 at 13; 20 at 14; 51 at 15; 111 at 16; 149 at 17; 279 at 18; 322 at 19; 389 at 20; 303 at 21; 300 at 22; 215 at 23; 179 at 24; 136 at 25; 140 at 26; 122 at 27; 101 at 28; 57 at 29; 56 at 30; 52 at 31; 27 at 32; 32 at 33; 31 at 34; 26 at 35; 24 at 36; 15 at 37; 12 at 38; 11 at 39; 9 at 40; 5 at 41; so on, diminishing to 52; when there was at this age, not more than 1 in each year from 52 to 63 years.

Causes of Prostitution.—The chief causes of prostitution deserve attentive reflection. In the space of ten years, not more than three or four presented themselves at the dispensary in Paris for registration, who had not been previously SEDUCED. Seduction is the most common cause of prostitution in all nations.

M. Duchatelet gives the following detail of the causes, and as it applies to all countries, I shall condense it.

Laziness may be placed in the first rank; it is the desire of procuring enjoyments without working, that causes many young women to leave their places, or to refrain from seeking others when out of service. The laziness, carelessness, and cowardice of prostitutes, have become almost proverbial. Misery, proceeding to a frightful extreme, is also one of the most active causes of this evil. How many young women, abandoned by their families, without relations or friends, are obliged to have recourse to prostitution? One unhappy girl, alive to all the feelings of honour, struggled to the last extremity against this

wretched alternative, and, when she came to be registered, it was proved that she had not eaten for nearly three days! Vanity, and the desire of being finely dressed, is another active cause of prostitution, particularly in Paris, where simplicity in dress is actually a subject of reproach, and shabbiness is still more despised. It is hardly, then, surprising, that so many girls allow themselves to be seduced by the desire to possess a dress, which, while its display would gratify their vanity, would help to remove them from the station in which they were born, and allow them to mingle with a class by whom they consider themselves regarded with hauteur. Those who know the extent to which love of dress and finery exists in some women, will easily judge of the activity of such a cause of prostitution in Paris.

There are, also, a great number of young women, who, being seduced in the departments by military officers, students, commercial travellers, and others, are induced to come to Paris by various deceptive promises, and being there afterwards abandoned, follow, in the destitute condition which afflicts them, the suggestions of the first person whom they encounter; and it is proved, that it is upon this description of girls, that those abominable women whose trade it is to corrupt youth, particularly fix their attention. These wretches seek them every where, exhibiting, in the pursuit of their infernal art, the most remarkable address. Other young women, being seduced in the country, voluntarily seek refuge in Paris, where they can conceal their disgrace from their friends. Domestic trouble, also, and ill-treatment received from their family and friends, determine some to adopt this course of life.

A long sojourn in a hospital, or in the low lodging-houses, where servants out of place are assembled, is likewise one of the causes of prostitution; and, finally, the misconduct of parents and relations, and bad examples

of every kind, must be considered to exercise a very great influence in the promotion of this vice.

But of all the causes of prostitution there is none more active, particularly in Paris, and, probably, in all the other great towns, than an insufficiency of wages. Let the profits of the cleverest of our sempstresses, our laundresses, and, in general, of all those who live by the use of the needle, be compared with the profits of individuals who possess inferior skill, and it will be seen, that it is scarcely possible for the latter to obtain the barest necessaries of life. More especially, let the reward of their labour be compared with the price of their dishonour, and surprise will no longer be felt that so great a number abandon themselves to this wretched state of life.

It is difficult and painful to believe, that this career is occasionally embraced by certain women, as the only means of performing the duties imposed upon them by the title of "mother" or "daughter." Nothing, however, is more true. It is not uncommon for married women, abandoned by, or deprived of their husbands, and, consequently, of all support, to become prostitutes, with the sole intention of preserving a numerous family from starvation; and it is still more common to see girls, who are unable by their labour to support aged or infirm parents, add, by prostitution at night, to their limited means. I have too often obtained exact particulars of these two classes of prostitutes, not to be convinced that they are very numerous in Paris.

There are, lastly, some women who become prostitutes from a spirit of licentiousness, which can only be explained by ascribing it to the operation of a violent mental disease, but, in general, these Messalinas are rare.

"Is prostitution," inquires M. Duchatelet, "to be attributed to the extreme degree of civilization which we have reached? Were we only to regard the preceding details,

this opinion might be maintained; but if we look back to the times of the ancients, and to the barbarous middle ages, we shall find that prostitution was then very common. If we consult modern travellers, who have penetrated to the most remote parts of America and Africa, where civilization is scarcely dawning, we find the same custom prevailing. In all those regions prostitutes have been observed to abound. No doubt our social state is the cause of the ruin of many young women; but, on the other hand, it provides resources for a great number, which they would not possess under other circumstances, and which allows them to lead a life of regularity.

"The following details, which partly belong to this question, will serve to throw some light upon it. Of the 5,183 individuals already alluded to, there have been found inscribed on the registers,—

Two sisters, 164 times.
Three ditto, 4 ditto.
Four ditto, 3 ditto.

"Besides which, there have been found,—

Mother and daughter, 16 times.
Aunt and niece, 4 ditto.
Two cousins, 22 ditto.

"It must not be supposed, that these 436 persons were all prostitutes at the same time; this number is to be distributed through a period of eight years. By this, the complete immorality of the families, from which these women issue, is exposed. Their degradation is most frequently owing to the pernicious examples which are placed before their eyes during infancy."

It may be asked, on seeing these sad results, whether society has sufficiently inquired into the fate of these unhappy women, who so much need its care, and who exercise so great an influence upon the mechanism (if the term may be allowed) of a state? In this respect, many reforms

and improvements remain to be accomplished; and these important matters, though difficult to discuss, are as worthy of attention, on the part of the friends of humanity, as of the meditations of the statesman."

Opinions entertained of themselves.—According to our author, prostitutes entertain the most abject opinion of themselves. The sight of a mother of a family, or of any woman of good character, is insupportable to them; and they often feel pleasure in insulting these, to revenge, in some degree, the contempt and disgust with which virtuous women regard them. They often become suddenly ill on seeing any of their former acquaintances; and one girl lost her senses, by the sight of one of her countrymen. They most acutely feel their abject state, and are a subject of horror to themselves; their contempt for themselves often surpasses that in which they are held by persons of moral character; they bitterly regret their fall, and form plans and make exertions to quit their mode of life; but all efforts are useless; they are driven to despair by the tyranny of their keepers and of the world, which renders them the very dregs of society; while their heartless seducers, who are much more depraved and guilty, are approved by society. It is obvious that I have justly censured male seducers, and the inhuman law in their favour, in my work on the Philosophy of Marriage, even against a popular Government, but all right-minded individuals are now of my opinion. No one can suffer, without dread and the greatest dejection, to be entirely forgotten by the world; and to be hated, despised, and universally disdained. "The thought alone of this state, often causes many prostitutes to become lunatics."

Religious feelings of prostitutes.—Most of this unhappy class, are in a profound state of ignorance with respect to religion. A great number have scarcely an idea of the commonest sentiment of the Divinity; and they are not

sparing of jests and sarcasms upon matters of religion. Many of them refrain from all religious duties, on account of their unworthiness; though most of them are anxious for religious consolation when dangerous or fatal illness assails them. I have known many examples.

Feeling of shame.—M. Duchatelet attests, by many facts, that there is a feeling of shame in prostitutes, notwithstanding their habits and their vices. He states, that at the examinations and demonstrations of their diseases, before a numerous audience, at the dispensary in Paris—a most indecent and reprehensible proceeding—"all, without exception, even the most shameless, became of the colour of crimson; they hid their faces, and considered this inspection a real punishment." This equally applies to public examinations in our hospitals. A remarkable change for the better has taken place of late years. Before and during the Revolution, mention is frequently made of women dancing, and walking in the daylight, in a state of nature. "But by degrees," says our author, "as we approach the present time, I found fewer details of scenes of disgusting indecency." This improvement is to be attributed to the enforcement of the police regulations, and to the laudable perseverance with which it carries into effect its wise measures of correction and reform.

Turn and character of mind.—There are other traits in the conduct of the unfortunate class of beings now under consideration, which deserve to be noticed. Their volatile and changeable turn of mind is so great, that nothing can fix their attention, which is distracted by the most trifling occurrence. This will, in some degree, account for their many errors and misconduct, and extenuate, in a great degree, their culpability in the eyes of all men of understanding.

Loquacity, noise, tumult, and agitation, appear to be indispensable to their existence, in the prisons, the hos-

pitals, and penitentiaries; but even in this respect, many improvements have taken place of late years.

Manner of passing their leisure hours.—The manner of passing their leisure hours is very remarkable. Nine-tenths of them do nothing at all, and pass their time in idleness. Those of the better class rise late, go to baths, live very well, or, rather too freely, and amuse themselves with skipping, recline on a bed or couch, or walk in the open air. Those of the lower class frequent wine shops (*Anglicè*, "gin-palaces") and converse with all the bad characters that visit such places. Those of this class often sell articles in the streets.

M. Duchatelet has ascertained, that the first class read romances and tales of a tragical nature, which excite lively emotions; but they never chose those obscene and licentious works, which most young and depraved persons seek for with such ardour. Satiety renders that insipid and monotonous, which, under other circumstances, would be a powerful, and, too often, a ruinous stimulant. Many informants, upon whose veracity I can rely, assure me to the contrary; and it is proved beyond all doubt, and I have seen the works which were seized in brothels, that this is not true as regards London, nor do I believe as regards Paris. The better class are fond of balls, theatres, and other amusements; as many of them only exercise their vocation from ten to four o'clock in the afternoon.

There is a singular fact stated in this section, which is as follows:—

"One of them assured the safety of her friends, and received none but married men, who were all known to each other; and these were only admitted into the number by the consent and introduction of older favourites, who amounted to between forty or fifty. Every one who became a widower was excluded, in order that the safety of the many might be secured—or admitted by paying a

larger sum than the rest." There is no such fact recorded of London. A case of this kind is, however, very rare; because for one who obtains a competence in this manner, many expire in the most miserable and utter destitution.

Slovenliness of prostitutes.—The slovenliness of prostitutes in general, with the exception of their external habiliments, as regards person or dress, is proverbial. "These women seem to take pleasure in dirt and filth." This is not the case in London. The author narrates many disgusting proofs of the truth of this statement.

Moral defects of prostitutes.—He next alludes to the peculiar moral defects of prostitutes. He informs us, that the love of strong liquors may be placed at the head of these defects; as it generally plunges them into the lowest state of brutality. They are led into this vice by the ignorance of soldiers, sailors, and all classes, who, knowing, by experience, that syphilitic diseases are greatly aggravated by intemperance, foolishly imagine, that women who will not drink to excess, are only sober because they are contaminated; and they, therefore, must drink to prove the soundness of their health. "How wretched," says the philanthropic author, "must be the state of the unfortunate, obliged, during the same day, to drink to excess with two or three individuals. Women of a superior class are rarely inebriated, though they consume an immense quantity of punch and champagne. There is no mention made here of the adulteration of drinks with strong narcotics, to accelerate robbery or murder, though now common in all parts of Europe.

The gluttony of depraved women is extreme, according to the author from whom I quote, for many consume three or four times as much food as would suffice three or four persons of their age. Lying and rioting, are also characteristics of this class of persons.

Good qualities of prostitutes. — But their good and redeeming qualities are also remarkable. They assist, support, and clothe each other, in distress. In times of scarcity, a great number of these women, have given a loaf of bread a week, or even a day, to old people, to those in bad health, and also to poor families in their neighbourhood.

Their conduct as mothers and nurses is very different from what is usually imagined. Many of them regard pregnancy with indifference, because, so far from injuring their interests, it increases their profits. Others, however, procure criminal abortion at the risk of their own, and their infants' lives.

Some are distressed at not having children ; they are most attentive to their companions or acquaintances after accouchement ; nurse, dress, and feed their infants ; and in all these respects, acting contrary to the custom of most unmarried mothers, not prostitutes, who are generally little disposed, to afford proper maternal cares to, or bring up their offspring, or those of their relations.

Mr. Talbot gives a very different view of this question ; though I believe that he and M. Duchatelet may be reconciled, if we comprise the human family as a whole.

There is also, a remarkable similiarity in their accounts of lovers and bullies of prostitutes, which will be apparent an comparing their respective statements.

Lovers and bullies of prostitutes.—"It may be considered as an invariable rule, that although the impetuosity of the passions is, with certain women, the first cause of prostitution, yet, once entered on their career, they feel entirely indifferent to all who approach them, or, more frequently, conceal the deepest disgust under the caresses of which the love of gold, or hunger, renders them so prodigal. It is not, therefore, very astonishing, that they should attach themselves to one particular individual, in whom they

seek to fill up the blank which is necessarily left in their heart by the life that they lead, and the indignities with which they are overwhelmed. But who are the persons that are selected by these women? They are individuals whose social position varies as much, as does the position of their mistresses. The letters which they receive, when in prison, &c., prove that there are amongst them persons not only of good education, but some who, by their position in the world, excite our surprise at their names being compromised in such affairs. It will scarcely be credited that the general, the man of letters, the nobleman, the financier, and persons of all other classes, down to the lowest, figure amongst them. Generally, however, the superior class of prostitutes choose their lovers from the students of law and medicine, and the barristers. The superior information possessed by these young men, and the pleasure which is derived from an acquaintance with those who are of a cultivated mind, cause them to be preferred by prostitutes, who habitually see only persons who are accustomed to good society. Those who are of a lower class find their lovers amongst merchant's clerks, tailors, journeymen hair-dressers, goldsmiths jewellers, and ambulating musicians. The remainder abandon themselves to workmen of every sort, and the numerous bad characters who particularly infest large capitals. The attachment evinced by prostitutes for these persons is sometimes remarkable, some of them going so far as to feed, clothe, and maintain them; and it is with regret that I state, that a considerable number of young men in Paris have no other means of existence. The prostitutes lodging with women, the keepers of *maisons tolérées*, always stipulate, on entering, that their lovers shall not be forgotten; that they shall be allowed to visit them two, three, or four times a week, with other prerogatives, without any kind of payment being made in return. These men are a great annoyance

to the *dames de maison,* although they are compelled to bear with them. When one of the prostitutes returns from a prison, or an hospital, it is the custom, in many places, to allow them twenty-four hours to enjoy themselves with their lover; but that period being passed, they must, according to the disgusting professional expression, "work for the house." With the lowest and coarsest classes, reproaches, invectives, ill-treatment, blows, wounds, and even broken limbs, are not capable of shaking their attachment to some men, for scarcely are they cured in the hospitals of their wounds, than they return to them, although the power thus allowed to these men often becomes a species of tyranny which surpasses belief.

The letters written in prison by these women, betray a singular exaltation of mind; nothing obscene, nothing gross, is to be found in them; they contain only protestations of love, or still oftener reproaches, expressed in energetic terms, for these unfortunates are rarely loved in return; and if they be detained during any length of time, they almost always learn that they have been supplanted by some companion, in which case they occasionally satisfy their vengeance by beating their rival, or even the *ci-devant* lover himself.

It appears that, in all countries, and in all ages, women of the town have been connected with "bullies," who, at present, are chiefly advantageous to them in the following way:—When it is the interest of the prostitutes to infringe some regulation of the police, by walking in such of the public streets as are interdicted, &c., these bullies place themselves as sentinels, and the moment they perceive an inspector, they warn the women, who instantly disappear; or, if a prostitute be seized, they endeavour to excite a disturbance, so that she may escape. Without speaking of thefts committed by these scoundrels, they assemble in some *cabarets,* in such numbers, with bad women, perpe-

trating every species of disorder, that the military force is occasionally obliged to be called in to restore peace; it is also extremely dangerous to complain to the magistrates of the conduct of prostitutes, or to put them in prison when they have committed a robbery; for these men sympathize with them, and the party who complains runs the risk of being beaten, or having some injury inflicted on him. This is a sort of leprosy in the civil state, which future legislation may extirpate, by assuming the same authority over men who live by the profits of prostitution, as over prostitutes themselves.

Tribades-manuels.—He next alludes to those who from a depraved and unnatural taste, select their lovers from persons of their own sex. These are called *tribades*, and are numerous when long confined in prisons. They are despised and hated by all other prostitutes, but their vice prevails to such an extent, that, notwithstanding the regulation of the police, which obliges every woman to sleep in a separate bed, M. Duchatelet estimates them at less than one-fourth of the entire number of prostitutes.

These disgusting and monstrous unions, are much more frequent than is generally imagined. When a person of this class is closely questioned, she replies with vivacity and a tone of impatience, *je ne suis que pour homme, et n'ai jamais été pour femme.* The women of this class are generally from twenty-five to thirty years of age, and have been in most cases in prison from eighteen months to two years. Younger persons are generally vitiated by their elders. There are few old prostitutes who may not be classed with *tribades.* Their correspondence is of the most amorous description, and expresses the most unbridled passion. Some of them are little annoyed when their lovers prefer the other sex; and more assault them, if stronger, as often as they meet them. They have fallen into the lowest degree of vice, and require the closest

observation from those who have the superintendence of them in prisons and elsewhere. It has been remarked that these women are more frequently pregnant than ordinary prostitutes; and this circumstance has become the subject of jokes in the prisons. The explanation must be apparent to every one conversant with human nature.

Classification of prostitutes.—The division of prostitutes next claims attention. They are thus classed in Paris:—Kept mistresses, those who frequent the theatres, those registered at home or in public houses, those who attend soldiers, those who commit robberies, procuresses, &c. &c. The habits and vices of all these are minutely detailed.

The "femmes galantes" are kept women, and are not to be distinguished in public company and public places from women of good education; but they know well, when it suits them, how to affect *a manner*, and assume looks, of significance to those who seek them; and it is in the houses of friends, or in houses of a particular character, that they receive visits. These women, being visited chiefly by persons who are in good circumstances, attach a high price to their favours; and they are artful and seducing, which renders them highly dangerous. They give themselves the name of "femmes galantes," when speaking with persons who are acquainted with their mode of life. With the "femmes à parties" beauty is not alone sufficient, they must unite with that, the charms and graces of a cultivated mind. They give dinners and *soirées*, and hire themselves to serve as an attraction in parties which are reputed to be private, but where gaming-tables, and the absence of all moral restraint, assemble the libertines who go thither, to lose at once their health and money. The "femmes de théatre" possess also special characteristics, differing from those of the preceding classes, and have been estimated to amount to three or four hundred; but as no certain cal-

culation has, or, in fact, can be made, either of this or the two other classes, we remain in doubt on this point. No one, says the author, can deny that these women are really prostitutes; they propagate fatal diseases and precocious infirmities, more than all the others, and they may be considered to be the most dangerous beings in society. The police cannot, however, treat them as prostitutes, for they all have a residence, pay taxes, and conform, apparently, to the rules of decency; consequently, they cannot be refused the outward tokens of respect which are due to virtuous women. It is an established fact, that a woman who makes a profit of her person, not publicly, but occasionally, and with only a small number of persons, can claim legal redress against whoever may treat her as a prostitute. "Mulier quæ non palam, sed passim et paucis, sui copiam facit actio, competit adversus eum qui eam meretricem vocavit."

The prostitutes, who are recognized by the police, are divided into two classes; the first being styled "filles en carte," from their having a special card, containing the dates of the sanitary visits which they have undergone, and from their residing singly in lodgings, garrets, &c. The second class are called "filles en numéro," from their simply bearing a particular number in the *maisons tolérees*, "tolerated houses," which they inhabit. And these distinctions are of the highest importance in the administrative police, and cannot be laid aside without great inconvenience. The author remarks, *en passant*, that every class of prostitutes feels the greatest disdain for those who are beneath them in circumstances and position, and that it rarely happens that a woman leaves the class in which she first becomes a prostitute, a circumstance which he considers to arise from their contracting certain tastes and habits, which are suited to those persons who visit them. There are still some other distinctions to be made among

this degraded part of the population, and first, may be mentioned, the "proxenètes," which may be translated *procuresses*, as their business is, while bargaining with maid-servants, or *femmes de chambre*, for old clothes, &c. to give them pernicious advice, and make appointments for them, of which they reap the benefit. These women, also, frequently assume the character of "marchandes à la toilette," to cover their real avocation. The "marcheuses" are women, far advanced in years, who play the part of duennas to their more youthful companions in vice. They accompany them to the baths, to the Prefecture of Police, and to the houses of individuals who send for them; walking with them in the streets, and at other times "touting," or pointing out, to the passers by, the situation of a bad house, &c. The more severe the regulations of the police are made, the more important to their class these women become. The *filles à soldats*, or soldiers' women, are females who are remarkable for their ugliness, having no fixed residence, haunting the vicinities of the barriers, and abandoning themselves to the soldiers in the most open and disgusting manner. As these women cannot be distinguished from labouring women, it is extremely difficult for the police to recognise them; but whenever any of them have been arrested, eight out of ten are sure to be found in a state of disease.

The last class to be noticed does not differ very essentially from the preceding one, and is termed "pierreuses," from the women being generally found in remote, obscure, and out-of-the-way places, and especially in the midst of blocks of stone, building materials, &c., where they conceal their disgusting ugliness, and practise, in obscurity, every vice that it is possible to imagine. The term "pierreuse" is used by all the better sort of prostitutes, as a word of abuse, to designate those who are of an inferior degree. There might still be named the "voleuses," or women of

the town, who, taking advantage of persons of infirm health, or youths, assemble, three or four together, and, by hustling such persons, manage to rob them, the ridicule and unpleasantry endured by their victims, in making any complaint against them, generally shielding the culprits from justice; but these women scarcely merit to be separately classed, as the generality of prostitutes do not consider that the taking what the purse or the pocket may contain, is a robbery, but that, in so doing, they merely "font leurs affaires," to use a free translation, "take care of themselves." It is doubtful whether women placed at the head of houses of debauchery, should be termed "prostitutes." Many, however, have formerly been such, and have been inscribed in the registers of the police, by whom they are now termed "dames de maison," in place of the coarser and more generally known title.

Physical characters of prostitutes.—The plumpness and apparent health of many of them are ascribed to good living, and leading a purely animal life. Their stoutness is ascribed to the great number of baths which they take, to the inactive, indolent life which they lead, and the great quantity of food which they consume, and which far exceeds that of the hardest working labouring women. If many of them are thin and emaciated, it must be recollected that they cannot obtain even the barest necessaries of life. This class improve their health and personal appearance in the hospitals and prisons. There are, however, many exceptions to the preceding statements.

Alteration of Voice.—There is another peculiarity in an abandoned woman, the voice is very much altered, in consequence of exposure to the vicissitudes of the weather and to irregular habits.

Colour of the Hair and Eyes.—The colour of the hair and eyes deserves notice.

Of 12,600 women, assembled in Paris, from all countries,

6,733 had *chestnut* coloured hair; 2,642, *brown*; 1,694, *light*; 1,486, *black*; and 48 had *red* hair.

Of 12,454 women, the colour of whose eyes had been carefully noted, 4,612 had *grey* eyes; 3,529, *brown*; 2,878, *blue*; 730, *roux*, (ferrety); and 705 had *black* eyes.

The following observations accord with opinions I published in 1828, and are deeply interesting to the practical physician.

Morbid changes in the Sexual Organs of prostitutes.—It is a general opinion, and as yet uncontradicted, that the genital parts of prostitutes *must* alter, and assume a particular disposition, as the inevitable consequence of their avocation; and the youngest and oldest libertines, of the highest and lowest classes, are unanimous in this opinion, and their jokes are endless on those of their companions who marry, or take for concubines, former prostitutes. Medical men even believe more firmly in this vulgar opinion, than the vulgar themselves. They consider that every trade which requires continued action, in any particular organ, causes those who follow it to present, in such organ, an alteration which is sufficiently striking to indicate their trade, and they thence conclude (reasoning by analogy) that it could not be otherwise with prostitutes. But ill satisfied with such a method of reasoning, the author applied to the medical officers of the dispensary and the hospital to which prostitutes are sent by the police, from whom he obtained more exact information. The genital parts of prostitutes present no special alteration which is peculiar to them, and in this respect they do not differ from those of married women of unblemished character. The constant use that has been made of the speculum, for some time past, in the examination of maladies, has proved to all medical men, that the amplitude or the narrowness of the vagina, is, in many women, natural and congenial, and is no more remarkable than very material

variations in the dimensions of other parts of the body, in different individuals. Very young women, who have within a short period abandoned themselves to prostitution, and who have never had a child, are constantly to be met with in the hospital, in whom the vagina is more dilated than in many married women who are the mothers of large families; while, on the contrary, other women are found, who have lived for twelve or fifteen years by prostitution, and who exhibit in their countenances the most marked traces of decrepitude, yet in whom the vagina, in particular, presents not the slightest alteration; and I remarked, one day, in the prison (*Des Madelonnettes*,) a woman of fifty-one years of age, who had prostituted herself thirty-six years, but in whom, notwithstanding, the genital parts might have been mistaken for those of a virgin just arrived at puberty. It is especially in young girls who have not arrived at puberty, and still exhibit the characteristics of childhood, that the examination of the genital organs becomes difficult and important. Most books on medical jurisprudence indicate the means of recognising the traces of rape, in such a precise way, that nothing appears easier than to ascertain the truth, and accord justice; but how many causes of doubt and uncertainty arise on all sides, when opportunities have occurred of examining a number of these cases. MM. Jacquemin and Collineau declare, that in many instances it was impossible for a conscientious medical man to decide positively, either one way or the other. What must be thought, after this, of the light, off-hand, yet positive way, in which some medical practitioners give their opinions on facts of this nature? Is it not revolting to see magistrates commonly submitting questions of this sort to matrons, who are invariably very ignorant, and always convinced of the accuracy of their skill, and who would believe that their reputation was compromised, did they not pronounce an absolute opinion? In my

opinion, (adds the author) reserve is the first virtue of the medical witness, who cannot too often acknowledge the insufficiency of his knowledge.

The examination of the genital organs led M. Jacquemin to discover a new sign of pregnancy, which, with respect to medical jurisprudence, may become very useful. This sign consists in a discolouration, of a violet-tint (*coloration violacée*), and sometimes of the colour of wine lees, which the whole of the mucous membrane of the vagina contracts at this particular period of a woman's life. This sign is so evident, that M. Jacquemin is never deceived by it, and has verified its correctness in more than 4,500 women. [If true, this sign can seldom be ascertained in the women of this country, on account of their innate modesty.]

Another common error is to suppose, that the clitoris, being a seat of pleasure in woman, and of sensibility in the genital organs, and sometimes acquiring a considerable size, generally presents a greater development in prostitutes than in other women, and should vary according to their salaciousness, and the disgusting vices to which they sometimes yield. If impetuous and lascivious passions were always the cause of women abandoning themselves to prostitution, this opinion might, to a certain extent, be admitted; but if these be placed amongst the causes of prostitution, they are far from being the only ones, and MM. Jacquemin and Collineau declare, that there is nothing remarkable either in the dimensions or the disposition of the clitoris in the prostitutes of Paris, and that in them, as in all married women, there are variations, but nothing peculiar, and that the genital organs much more frequently present strongly-marked varieties in men. [This is and must be the opinion of every experienced obstetrician.] It may be added, in this place, that prostitutes, being aban-

doned to the brutality of numbers of men, satiated with the enjoyments which are conceded to nature, do not always refuse those illicit connexions which, though taking place between individuals of different sexes, are not the less revolting. MM. Jacquemin and Collineau, and many other observers, believe there is not a single prostitute, amongst those of a certain age, who refuse to commit this crime, though it must be owned that they maintain the most guarded silence on the subject, and reject, with the utmost horror and indignation, any question which betrays a suspicion of their guilt in this respect. However, local disorders, which are sometimes the result, commonly present themselves in such a form that there can be no mistaking their origin. In these cases it is always by silence, and never by a direct confession, that the truth is ascertained. [This is the case in all countries.]

Menstruation.—The author goes on to notice the functions of menstruation, and fecundity in this class of women. Some of these menstruate regularly; others do not, and commit many excesses which are correctly deemed by most women to be highly injurious to the particular functions of their sex.

M. Cullerier pretends, that prostitutes are in the habit of using lotions and cold injections to suppress the menses, so as not to be under the necessity of suspending, for too long a time, the resources which are derived from their avocation. I could never learn how far this practice prevails with them; but I am well aware that they now possess means, much more simple and efficacious, for effecting the same purpose. It is necessary to abstain from details; but I may mention that this invention has often served to conceal their maladies, and has thus enabled them to elude the watchfulness of the police; and they have also employed it in the hospital to simulate

cures, and recover their liberty ; but these tricks are now well known, and no longer deceive the persons who are charged with the sanitary *surveillance.*

This is scarcely credible, as women are peculiarly indisposed for three or four days in health, sometimes longer, but never "for too long a time," to destroy or impede sexual intercourse. The remainder of the paragraph is beyond my comprehension ; but I believe as incredible as the former part of it.

Fecundity, or number of children of prostitutes.—It is generally supposed that few of these women bear children ; but our author arrives at a different conclusion. He states that " He found that nothing was more common than that prostitutes expel the fœtus after four or five weeks' conception, and that not only were they very much subject to miscarriages and abortions from natural causes, but that they often provoked these accidents. M. Velpeau, who possesses, probably, the most numerous collection of embryos in existence, has procured five belonging to prostitutes, and of these five, three exhibit the traces of the perforating instrument used to extinguish life. But, without alluding to the artifices practised by some prostitutes, is not the exercise of their vocation alone more than sufficient to explain all that is now stated? If the life led by these women excites astonishment, if we can scarcely conceive how their health resists the excess of every kind, in which they indulge, it will be easy to imagine the evil influence which a union of such numerous causes of disorder must exercise upon an early conception, especially when we know, that they pursue their vocation of prostitution to the last extremity, so that instances have occurred of their being delivered in the streets at the moment when they were soliciting the attention of passengers, doing so for the acquisition of money, they being

in this state, infinitely more sought after, than when not *enciente.*

In the Maternité of Paris, there are no more than six deliveries of these women in a year. The infants are seldom born alive, or live; the labours are slow and difficult, requiring the use of instruments.

All women of the town pretended to be able to point out, in the most positive manner, the fathers of their children; as they always attributed their pregnancy to some particular individual. This will not appear singular, when we recollect that, generally speaking, for fecundation to take place, a variety of circumstances are necessary, and, in particular, the will and the *laisser aller* of the woman herself, constituting an intellectual and moral state, which is foreign to the habitual exercise of their vocation. The author, in concluding his remarks on this subject says, that he considers, that prostitutes are much more liable to conceive, than they have hitherto been supposed to be, and that if they rarely bring their pregnancy to the usual term, it is because abortions frequently occur amongst them, produced either by criminal proceedings, or by the nature of their vocation.

Mortality amongst their infants.—The mortality of the infants of these persons, is frightful.

"I have found," observes M. Duchatelet, "but one opinion, respecting the frightful mortality which prevails amongst the children of prostitutes, and that has been confirmed by all the information which I have been able to obtain, from whatever quarter derived. Of the eight children, who are generally born annually in prison, four die during the first fortnight, and the remaining four in the course of the first year. Of the ten children who commonly see the light annually, in one particular hospital, five die at the moment of their birth, and the

remaining five before the complete re-establishment of the mother. Amongst the higher class of prostitutes, however, there are some, who preserve their children; but those who are of a lower degree, notwithstanding their great affection for them, hardly ever bring one up. Only imagine the state of existence of these helpless and miserable little beings, resting on their mothers' arms until one or two o'clock in the morning, in winter and summer, and in every variety of weather,—their mothers passing half their time in drunkenness, and destitute of all resources, thinking only of warming the little creatures by libations of wine or spirits. What diet, and what a fate! When one reflects on the health and future destiny of these children, a premature death seems to be for them, as well as for the state, a dispensation of Providence." Nature, if not man, seems to strive for the extinction of the unhappy race.

Diseases most common to prostitutes.—We now come to the consideration, of the numerous diseases peculiar to this truly unfortunate class of persons. Among these are syphilis in all its horrible forms; gonorrhœa, profuse and often fatal hæmorrhage from the uterus, ulceration, cancer, and tumours of this organ, abscesses in the labia, recto-vaginal fistula.

The prison where these women are confined, to the number always, of four or five hundred, and to which an excellent infirmary is attached, is, perhaps, the place best adapted for making observations on the subject under discussion; and I subjoin the opinion of the practitioners attached to that establishment:—"Abundant discharges, constituting a malady, without the slightest organic lesion, are frequently amongst prostitutes, and in the space of six months, twelve cases were observed. At the *Madellonnettes*, one case terminated in death; and the opening of the body proved, that the hæmorrhage was essential,

and without the slightest trace of redness in the parts which furnished it." But are the hæmorrhages to be attributed to the vocation which these women pursue? Every kind of proof can be accumulated in favour of an affirmative reply. These floodings have been observed in prostitutes of fourteen and fifteen years of age, while nothing can be more rare, than such cases in girls of good character. One proof of the truth of this opinion is, that these hæmorrhages are nowhere observed in the *maisons de détention,* which are especially devoted to women.

"Prostitutes are frequently subject to tumours, in the substance of the great labia, which commence with a little pus, and tumefy at each menstrual epoch. These tumours are never observed, but in one labium at once, and when left to take their course they acquire a considerable size; they are indolent, and only inconvenience the woman, in a purely mechanical way. These tumours are seldom fibrous, and are commonly filled with a very thick albuminous fluid, or a mellicerous substance. A few are occasionally developed at the base of the lesser labia; these are of the same nature as the others, but are extremely painful, and never attain any considerable size. The vocation of prostitutes accounts for the inflammation, which sometimes takes place in these tumours, and causes them to suppurate; they, however, fill again in a short time, or produce very disagreeable fistulæ, which can only be cured by removing the cysts which form them, or by causing them to suppurate. All who have opened these cysts, or removed the tumours, agree as to the extreme fœtidness of the fluid contained in them; and M. Dupuytren several times told me, that there was no pathological fluid to be compared with it in this respect. This fœtidness is inherent in the fluid, and cannot be attributed to the presence of air; and I know, that the surgeons of the dispensary, when they are obliged to open these tumours, make use of

a long-handled bistoury, in order to avoid the contact of the fluid, the smell of which, without this precaution, would remain on their hands, for two or three days without its being possible to remove it. [The fluid discharged is extremely offensive, but not in all cases.]

Cancer of the womb is not common to young women, and rarely appears before the middle period of life. Some practitioners have explained this fact, by stating, that the womb is higher in these who have not had children, than in mothers, and therefore less liable to injury; but this is not correct, for the organ is equally low in those who lead an abandoned life.

Convulsions and the various grades of hysteria often affect the latter, and are ascribed by them, "to be cured of their mercury." M. Cullerier determined to put an end to these disorders in the Bicêtre. He ordered two large butts of cold water to be placed in the ward, into one of which, he threatened to plunge the head of the first woman, who should "be cured of her mercury;" and in order to make a still deeper impression upon them, he placed round a small furnace, a number of irons of different sizes, with which he was to cauterize different parts of the body of all, who were seized with convulsions. This plan completely succeeded, as it had formerly done in the hands of Boerhaave. Another reason is assigned by M. Duchatelet, which appears to me to be rather questionable.

The rarity of hysterical affections appears to be surprising after a long detention, and consequently, an extensive privation of voluptuous enjoyment in women, who have been so long accustomed to it; but this is to be explained by the solitary vices, to which some of them have recourse, both in the hospital and in the prison; at least, that is, what is to be deduced from the information, which has been given to me, for they carefully conceal this vice. This explanation appears to me, to be the more probable,

as those who return to a regular mode of life, and who are admitted into the convent of the Bon-Pasteur, are subject to nervous accidents, suffocations, and cerebral congestions, which appear, I am told, *to derange the intellectual functions*, and require a particular diet. This state continues during two years, and in the end completely disappears.

Mental alienation. Insanity.—It appears by the commitals of prostitutes in the Archives of the Police, that most of the decrepid of this class, shew weakness of intellect; and that the state of mind borders on alienation. This is rarely the case with young persons, though not a year passes, in which some are not sent to prison, solely from motives of commiseration; as they would otherwise, die from cold and hunger in the streets.

In confirmation of this statement, M. Esquirol attests that in five years, one hundred and five lunatic prostitutes were admitted under his care to the Salpètrière. The youngest of these was sixteen, the oldest sixty-two years. Two thirds of these, who lose their senses, do so during the period from twenty-five to forty years of age, having endured for some time, the hardships inseparable from their unhappy prostitution. It is worthy of remark, that this frequency of mental alienation, and impairments of mind have been observed in all ages.

Ordinary diseases.—The most common and fatal diseases of prostitutes, are inflammations of the lungs, stomach, bowels, fevers, hæmorrhages, and diseases of the uterus, wounds, contusions, and the effect of blows. Exposure to the vicissitudes of the weather, intemperance, excesses of various kinds and external local injuries, are the causes of these diseases.

It appears, that notwithstanding their excesses, and many causes of illness, the health of these women is better than that of the generality of women, who have children,

and who attend to their household duties; that amongst the common maladies which attack them equally with other persons, those maladies are not more serious to them than to the rest of the world; and that, in fact, they seem, according to general opinion, to really possess frames of iron, which allow them to brave excesses, that would speedily destroy other women. "Thus, the trade of prostitution," says the author, "does not, with the exception of syphilitic maladies, appear to be insalubrious."—"If I compare," he continues, "the condition of these women with that of work-women who are obliged to lead a sedentary life, and to emaciate themselves with labour, in order to supply their necessities, the latter appear to me more to be pitied than the others. The prostitutes are not liable, in fact, to those affections of the head and stomach, to those painful disorders of digestion, to cerebral congestions, and to all the various nervous maladies, which are so frequently observed amongst respectable work-women. If the latter class appears to be small,—(a decent class in this rank),—if its existence appears to be problematical to some persons, it is because the respectable females who compose it, conceal themselves, and must be sought for before they can be discovered. Is, then, an absolutely sedentary life more injurious to the health, than an active life, though the latter be one of disorder? What I have just said, would appear to justify an answer in the affirmative,—a sad consequence to which men who occupy themselves with the care of succouring their fellow-creatures should direct their best attention.

In order to appreciate fully the influence of prostitution on the health of women, it would be requisite that these unfortunates, once engaged in the trade, should never quit it, and that they should be observed, *en masse,* during a great number of years; but as prostitution is but an episode in the life of the majority of its followers, who are lost

sight of when they cease to exercise their vocation, it becomes impossible to procure any positive information on this subject.

Toleration of houses of prostitution.—As prostitution has ever existed, and will ever exist, in all countries, the French police regulations are intended in every way to diminish the nuisance caused by it, and to regulate the houses devoted to it. The regulations in France, are well calculated to repress crime, while those in this country, are most defective, and hence the frequent murders and robberies, in brothels, so often recorded in the public papers.

The police in Paris will not allow two proprietors in one house, having but one street entrance. They object to the closeness of the rivalry, which would produce riot. But one such house exists in Paris, and in that one the "elevated class of visitors," and the congenial dispositions of the two proprietors, tend to prevent the nuisance described. In all the houses, they require that each woman should have a room to herself. This regulation has proved a very excellent one. It has assisted much to preserve good order. No house is allowed a back or concealed door, and no direct communication between it and the neighbouring houses is allowed. Nor is any closet, or article of furniture, permitted in any of them, which is large enough to conceal a person in it. This prevents many fatal events. Free space and ventilation are also required in them, and cleanliness in clothing and bedding, with one bed for each woman, is especially directed. Before these things were enforced, the state of the haunts of prostitutes was dreadful to the contemplation. The mistresses are also compelled to supply the inmates, with every essential article for the toilet. These regulations may not have changed the predominant character which prostitution tends to create, and the *penchant* for uncleanliness, but yet it has, by enforcing a *habit,* which is contrary to that of debauchery,

effected a great change for the better. Moreover, medical men say, that this compulsory cleanliness has done much towards diminishing the ravages of syphilitic disorders in Paris.

Locality of brothels—the places in which they are not tolerated.—The houses are not allowed near sacred edifices of any creed, palaces, great public establishments, the residences of high functionaries, schools, and hotels. Napoleon, who felt a great horror of prostitution, caused all houses near the Tuilleries to be vacated.

As to schools and places of education, the distance of separation has not been fixed. The points of consideration, in this particular, are, whether the children are very young, or from ten to fifteen years of age, or reside there, or simply come for instruction; or the school-rooms are on the ground-floor, or in front, or in the rear of the house which is to be tolerated; or whether the bend of the street conceals the view of the school-establishment from the house. The commissaires d'employés decide on all these points. The *kind* of house to be tolerated is also considered. "All the evils to be prevented, and the good to be done, is left to the sagacity and good intention of the chiefs and their subordinates." In general, fifty or sixty paces distant, are directed. "Would it be possible to carry vigilance and precaution farther?" Great praise is, in fact, due to these functionaries, for their care of the public welfare in all these respects. The prevention of these houses near furnished hotels is regulated; first, because foreigners, who do not well know the locality, will often mistake the door of an improper house for that of the hotel, if they be near to each other. Complaints are constantly being made of this, and the more strongly in proportion as the hotel has been more respectable. Foreigners, with families, have been known to quit a hotel the moment they discovered, the character of their neigh-

bours, and thus some hotels have been entirely ruined. The bad houses are not "tolerated," near more respectable houses, because very often, the frequenters of the latter have, in a state of intoxication, entered the well furnished house, and there conducted themselves very ill. Others, in the middle of the night, have mistaken the bad house for the good one.

Landlords of brothels.—The police will not tolerate any house for the purpose of a brothel, without receiving the written consents of the proprietor and principal tenant, whether a lease exists or not; as no one will occupy such house for years afterwards.

Localities and streets.—In streets which are narrow, little frequented, and not generally considered proper for the *maisons tolerées*, they are not allowed. In thinly populated streets, passers-by are liable to be insulted and plundered by the bullies, when the police are not at hand. In streets or courts which end in a wall, or have no thoroughfare, and which no one would attempt to enter with a view of abridging his road, the police never refuse to tolerate them, when asked." The authorities, indeed, esteem themselves happy, when they are able to conceal in these spots, the haunts of vice, which cause them such embarrassment, and they would be glad if similar corners existed in all parts of the town." To prevent rivalry, hatred, collision, and riot, the police object to *maisons tolerées* being very near to, or opposite to, each other, especially where the girls show themselves at the doors.

Respecting the accumulation of these houses in certain parts of the city, there is a difference of opinion between the commissaries of police, and the administration. The former object to the accumulation; the other sees great advantage in it. It is disagreeable to the former to have to watch over a great number of such houses, and preserve order among them, and carry on conversations with the

refuse and filth of society. Therefore, their "reports" continually contain recommendations for a refusal of the toleration of many of them, where they are thick, even where the behaviour in the house is comparatively good. The commissaries wish the charge of these houses to be, by their more equal division in the city, more equally divided amongst the guardians of the public morals. Moreover, they say, that prostitution is more offensive to the eye when thus accumulated. The administration replies, that the population in that neighbourhood being accustomed to the presence of the houses, do not mind them; that the evil being concentrated, is more easily watched; that the establishment of many centres, by the distribution of the houses, would increase the vice; that succour, on occasion of accidents, is more easily rendered there, and a less number of police is necessary. Their proximity, moreover, to the barracks of the military should not be disturbed, because that locality is always the more orderly, through dread of military interference, and for this reason, Napoleon was wrong in removing the one to a distance from the other. It is true that the morality of the soldiers may thus be somewhat affected, but the military posts (say the authorities) are organised for the benefit of the town, not for the advantage of the soldiers.

There is not a street, however filthy and disgusting it may be, or however badly it may be inhabited, in which the establishment of a public place of prostitution does not excite reclamations and protests on the part of all the tenants and landlords of the houses, who, when they cannot obtain the ear of the police, will even carry their addresses to the throne. "I have seen a letter addressed to the Duchess of Angouleme on the subject, from one coalition of these parties, and forwarded by the Duchess to M. Delaveau. The answers of the administration to these expressions of grievances, and opposition may be easily guessed.

'Prostitution,' say they, 'is inherent in society, and cannot be destroyed. If an establishment of prostitutes be driven from any particular spot, it will, of necessity, locate itself elsewhere. In this new place of residence, it will excite complaints not less just than those which arose in the first locality; and were these listened to again, no such house could be established anywhere. All we can do,' they add, 'is to repress disorder in them.'"

Disturbances in brothels.—The disorders and disturbances in these houses, are thus described by the author from whose work I have so freely quoted.—

Disorders are rare, and only occur in the lowest houses. They are not of daily occurrence, but happen periodically: thus, on a Saturday (pay-day among their frequenters), scenes of disorder are the consequence of drunkenness, from refusals to pay; and sometimes bullies then seek for opportunities of quarrelling. Cries of "thieves!" "murder!" and "assassin!" are heard there; but always uttered by the women, who are assaulted by men stronger than themselves, and by whom they are badly treated. It often happens that individuals, who have been infected in a particular house, return in a fury, and horribly maltreat the mistress and her women. Soldiers are, at all times, the terror of the *dames des maisons*, and generally are the cause of many of the disorders which occur in them. But disorders there are really rare, and all of them occurred in furnished lodgings, and in lodgings of isolated women. Formerly, however, there were many murders committed there, and their frequenters constantly wore swords by their sides to be ready for defence. "A worse state of things it is difficult to conceive. Persons, therefore, accuse the administration of bad arrangements and immorality in their toleration of prostitutes. As for me, I everywhere behold the happy results of its tutelary restraints. I admire the benefits for which we are indebted to it. I have already

signalized some, and there are many others of still greater importance. This police, so much decried by those who do not know the good that it effects, is sometimes greatly embarrassed as to granting the toleration which is asked for some houses. For instance, certain cut-throat places, seem to be chosen in preference by the *mauvais sujets,* and the more abject of the prostitutes. Around these places, the wine shops, tobacco shops, and estaminets, swarm, which only prosper by the expenditure which this unclean population makes there. In vain, has every means been employed to purify these streets, and drive away the women. The measures only injure the principal and more decent tenants, and serve to convince the author that these spots cannot be disinfected." In such a case, when liberty is asked to establish a *maison tolerée,* the police hasten to grant it, without paying attention to the schools of boys or girls which may be near it. Sometimes, persons of the worst characters ask for this authorization. Did they petition for it, for any other locality, it would be refused; but in the case in question, it is immediately granted. In concentrating at this house all the bad characters, great facility of watching its frequenters is obtained. The keeper of the house himself, in fact, becomes, in some instances, an agent of police, by the *surveillance* which he exercises over its inmates, and from the fear of seeing his house shut up, does more himself, than a great number of inspectors could do.

Cigar, and coffee shops, houses of accommodation, maisons de passe.—A vast number of houses in Paris fall under this denomination; but some are devoted exclusively to letting out, for short periods,—chambers, more or less sumptuously furnished, and in the latter at least two prostitutes are mostly inhabitants; but there would be none if the police did not require it. They are chiefly resorted to by women, who have no homes but at night, and these

little better than mere holes, to which they bring men whom they have picked up in the streets, and in the various places which they perambulate. The majority of the prostitutes possess so much more liberty under this condition than under the *dames des maisons*, that they prefer it to living in the tolerated houses; moreover, all that they gain belongs to them, and they receive only whom they like, whilst they can go anywhere. These houses, it is found, do much harm in this respect, that they offer "a convenient resource to the domestic servants of Paris, who, while on their errands, and attending, apparently, to the interests of their masters, know how to take half an hour for themselves of the time which is given to them, and at the same time preserve their reputation, which is so important to their interests." Workwomen, who have finished their day's employment, visit them in some sort of disguise, and married women are not afraid of visiting them; even men often bring there young girls whom they have decoyed by promises; indeed it is not rare to find little girls of twelve, thirteen, and fourteen years of age, who know these houses, and conduct to them, men whom they have found in public. Some of these houses are specially devoted to second-rate actresses from the theatres, who are so numerous in Paris. The police watch these houses as the most dangerous of all, and their directresses sometimes conceal themselves so effectually, that their neighbours cannot detect their persons. One of them, indeed, was so clever at this mystery, that her two sons-in-law, very honourable men, only learned after her death the impure source from whence proceeded the 50,000 francs that each of their wives brought them as a dowry, and the similar sums which they obtained at her decease.

Maisons a parties, assembly houses.—Some *dames des maisons*, not without education, good manners, and much capacity for intrigue, give breakfasts and dinners, where

monied debauchees assemble, to find the more agreeable of such prostitutes. These are dangerous women, whom the police cannot consider as prostitutes, although they exercise their trade. At these parties, often made up in the country and retired places, enormous sums are lost and won. Thieves are always in connexion with these women at the parties. Some of these houses are kept most expensively by women whom the police cannot get at, and preserve the appearance of the utmost modesty and respectability. "In these houses, are arranged, intrigues and rendezvous, and women who have been abandoned by their husbands are to be found, or other Messalinas come to share in orgies of the most phrenzied debauchery, and there, are discussed and sold, the means of procuring for a man the woman whom he may long after, but whom he cannot otherwise obtain." The police cannot easily control these houses, and searches in them generally lead to nothing.

He next considers the question—*Should abandoned women be banished from particular places?* M. Duchatelet thus expresses his conviction:—Experience has demonstrated that the evils of clandestine prostitution are such, that it would be most unwise to canton the prostitutes in particular localities, and thus rid other places of them. Moreover, who would at night, or even in open day, like to visit those streets? and what injury of character would no those persons sustain who were seen to come out from them, pursued by hootings such as used to assail those who issued from the streets, Grand, Petit, and Moyen-Hurleur, in which the police had once succeeded in locating the prostitutes of Paris? "Prostitution, as I have already repeatedly said, is like a torrent that cannot be stopped, but may, to a certain point, be directed, and always tends to find its level with the habits and wants of the population. There are places which repulse it; while others attract it. We may seek in vain to remove it from the

latter and drive it to the former; but an irresistible force will spoil all the measures of the most indefatigable *surveillance.* None, indeed, but the superficial, will engage in the vain attempt to wholly abolish this vice."

Suppression of immoral works.—In the course of the last century, before and during the revolution, from 1789 to 1793, the most obscene engravings were publicly sold, and kept in the improper houses. There were the most infamous caricatures of Louis XVI., Marie Antoinette, the clergy, and all persons whose interests and lives were to be sacrificed. Even the Divine Redeemer and his Virgin Mother were involved in this impious profanation. During the anarchy, these engravings were publicly exposed in the Palais Royale, and elsewhere, illustrating the grossest licentiousness that the human mind can imagine. But this vile immorality was partly suppressed by Napoleon, and was confined to the houses of prostitution, where the sale of books and engravings, became a source of fortune to the proprietors. These were kept in portfolios, and displayed in galleries, and large sums exacted for their inspection; and it is right to observe, that from authentic accounts, the sights and scenes witnessed, could never be effaced from the memory. The Emperor finally ordered all such productions found in improper houses, to be seized and destroyed, a copy of each being placed in the national library. M. Duchatelet saw the catalogue of this collection, as well as the books. He (M. Duchatelet) also asserts that few engravings of this kind are now published since 1830, as public indignation and the verdict of juries enforce prompt punishment. He mentions this fact with pleasure, as an answer to the detractors of the present period, and as a reply to those, "who extol the virtues of our fathers to the detriment of ourselves."

I agree with this experienced author to a certain extent only, that the publication of improper books and engravings

is comparatively small at present, compared to that of the revolution of 1789; but I still maintain, that it is yet extensive, and that many of these productions are imported into this country. (See succeeding chapter on Prostitution in London).

It is gratifying, however, to learn that the present police regulations of Paris compel the keeper of any house of prostitution, in which such productions are found, to close it up for ten, fifteen, or twenty days.

The Secretaries of the Societies for the Suppression of Vice, and Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, whose very valuable information I shall record hereafter, have assured me, that by far the greatest proportion of improper prints, books, &c., are imported from the continent, and especially from France, Germany, Italy, Holland, &c. They also state that such productions are used, in all the higher brothels in this metropolis. They are also totally at variance with M. Duchatelet, when depicting vice in London, which, according to them, far exceeds his account; though Paris is awarded far greater depravity, at least in this country.

Failure of legislation against prostitution.—M. Duchatelet gives an account of all the laws of France prohibitive of prostitution, and clearly shows that these have invariably failed. Indeed, this has been the result in all countries; so that the class of society under consideration was, and must be tolerated.

In common with the abolition of all the laws of France in 1791, those relating to prostitution were included. The effect was an unbridled licence to depravity, and a scandal unexampled, as I have already noticed. The defence of the most vicious was, "*All were good citizens, and recommended themselves by their civic virtues.*" It was also contended, that the liberty of the subject was opposed to all laws repressive of prostitution. M. Duchatelet,

however, very properly arrives at a different conclusion, with which I fully agree. After the most mature consideration of all the arguments and statements in favour of the preceding opinion, he observes, "they are insufficient to prove that personal liberty is a right which prostitutes ought to enjoy, as they have abandoned the prerogatives of all other ranks of society." This is true to a certain extent; but still humanity dictates, that such persons must be protected by the laws, as well as all others. It would be very difficult to enact laws to deprive this class of persons of civic or social rights, or to allow them, as unfortunate human beings, to be maltreated or murdered; and no nation has ever attempted it, in ancient or modern times. Be it remembered, that our laws most wisely protect the most abandoned prostitute as well as the most virtuous woman. The violation of either would be equally punished.

In discussing this question, M. Duchatelet enters into minute particulars, and, among other things, makes valuable observations which equally apply to all countries, though certainly less to our own. Nevertheless, there are many enlightened individuals, who consider that all immoral persons and criminals, who have set the laws of society at utter defiance, have forfeited their claim to the rights of liberty of the subject; but this conclusion is contrary to the divine precepts of Christianity.

Prostitutes have at all times stood at their windows in Paris, and by signs, indecent attitudes, and invitations, attracted the attention of passengers. The penalty inflicted by the old French police law, was confinement, for a certain time, or being sent to the hospital. Towards the close of the Revolution of 1789, this practice was carried to an extent, of which the virtuous could form no idea. "Not only did the girls remain at the window in a state of complete nudity, but they attempted to imitate the acts of their calling, not only in the presence of passengers, but of all the

neighbours who lived opposite the windows." Mr. Talbot assured me, that such conduct was common in the house of Madame Aubrey, of which an account will be given in the succeeding chapter. This custom was suppressed by a peremptory order, that blinds of different kinds should be attached to the windows, but these were often removed. This evil has, however, led to the happy result, that few respectable women will now sit at a window, looking into the public street, or gaze at passengers in any large town or city; and no one does so at present, unless an innocent inexperienced, husband-hunting, flirtish, or intriguing person. Virtuous girls and young married inexperienced women, do not, and cannot perhaps, perceive, any impropriety in sitting at windows to be gazed on, and flirted with, by every scamp and roué who may pass by; but such conduct, though often perfectly innocent, is only characteristic in large cities of women of abandoned character. No respectable lady is ever seen sitting in the front of the mansions in any of the fashionable or respectable squares or streets, in this or any other metropolis; because no sensible woman would sanction street admiration or impertinence. I am aware, that the custom which is deemed improper in this, and other large capitals, is not rare in some of our provincial towns and cities; but I must still contend, that it is repulsive to proper female taste and judgment. I have known many instances of female ruin from window and street admiration. An innocent girl or virtuous woman, who attaches the slightest importance to either, knows little or nothing of the depravities of the world, or of the traps and snares laid for female destruction and ruin. Casual admiration is very agreeable, female dishonour truly horrible.

Imposibility of legislating on the subject.—It is a unanimous opinion, that it would be impossible to legislate upon prostitution publicly, as it would be a cause of

great scandal to the youth of both sexes, and a permament scource of debauchery and immorality. It would also be difficult to frame any laws for the suppression of this species of immorality, which could prevent the affected, from enjoying the ordinary rights of society. All legislators admit, that prostitution has ever been inherent in society; "it is, and ever will be like congenital diseases." History shows it has ever been condemned and punished, yet it still exists. It is also a fact, that the frightful diseases communicated by it, have not diminished the number of prostitutes, because man governed by his wants, and blinded by his passions, is more stupid and more imprudent than the brute.

Are prostitutes necessary?—"Prostitution exists, and will always exist in large cities, and elsewhere, because, like mendicity and play, it is a most profitable calling, and a resource against starvation; and it might be said, against dishonour; for what excess will an individual, deprived of all resource, not commit, whose existence is compromised —though this is the most base, it still exists. If notwithstanding laws, punishments, public contempt, even gross brutality, and frightful disease, the inevitable consequences of prostitution, prostitutes still exist, is not this an evident proof that they cannot be put down, and that they are unavoidable in society. Remove them from among mankind if you can, and all will become profligately licentious; or, as St. Augustin has well observed: "Aufer meretrices de rebus humanis, turbaveris omnia libidinibus; constitue matronarum loco, labe ac dedecore dehonestaveris,"—*De Ordine,* lib. ii. Ecclesia ac totius Christiani orbis catholici principes lupinaria permittunt, non quod illud peccatum approbent, sed ut adulteria, incestus atque alia luxuriæ crimina compescant; et ob evitandum promiscuam luxuriam in republica, fœdissimasque conjunctiones. Asserunt, simplicem concubinatum, jure naturali legitimum coitum

esse, ad differentiam adulterii, incestus, et coitus contra naturam, qui illegitimi complexus dicuntur; etiam jure naturæ, rectius enim dicerent simplicem concubinatum lege civili non puniri. D. Aug. scribit: "*tolle meritrices de mundo, et sodomia totus efficietur reprobus*" Ecclesia tolerat minus malum præsens, ob evitandum majus malum futurum. Sacra autem scriptura eas fœminas, quas sancti patres præter proprias uxores carnaliter cognovere, easque in contubernio veluti uxorum ancillas, retinebant, promiscue appellant uxores, vel concubinas: veras tamen uxores præcedenti nuptiarum solennitate conjunctas, nunquam concubinas nominavit. Unde de Agar dicitur per Saram ad Abraham, *ejice ancillam hanc, et filium ejus*; quam tamen prius dederat ipsa viro suo, uxorem. *Terrenam civitatem licitum fecisse scortorum usum.* Hinc Solon primus emptas meritrices juventuti comparavit, ut effusio illic libidinis impetu, quid turpius cogitare desisterent. Hoc fit, et tamen, nec lege civili nec canonica punitur, ergo licitum est.

Jus naturale dicitur instinctus quidam naturæ, qui nos ad aliquid proclives facit. Et hac ratione naturale jus est commune omnibus animantibus, ratione quidem prædites, et brutes. Unde Cicero, lib. i. Offic., inquit, *Commune omnium animantium est, conjunctionis appetitus procreandi causa, et cura quædam eorum quæ procreatæ sunt.*

Jus naturale ergo est, quod Deus omnia animalia docuit.

It is scarcely necessary to observe, that the dictates of nature are inviolable, and will ever influence man and all other animals.

The truth and force of these conclusions are, alas! too apparent in all communities where women are not allowed, or only a few are admitted; as in penal colonies, barracks, ships, prisons, modern workhouses, schools, colleges, &c. &c. It must be acknowledged by every one conversant with physiology, or the history of na-

ture, that all legislation which enforces such conditions, is contrary to nature, reason, and morality; and is productive of the most horrible crimes. It is opposed to the divine law, and more especially to the sacred doctrines of Christianity. It would not be tolerated even by heathens; and it is an open violation of the divine precepts so clearly propounded in the sacred volume, and even in the most profane writings. It is horrible to contemplate the consequences of compelling the most depraved men, in the prime of life, in perfect health, and too often of most vicious and wicked minds, to be congregated in prisons, barracks, ships, workhouses, and even chained together in penal settlements—wholly deprived of the other sex. Such a state of things is an indelible disgrace to all civilized and Christian nations. The laws which enforce it, are contrary to the laws of nature and reason, and tend to the subversion of all that is virtuous and good.

Our laws are often very contradictory and absurd. They award death for the commission of certain nameless crimes at home, while they absolutely render the perpetration of them inevitable abroad. Such is our legislative wisdom. It is therefore high time for our statesmen to remedy this monstrous evil. It was caused by the folly of a madman, and a profligate stupid government, in attempting to establish a colony of the goal polluted criminals of this country. Even the Parliamentary Committee on Transportation, already quoted, while advising a discontinuance of transportation to penal colonies, still suggests, that if the punishment be continued, all criminals should be sent to Norfolk Island, or elsewhere; and that this class alone, with its superintendants, should people the country. No one who peruses the preceding account of the immorality of Norfolk Island (see p. 17), but must shudder at the idea of the farther legalization of its abominable condition—a condition unequalled on the face of the earth.

As prostitution cannot be prevented in any country, would it be advisable to employ means to ward off its direful consequences? This is a question which I must decline to answer, and shall barely observe, that the preservative means proposed by empirics, in all countries, are inefficient and immoral. They have been most properly denounced by the Faculty of Medicine in France; though gravely and recently recommended by that in Belgium.

Lastly, is it advisable to have asylums for the reception of repentant prostitutes? There cannot be a second opinion as to the propriety. Such institutions exist in every civilized country. It is to be recollected, that their unfortunate inmates are members of the human family, and that they have erred like all their species; but, "to err is human, to forgive, divine." If these unfortunates have contributed to demoralize society, they have been most severely punished by an unfeeling, wicked, and depraved world; and if some few good Samaritans pour oil and wine into their bleeding wounds, they but imitate a Christian and humane example.

Let us now examine the state of prostitution in this country.

CHAPTER IV.

PROSTITUTION IN LONDON.

It is extremely difficult to give even a short outline of the history of prostitution and licentiousness in London, in consequence of the defective state of our laws relating to the subject; and it cannot approach in minuteness and accuracy, that of M. Duchatelet, recorded in the preceding chapter. It will appear, however, by the facts which I shall adduce, that the state of prostitution in Paris and London is proportionably the same, but I am strongly inclined to believe it is much worse in this metropolis. The materials which I am about to submit to the reader's notice, I have collected from the history of the Society for the Suppression of Vice; from the evidence given by its Secretary before a Parliamentary Committee in 1817; from its subsequent reports to 1838; from those of the Metropolitan Police, in 1837 and 1838; from those of the Society for the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, in 1836, 1837, 1838; from Mr. Talbot's, and from the Police Commissioners' Report before Parliament; from that for the Secretary of State for the Home Department, from 1837 to 1838.

So sensitive are the people and legislature of this country in favour of the liberty of the subject, that neither the magistracy nor police are allowed to enter improper, infamous, or disorderly houses, unless to suppress disturbances; but the authorities have no power whatever, under ordinary circumstances, to interfere with the inmates of these abodes of vice and crime. Neither can the police arrest

persons using obscene language in the streets, or for the exposure or sale of obscene prints,—crimes which can only be punished by the tedious and very expensive mode of criminal indictment—a chief cause of these vices.

Again, the metropolitan police has no power to interfere in the city of London, where an inefficient corporate police exists, but is confined to the new and much larger portion of the metropolis, called "the West-end of the town, and suburbs." I mention this fact, because prostitution is infinitely greater in proportion, in "the City," than in "the West-end;" and also, because the REPORTS OF THE METROPOLITAN POLICE, which I shall quote immediately, do not include the city of London. I wish the reader to know, that the city authorities and metropolitan police are totally distinct forces from each other; and that they differ most strangely in their estimate of prostitution;—the one stating there are 80,000 prostitutes, and the other under 7,000, in the whole metropolis. This, and similar discrepancies, will show how difficult it must be, to give anything like an accurate view of the present state of prostitution in this metropolis.

About the year 1793, the late Mr. Colquhoun, a magistrate of police, concluded, after tedious investigations, that there were 50,000 prostitutes in this metropolis. At that period the population was one million, and as it is now doubled, the number of abandoned women might perhaps be supposed to have doubled.

But one of the present commissioners of the metropolitan police has assured me, that no reliance could be placed on the accuracy of Mr. Colquhoun's estimate, and that even now, when the new police is much better organized, no certain results can be arrived at.

It is a historical fact, that soon after the French revolution of 1789, licentiousness spread throughout Europe, and was thus graphically described in this country, by the

late revered philanthropist, Mr. Wilberforce. He observes, in his preliminary observations to the REPORT OF THE SOCIETY FOR THE SUPPRESSION OF VICE:—

"From these, and other considerations, and when, from some peculiar circumstances of the times, publications, prints, &c. of the greatest obscenity had, in the year 1802, become more than commonly numerous, the Society for the Suppression of Vice was established as an auxiliary to the Proclamation Society, which had been formed for the purpose of giving effect to his late Majesty's (George III.) most gracious proclamation, then recently issued, against Vice and Immorality; the Proclamation Society itself having been grounded on the precedent of former similar institutions, which, as has been already stated, had not long before fallen into disuse. The main object of the Proclamation Society, as well as of the Society for the Suppression of Vice, was to carry into effect the laws for the protection of the religion and morals of the country. The Society for the Suppression of Vice was, for some time, greatly indebted to the Parent Institution for considerable donations; but by degrees the members of the Proclamation Society ceased to assemble, and the Institution itself became extinct, in consequence of its being, in a great measure, superseded by the more active operations of the Society for the Suppression of Vice. The Society is supported solely by annual subscriptions and donations, the amount of which is left to the discretion of the contributors. It may not, however, be improper to suggest, that the general Annual Subscription is a Guinea, though other sums of greater and less amount are received; and, in compliance with the wishes of many individuals, the names only of the members are printed, omitting the sums subscribed."

"The particular objects to which the attention of this Society is directed are as follow; viz.:—

"1. THE PREVENTION OF THE PROFANATION OF THE LORD'S DAY.

"2. BLASPHEMOUS PUBLICATIONS.

"3. OBSCENE BOOKS, PRINTS, &c.

"4. DISORDERLY HOUSES.

"5. FORTUNE TELLERS.

"1. *The profanation of the Lord's Day.*—It is unnecessary, and indeed scarcely possible, to point out how essentially the cause of religion and morality suffers, by the prevalence of such an offence. It is, in fact, the unanimous opinion of all our ablest moralists, that, on the decent and orderly, though not austere and pharisaical, observance of the Lord's Day, the preservation of the religion of the bulk of our people must depend. It ought ever, likewise, to be borne in mind, that the immediate and direct mischief arising from suffering the few offences of this kind, against which the Society proceeds, to pass unpunished, is by no means to be taken as a fair estimate of the total amount of evil, which would, ultimately, result from their impunity. From various, and many of these obvious causes, it is the tendency of such violations to increase. When one artificer or shopkeeper, less scrupulous than others, has for some time employed his men, or sold his goods, on the Lord's Day, others are too naturally led to follow his example; and even those that were at first restrained by religious principles, are too often induced by degrees to give up their scruples, when the loss of their trade, and the consequent ruin of their families, appear likely to be the consequence of adhering to them. The very extensive sale at present of Sunday newspapers, (the first solitary instance of which commenced about thirty years ago), proves the tendency to increase in similar cases; and we might also refer to the still more extended, and now almost universal prevalence, within the last fifty years, of travelling on Sunday, by stage-coaches, which

formerly used to stop during the whole of that day, or at least from the hour preceding the morning, till the conclusion of the afternoon service. But, independently, of the reverence due to religion, and however lightly some may be disposed to regard the sacred obligation of the Christian Sabbath; yet, if they were aware of the miseries that result from its being devoted to the purposes of trade, the common feelings of compassion, and even the obligations of justice, would lead them to discountenance such abuses. Frequently do complaints reach the Society from apprentices, workmen, and others, whom the inordinate avarice of their masters keeps at their occupation during the whole of that day, which, if not exclusively devoted to religious duties, is so necessary for relaxation and repose from toil. Master-tradesmen also, who are desirous of exemption from secular employment on this sacred day, often apply to the Society for its aid against their unprincipled neighbours; who, availing themselves of the shops of their competitors being closed, often succeed, by such means, in depriving them of their business and customers. This is the case particularly with butchers, fishmongers, poulterers, and greengrocers. Some of these people have declared with sorrow and shame, that for many years together, neither they nor their journeymen and apprentices have been able to attend public worship.

"2. *Blasphemous publications.*—This is another leading object of attention with the Society. But in the instance of this class of publications, it is careful not to lay itself open to the objection, that, from the manifest difficulty of drawing any precise line, it may obstruct the progress of truth, by preventing free discussion. It therefore directs its attention to works which, from the vulgar scurrility and coarse ribaldry in which they abound, render it manifest, that no one can have been led to publish them by a sincere, though misapplied, desire to promote the cause of

truth; and which prove, on the contrary, that their authors trust for the accomplishment of their object,—the rooting of religious principles out of the mind,—to the too sure expedient of extinguishing all reverence for sacred subjects, by accustoming it to regard them with levity, and polluting them by base and degrading associations.

"3. *Obscene books, prints, &c.*—Under this head is included every thing that may tend to inflame the mind, and corrupt the morals, of the rising generation. These are diligently sought out, and no efforts are spared to bring the venders of them to punishment. It is truly remarked by Dr. Paley, that, of all the crimes which call for legal animadversion, this is perhaps one of the least excusable, when the evils that result from it on the one hand, are compared with the motives which prompt to the commission of it on the other. Experience only could convey any adequate idea of the systematic manner in which this base traffic is conducted, or of its various forms and great extent: yet from its nature it courts concealment, and therefore it requires no little assiduity to discover the noxious wretches by whom it is carried on, and to suppress their pernicious practices. It cannot but call forth the indignation of every mind that is not utterly depraved, to learn what is stated in the evidence taken before the Police Committee of the House of Commons, that the dealers in this nefarious trade have endeavoured, but too successfully, to introduce their pestilent articles into the Seminaries of Education for boys, and even into boarding-schools for young ladies. The list of the prosecutions of this class of offenders, which the Society has instituted, and the success that has attended its exertions, would alone establish its title to the gratitude, and the liberal support of all the friends of public morals; —of all, more especially, who wish to preserve from contamination the purity and decency of the rising generation.

"4. *Disorderly houses.*—The Society is not only active in suppressing these, when competent and proper evidence can be obtained for that purpose; but is frequently the organ of important communications respecting them, to the Police, and parochial authorities, to which the enforcement of the laws against such nuisances more immediately belongs.

"5. *Fortune-tellers, &c.*—This may appear to be too trifling to be made a distinct head of attention; but the public in general are not aware of the various and extensive evils commonly arising from this system of imposture. The police reports, and the annals of the Society, serve amply to prove, that these practitioners, after reducing their credulous dupes (most commonly servant girls, and others of the labouring classes,) to complete destitution, even to the disposal of their wearing-apparel, proceed to incite them to the robbery of their employers. They are often resorted to also as the profligate agents of the seducer, to whom the deluded victim is led by preconcerted events, so managed as to assume the appearance of that fatality, which completes the delusion, by seeming to verify the prediction.* To the thinking and considerate, it will so readily occur, to what other numerous ill-consequences this offence may be instrumental, that to enlarge on the subject is unnecessary, farther than to observe, that it has an inevitable tendency to draw its infatuated votaries from that line of good conduct, and that exercise of common sense, on which the happiness and prosperity of their future days must, under divine providence, chiefly depend.

"Such is the outline of the nature and principal objects of the Society for the Suppression of Vice; but in justice to the Institution, it should be stated, that in those particular cases, where the desired end can be accomplished by

* See Powell's trial, published by the Society.

admonition and warning, the Society uniformly seeks to effect its purpose by prevention, rather than by punishment.

" It is not a little creditable to our Institution, and more especially it may be adduced as a proof, that the Society is always justly on its guard against being carried away by any intemperate degree of zeal;—that it has scarcely ever failed in any of its prosecutions;—and that it has, from time to time, been honoured with public expressions of approbation from those who, from the period of its formation, have occupied the highest seat of justice.

" A detail of the Society's proceedings will be found in the Minutes of the Examination of its Secretary, in July 1817, before the Police Committee of the House of Commons, printed by the Society for general use, in the subjoined Appendix. From that period, the transactions of the Society are stated in the occasional Reports of its proceedings; which may be had on application to the Secretary, at No. 57, Lincoln's Inn Fields: an extract from both of these will also be found in the Appendix.

" With claims such as those which have been already stated, to the good-will and confidence of the public, the Society makes its appeal to the patriotism of the friends of religion and morality throughout their country. The expenses to be incurred in carrying on their proceedings, must necessarily be considerable. The Society is sorry to be under the necessity of stating, that its finances are generally in far too reduced a state to cope with the many cases, which are pressed upon its attention by the public; and therefore, with all the earnestness which is inspired by its solicitude for the morals of the rising generation, and by the deep interest it takes in the well-being of the community, it calls upon the affluent to contribute towards the replenishing of funds, which can be amply proved, by experience, to be exclusively employed in promoting the

virtue, and in preserving the social and domestic comfort of its fellow-citizens."

The Society proceeded prosperously until 1817, when its secretary was summoned before a parliamentary committee, and delivered the following evidence on the progress of licentiousness, which I give in substance.

The Society first entered upon its investigation into the state of the trade in obscene books, prints, &c., shortly after its institution in the year 1802; at which period, prosecutions for such offences being almost unknown, so little disguise and concealment were used by dealers of this class, that, with no great difficulty, important discoveries were soon made as to its nature and extent. It was early ascertained, from indubitable testimony, that several foreigners (having their head quarters in London,) of apparent respectability, and considerable property, were united together in partnership, for the principal and almost exclusive purpose, of carrying on an extensive traffic in obscene books, prints, drawings, toys, &c. The agents, by whom the partners in this house disseminated their merchandize, were about thirty in number, chiefly consisting of Italians, under the assumed character of itinerant hawkers, by whom they established a systematic trade throughout a great part of the United Kingdom. The names of the artists were also ascertained by whom the prints were designed and engraved. These itinerants, after being provided with a considerable stock, were accustomed to disperse themselves in parties of two, and sometimes would travel singly in different directions throughout the country; and when their stocks were exhausted, their confederates in London were accustomed to convey fresh supplies by the waggons. These itinerants, at stated intervals, would rendezvous at towns previously agreed upon, and concert their future plans of proceeding. The places which they principally visited were, Brighton, Maidstone, York, Man-

chester, and the counties of Norfolk and Suffolk. The same species of trade, and by similar means, was also carried on by others'; and it was ascertained, from the testimony of a frame-maker, as well as from other credible sources of information, that the principals and agents generally concerned therein, amounted in number to at least six hundred. From their own, and other incidental information, it was discovered that the principal vent for their commodities were schools, and chiefly those for females, into which they would contrive to introduce these articles by means of servants. Women were also employed as agents in this trade, who would gain admission into schools for females under the pretext of purchasing cast-off clothes from servants. It also appeared that opulent tradesmen, of fair reputations, were concerned in the same trade, who obtained large importations from the continent, in return for the works of native artists. Many of the keepers of ballad-stalls were also implicated in these transactions, and several booksellers were known to be in the habit of supplying country orders of the same kind. The foregoing description is as concise an outline as can well be given of the state of this trade at the time when the Society first entered upon the investigation of it; and its early records furnish ample and circumstantial particulars in proof of the general facts I have stated.

"Having obtained undoubted evidence of the practices before detailed, the Society immediately sent cautionary letters to almost all the schools for female education in and about the metropolis, and to the head-masters of all the different schools. They afterwards prosecuted two itinerant dealers to conviction, and have continued, up to the present time, to watch the trade with a vigilant eye, until, by successive prosecutions, they have reduced it to a state of comparative insignificance.

"The Society have carried on between thirty and forty prosecutions against these offenders, in all of which they have invariably succeeded; the Society being particularly careful not to enter upon any prosecution, in which there may seem to be the most distant probability of failure.

"The various prosecutions of the Society have apparently tended to the diminution of these offences.

"So much so as to render it now a matter of great difficulty to succeed in making purchases, which heretofore could be effected with comparative ease. A very common answer now returned to applications made for such articles is, that it is very difficult to procure them in consequence of the prosecutions of the Society for the Suppression of Vice; the very name of which proves of considerable efficacy in spreading dismay among the trade, and driving many, who before derived an entire subsistence from it, into other occupations.

"In consequence of the renewed intercourse with the continent, incidental to the restoration of peace, there has been a great influx into the country of the most obscene articles of every description, as may be inferred from the exhibition of indecent snuff-boxes in the shop windows of tobacconists. These circumstances having tended to a revival of this trade, the Society have had occasion, within the last twelvemonths, to resort to five prosecutions, which have greatly tended to the removal of that indecent display, by which the public eye has of late been to much offended.

"This description of goods was introduced into the kingdom from the continent also during the war to a very small extent comparatively, though the advantages of obstructed intercourse in this respect were in some degree counteracted by the great quantities manufactured at the prisons for prisoners of war.

"In proof of the extent of this evil, I beg leave to give in the following letter, received from the late Mr. Birtill, of Bristol, under date, Bristol, 6th December, 1808.

"'SIR,—The Bristol Society for the Suppression of Vice being about to dissolve, and the agents before employed having moved very heavily, I took my horse and rode to Stapleton prison, to inquire into the facts contained in your letter: inclosed are some of the drawings which I purchased, in what they call their market, without the least privacy on their part, or mine; they wished to obtrude on me a variety of devices, in bone and wood, of the most obscene kind, particularly those representing a crime which ought not to be named among Christians, which they termed "*the new fashion.*" I purchased a few, but they are too bulky for a letter; yet I will forward them if desired. Straw platt was tendered me by at least thirty of the prisoners, who carry it about with them.

"'This market is held before the door of the turnkey every day, between the hours of ten and twelve; and the space being small, I think it impossible for him not to be privy to the description of articles sold.

"'I have waited on the Mayor, who, in conjunction with a respectable magistrate for the county (Thomas Daniel, Esq.), has sent an official letter to the Duke of Portland, who is Lord High Steward of this City, enclosing proofs of this abominable practice, and requesting his interference with the proper officers, and that a total stop be put to it. Perhaps your very useful Society might, with the enclosed, still further this object; or, if we are applying to the wrong persons, advise us of the most efficient mode of acting.

"'The prison is a pleasant walk of three miles, and is the promenade for the youth of both sexes of this city in fine weather, as well as the resort of strangers; so that the mischief is incalculable.

"'Please to make my best acknowledgments for the humane attention of your Committee, while I feel sorry and ashamed that our citizens should have suffered an evil of such magnitude to lie at their doors unremoved for so long a time. I am, Sir,

"'Your very obliged servant,

"'JOHN BIRTILL.'

"Addressed,

"'George Prichard, Esq.,

"'31, Essex Street, Strand.'

"In consequence of the foregoing letter, the Society made representations to the Transport Board, and the then Duke of Portland, who caused instructions to be dispatched to the Agents for Prisoners of War at Bristol, and the result was the entire suppression of the evil. Similar communications were afterwards made to the Agents for Prisoners of War at Norman Cross, Dartmoor, Chatham, Yarmouth, Foxton, and Edinburgh.

"The present state of this trade appears to be on the decline. The Society has reason to think, from collateral evidence, that it is now reduced to a very low ebb, particularly in consequence of a very recent prosecution by the Society; but which it is intended to discontinue, in consequence of the parties having delivered up a considerable magazine of obscene books, upwards of twelve hundred obscene prints and drawings, and all the copper-plates in their possession, from which many of the prints were struck off. From indirect information received by the Society, and which there is every reasonable ground for believing, this was the great and almost only remaining source of supply to the inferior dealers throughout the kingdom.

"Prosecutions were rare before the establishment of the Society, because the offences were but little known by those who, from their province or situation in life, might naturally be supposed to be inimical to such practices;

for dealers and customers, being alike conscious of guilt, used every precaution against detection, and carried on the trade in concealment. When these offences were first brought to light by the Society, magistrates expressed their astonishment at the extent of the evil, of the great prevalence of which they before had no conception.

"It seems strange that the Society should come to the knowledge of offences so little known to the police; but this is easily accounted for; because it is one of those offences for the detection of which there are no rewards, and magistrates can only be supposed to have knowledge of such crimes as become the subjects of information before them. How duly magistrates have been impressed with the enormity of this offence when brought before them by the Society, may be inferred from the following recorded observation of a magistrate by whom one of these delinquents was tried; viz. 'That the mischief done to the community by such offences greatly exceeds that done by murder: for, in the latter case, the mischief has some bounds; but no bounds can be set to the pernicious consequences of a crime, which tends to the entire corruption of morals.'

"It is not to be understood that the society would recommend that the system of rewards should be extended to the detection of this species of offence, as it would tend to the introduction of great abuses by attracting the common informer. On the other hand, individuals are deterred from coming forward on the occasion, by personal timidity and the expenses attendant on prosecution. These difficulties become obviated by means of the Society, through whom the moral feelings of the country can, with irresistible power, be brought to bear upon this, as well as all other offences that are open and scandalous violations of the laws, passed for the preservatiou of public morals and decency.

"But it may be said that the Society itself cannot act

without employing a number of agents, whose practices are open to the same objections that attach to the common informer.

"The Society seldom employs more than one agent, whose office is not *to find out* offenders; but to ascertain the correctness of such information as is received from respectable individuals, and to qualify himself for giving evidence on the occasion. In using the means necessary for detection, he is strictly prohibited from using falsehood, or of alluring to sale by the offer of a price. The public is the usual source of that informatian on which the Society acts, as I could prove by the productien of those letters which usually give rise to their proceedings; but which cannot be brought forward without a breach of that confidence reposed in them by their correspondents, with respect to whom it is their custom to preserve strict secresy. The idea which has gone abroad, that the Society send among the public numbers of secret spies and informers, is utterly without foundation, and has originated in the misrepresentations of many of the public journals, the editors of which (from not understanding the true character of the Society, or the real nature of their proceedings) have too hastily admitted into their columns the misrepresentations of those evil-disposed persons, who are ever attempting to render the Society unpopular by disseminating the most unfounded calumnies. The Committee endeavour, by all the means in their power, to make the well-disposed members of society understand, that the Institution is to be considered as an instrument in their hands for putting in force the existing laws against the more open and daring violations of public decency. With this view the committee avail themselves of every opportunity of inviting all persons, duly impressed with the importance of such considerations, to communicate to the Society what they may

discover within the sphere of their observation. With private vice and folly, and such as extends not to the public the influence of its bad example, the Society have nothing to do, and never interfere; and being entirely dependent on public opinion for their existence and support, they must of necessity be particularly careful of maintaining it by the general propriety of their measures, as the loss of the public esteem would inevitably be productive of their downfal.

"The proceedings of the Society are generally controlled by individuals of the most respectable classes in society, both clergy and laity, as its printed Reports show.

"Prosecutions are usually instituted, sometimes at the Quarter Sessions, but mostly in the Court of King's Bench. Although suits in the latter court are much more expensive, yet they gain more publicity, and denunciations against offenders from a court of the highest jurisdiction in the kingdom, tend to infuse a greater degree of dread among persons prone to such offences.

"The Courts before whom these prosecutions have been brought, have generally approved of them; and the legality of the Society's associating for such purposes, has not been brought into question.

"The Court of King's Bench has been pleased on such occasions to declare its high approval of such prosecutions; and the Lord Chief Justice, in the trial of a man named Bertazzi, in adverting to some observations of counsel for the defence, insinuating that it was illegal for persons to associate for the objects pursued by the Society, and particularly for the prosecution of offenders, was pleased to say—'Something has been said about the persons who have formed themselves into this Society, having acted contrary to the law; it does not appear to me they have done so, by any thing they have done in prosecution of the purposes of the Society; but looking at this prose-

cution only, so far from seeing any thing which trenches upon law, I conceive they have done very properly in taking an interest in the morals and happiness of society, and in exerting themselves to prevent the contagion of these infamous publications. It appears to me they have deserved the thanks of all men, and I do not know of one rule of law upon which they have at all trenched.' And on the occasion of another prosecution, for the same offence, the same high authority was pleased to observe—'Whether these prosecutions will have the effect of suppressing this infamous practice I do not know; if they have not, I cannot tell what must be done to put an end to it.'

"It has been objected, that such things derive a publicity from prosecutions, the ill effects of which more than counterbalance their supposed advantages.

"Such certainly has been one of the objections urged against the Society's prosecutions; but that it has no foundation in fact, will appear from the following rule, always adopted in Court with respect to these proceedings, viz., that the indictments are never read openly in Court; but are, with the libel, handed up to the Bench and the Jury, so that not even the name of the libel escapes. That this is the case will appear from the observations of the Attorney-General upon one of the Society's prosecutions, viz. 'I cannot but congratulate the Society upon the very satisfactory result of their last prosecution, by which they have established, by the highest authority, that gentlemen of the first rank may not only, with perfect propriety, lend their assistance to the bringing offences to light, and offenders to punishment; but that, in so doing, they will be protected from any thing that might be injurious to their characters, or distressing to their feelings; and have also given a practical proof that prosecutions, which, from the manner in which they sometimes have been conducted, have been more injurious to the interests of morality than

the practices which they sought to suppress, may be brought under consideration before the most crowded audiences, in a manner not to offend the most chaste ear of female virtue, or in the smallest degree to promote the progress of vice. I hope I shall be excused for adding these observations upon an occurrence, which has given me much satisfaction.'

"What is the legal description of the offence under consideration? and is the law as it at present stands adequate to its reformation?

"It comes under the description of a libel, the printing and publishing of which is indictable at common law, as tending to a breach of the peace. According to the law of libel (as at present understood by magistrates) it certainly is by no means adequate to the suppression of such offences; for if an itinerant dealer is detected in the very act of selling obscene prints at a school, he cannot be apprehended without a warrant, which cannot be obtained until after a bill of indictment is presented and found against him by a grand jury, in order to which (a thing almost impossible) his name must be previously obtained. These difficulties enable itinerant dealers sometimes to escape with impunity, and to carry on their nefarious practices at other places. I do not see how this evil can be effectually put a stop to, unless constables and all other persons are enabled to seize such offenders without a warrant* (as in cases of treason and felony,) and to carry them before a justice of the peace, to be held to bail, or committed for want of sureties to take their trial at the ensuing Quarter Sessions or Assizes.

"The circumstance of these publications being intro-

* "This difficulty has since been happily obviated by a circular, declaratory of the law, from a late Minister of the Home Department; by which magistrates were instructed, that, for all acts committed by individuals, tending to a breach of the peace, they had a power of immediate commitment in default of bail.

duced into seminaries for female education rests upon undoubted evidence.

"The fact has been verified, by the evidence brought forward on such trials, and has been adverted to by the Court of King's Bench in pronouncing its judgment in the following terms in the King v. ——: 'We cannot hear without horror and disgust, the arts you have practised to render the wholesome seminaries of female education the scenes of pollution and vice. At the same time, what has passed upon this occasion, must strike all persons with horror and disgust; it has opened a scene which it will be well for those who have the tuition and care of youth, males as well as females, seriously to reflect upon, and in future to guard against with the most attentive caution.'

"Is there reason to suppose that the evil with respect to schools is now effectually remedied?

"Though it is probably much diminished, yet that it still continues to exist in a degree, appears from a report of what passed at Union Hall no longer ago than the month of September last, and which was as follows: viz., Union Hall—Infamous Case—'James Price was brought up by an inspector of hawkers' licences, charged with hawking goods from house to house not having a license. The inspector stated, that being at Richmond, on Wednesday last, he observed the defendant going about from house to house selling twine and snuff-boxes; he went up to him, and asked him for his license; the defendant produced one, which was out of date, and acknowledged he had no other. The defendant now pleaded great poverty, and said he was ignorant his license had expired, and the magistrate was about to discharge him; when, upon further investigation, it was discovered that many of the snuff-boxes had indecent and obscene engravings, and pictures upon them, some of them very highly finished; and, on being closely

interrogated by the worthy magistrate, in consequence of some information conveyed to him, the defendant was obliged to confess that he was in the habit of exposing these boxes to sale at Ladies' Boarding Schools, and of disposing of many of them to the young pupils. The magistrate animadverted in severe terms on the conduct of the defendant, and regretted that his power of punishing him extended no further than fining him ten pounds, which he did; and the defendant not being prepared to pay that sum, the magistrate committed him to the house of correction for three months, or until the fine was paid.'

"I do not think that any degree of vigilance that can be exercised by the heads of schools, can effectually guard against this evil, unless the law is rendered more effectual against such offenders, as suggested in my answer to a former question.*

"The Society disposes of the obscene articles which come into their possession, in the following manner.

"They are always destroyed in the presence of two members of the Committee, except a few specimens, which are preserved as evidence of the convictions, which have from time to time been obtained by the Society. These specimens are kept in a tin box, secured by three different locks; one of the keys of which is kept by the Treasurer, one by a member of the Committee, and one by the Secretary; so that the box can at no time be opened, but with the concurrence of these three persons.

"The Society has in all prosecuted eleven keepers of disorderly houses, up to this date, June, 1817, two of which were brothels, fifty-six persons concerned in illegal lotteries, little-goes, &c., and thirty-nine fortune tellers.

"These places are generally the resort of the daughters of petty tradesmen, of men and maid servants, in and out

* "See former Note; from which it appears, that this difficulty is now removed.

of place, of apprentices, and of shopmen, where they mix in association with people of abandoned characters, and with thieves and sharpers, who soon establish intimacies, which (independently as to maid-servants, of their tendency to prostitution) not unfrequently, it is probable, prove subservient to those robberies in private houses, which are so frequently heard of through the newspapers. The evils, therefore, intended to be remedied by the act, 25 Geo. II., cap. 36, unless it is amended, are likely to go on increasing, until they swell the immorality of the times to a fearful extent. The same observations equally apply to private theatres.

"The evils caused by fortune-tellers are very serious.

"They delude their votaries by foretelling lucky numbers, and thus aggravate the evils attendant on lotteries and illegal insurances. They promote improvident marriages among the lower classes, and are frequently the medium of effecting seduction and adultery. The Society twice convicted a man of the name of Powell, whose trial was printed; a copy of which, with the leave of the Committee, I will give in, and which, with his private papers and correspondence, supplies ample proof of the facts I have stated.

"The Society seems to have done very little respecting brothels: from what has this arisen, when there seems such abundant cause for its exertions in this respect?

"The regular way of removing these nuisances is by parishioners themselves; any two of whom, paying scot and bearing lot therein, can, by putting in force the provisions of the acts of the 25th Geo. 2, cap. 36, and the 28th Geo. 2, cap. 19, get the evil removed. In doing this, however, great difficulty arises; for before a person can be convicted of keeping a brothel, it must be proved to be such by a person who has visited the house, and thus rendered himself a partaker in the crime which is the sub-

ject of prosecution. From this it must appear evident, that the Society, which by its rules is precluded from the use of immoral testimony, can do little towards abating these nuisances. It is customary, therefore, in the indictment against the keeper of a brothel, to add a count charging the offender with keeping a disorderly house, the proof of which is much easier; so that if the prosecutor fails in proving the first offence, he may succeed in proving the second. The two houses which the Society succeeded in suppressing were both of the most infamous description; one of which, situate in Crispin Street, Spital Fields, appears to have been more particularly kept for the purpose of receiving and seducing female infants under fourteen years of age. This house having been effectually cleared of its infamous occupiers, by the exertions of the Society, afterwards became the residence of a respectable tradesman. The Society frequently receives accounts of notoriously bad houses, of which it is the medium of conveying information, either to the Minister of the parish, or to the Magistrates of the police office, within whose jurisdiction the house may be situate.

"The Society is of opinion, that further legal remedies would be beneficial with respect to this class of offenders.

"The Society, viewing the existence of brothels as an evil which it would be impracticable totally to prevent, conceive that the only attainable point to be aimed at is the mitigation of those nuisances. For this purpose, the Society conceives, that considerable benefits would result from bringing these houses more under the superintendance of the police; and in certain cases they are of opinion, that Magistrates should have a power of summary conviction. By some such means, these houses might be prevented from annoying the public, and be entirely suppressed whenever they become a nuisance to the neighbourhood. At the same time, the Society is by no means disposed, in their

earnest endeavours for the suppression of vice, to trench unnecessarily upon the liberties of the subject; and it is well aware of the backwardness and jealousy of the legislature in lodging discretionary powers in the hands of individuals, which have been and still may be abused to purposes of tyranny and oppression.

"Since the Secretary's last examination the Society has continued its exertions against the various classes of offenders comprehended within its plan of operations, as will appear from the following brief abstract of its proceedings:

"1. The Society has continued to direct, with little intermission, weekly inspections of the various districts throughout the metropolis and its environs, in the course of which it has been obliged to resort to numerous prosecutions for enforcing the decent observance of the Sabbath. Although, in the present inefficient state of the law and its penalties, a complete remedy cannot be applied to these abuses, yet the evil has, by incessant exertion, been considerably abated.

"2. The Society has in all instituted fourteen prosecutions against this class of offenders, commencing with Richard Carlile. Inasmuch as needy individuals are found through whom Carlile obstinately persists, though still under confinement for his offences, in carrying on this baneful and illegal traffic, yet he may be regarded as a solitary instance of pertinacious opposition to the laws of his country. That this is the case, has been clearly proved by the Society's inquiries at nearly thirty different shops in the metropolis and its environs, heretofore known to be addicted to these practices; when the answers uniformly returned were, in effect, that they dare not execute such orders, as it was almost impossible to escape detection and prosecution.

"3. Upwards of twenty dealers in obscene publications

have been prosecuted by the Society to conviction since the year 1817; and the prosecutions, which are at present in progress, have so alarmed the trade, as in a great measure to have put a stop to it for the present. Occasionally, however, as the fear of punishment subsides, these practices revive, of which the Society soon receives information, when a few seasonable examples again repress them for a time. But this is an evil which requires constant vigilance to keep in check, without which it would soon again resume the state in which the Society found it in the early stage of its establishment.

"For fuller particulars of the Society's proceedings, the reader is referred to its occasional Reports, which may be had gratis on application, during office hours, at the Society's chambers."

Mr. Prichard has kindly favoured me with the general summary of the Transactions of the Society, from its establishment in 1802 to August 1838, which is as follows:—

"The Reports of the Society's transactions, heretofore occasionally published for the information of its members and the public, being mostly out of print, it has become necessary, for the continuance of such information, to recapitulate the substance of those Reports, with the addition of what has taken place since the date of the last.

"For checking the trade in Licentious Publications, the Society, since its establishment, has, in all, instituted eighty prosecutions in the Court of King's Bench, at Assizes, and Quarter Sessions. Of these, nineteen were discontinued, on the parties pleading guilty, entering into recognizances for good behaviour for stated periods, and delivering up their remaining stocks on affidavit. Eight of those prosecuted escaped by absconding, and the remainder of those convicted were sentenced to imprisonment for two years, and shorter terms, according to the flagrancy of the respective cases, to which, in some in-

stances, punishments by fine and pillory were added. Of the foregoing, one man was convicted of selling an indecent publication to a pupil at a public college at no great distance from the metropolis. This prosecution was undertaken at the instance of the head master, who detected the transaction. From this public establishment, and its principals, the Society, in consequence, has since continued to derive pecuniary support. Another man, detected in carrying on this trade at the seat of one of the Universities, was, at the instance of the head of a college, prosecuted and convicted at the local Assizes, on which occasion the Society's expenses were paid by a vote of the senate. And in addition to those cases in which it has been necessary to proceed by indictment, the Society has in many instances, both in London and elsewhere, been the means of detecting and bringing to punishment, by summary proceedings, before the magistrates, men who have been found travelling about as hawkers with stocks of these infamous articles, disposing of them at the towns and other places through which they passed, and making it their particular business to attend at all the different fairs throughout the country. *The stocks seized at different times, or delivered up for destruction, conformably to terms of compromise,—consisting of books, copperplates, and prints, together with toys, and snuff-boxes, with abominable devices, have altogether amounted to many thousands.** It cannot be too often repeated, and that, for the purpose of exciting the continued watchfulness of

* Within the last three years the Society has been the means of arresting the circulation of no less than 279 Infidel and Blasphemous Publications, exclusive of a large quantity in sheets; 1,162 Obscene Books and Pamphlets; besides a large quantity in sheets, and 1,495 sheets of Obscene Songs; 10,493 Prints and Pictures, both English and Foreign, of the most infamous description, besides a great number of obscene Cards, Toys, and Snuff-boxes. And 16 Copper-plates have been melted down under the inspection of the Society.

the masters and mistresses of male and female boarding schools, that their establishments have been made the peculiar objects of the miscreants engaged in this detestable traffic, the agents employed for these vile purposes having been usually itinerant hawkers. Race-courses have frequently been the field of the Society's usefulness, and many delinquents have been prosecuted and convicted at Assizes and Quarter Sessions who were apprehended at those places of public resort, for offering for sale, and even throwing into carriages filled with ladies, the most obscene papers, under the denomination of sporting lists.

[This is now an act of vagrancy, by the 1 and 2 Vict. c. 38., and the parties may be summarily punished.]

"To check, and, if possible, to annihilate these dreadful evils, has been at all times the anxious desire and earnest endeavour of the Society. Much has been done with the small pecuniary means at its disposal; and, with adequate resources, they would not despair of affording a nearly complete protection to the community. But as prosecutions for such offences are attended with heavy expenses,* it must be evident that the Society is entirely dependent, for the extent and success of its efforts, upon the pecuniary support of the public, which it therefore urgently solicits. To stimulate the general zeal in behalf of this great cause, the committee think that they cannot do better than quote an eloquent and forcible passage from the lectures of that eminent prelate, the late Bishop Porteus, one of the Vice-Presidents and a zealous supporter of the Society, viz.:—

"'A bad example, though it operates fatally, operates comparatively within a small circumference. It extends only to those who are near enough to observe it, and fall

* In two late prosecutions, simultaneously undertaken the Society expended 325*l.* 2*s.* 8*d.*, and nearly two years elapsed before the sentence of the Court could be obtained.

within the reach of the poisonous infection that spreads around it; but the contagion of a licentious publication, especially if it be (as it too frequently is) in a popular and captivating shape, knows no bounds; it flies to the remotest corners of the earth,—it penetrates the obscure and retired habitations of simplicity and innocence,—it makes its way into the cottage of the peasant,—into the hut of the shepherd, and the shop of the mechanic; it falls into the hands of all ages, ranks, and conditions, but it is peculiarly fatal to the unsuspecting and unguarded minds of the youth of both sexes, and, to them, its breath is poison, and its touch is death.'—*Lectures, vol. ii. p.* 82.

"The attention of the Society has also been directed to the evils arising from the sale of blasphemous publications, for the prevention of which it has, from time to time, instituted fourteen prosecutions, in several of which, on the conviction of the parties, sentences of imprisonment followed for two years and for shorter terms, to which, in three cases, were added two fines of 500*l.* and one fine of 100*l.* The effect of these prosecutions was to close the principal mart for the sale of such works, and, on inquiry at thirty-three minor places of sale, promiscuously applied to, and known to have been engaged in the same trade, it was found that they had caused a discontinuance of the sale of these productions; the owners having refused to supply them, in consequence, as they alleged, of the Society's prosecutions. In particular the Society may instance the case of the Rotunda, in the Blackfriars Road, which so long, to the disgrace of the country, was allowed to remain the theatre of infidelity and blasphemy of the most revolting description, where the most sacred rites of our Christian worship were publicly caricatured and performed with every mark of mockery and derision. By the efforts of the Society, these impious exhibitions were wholly suppressed; and the principal actor in the dis-

graceful scenes that had taken place, was sentenced to two years' imprisonment, to pay a fine of 200*l.* and to enter into recognizances, himself in 500*l.* and two sureties in 250*l.* each, for his good behaviour for five years.

The Society has also, within the present year, established an additional claim to the support of the friends of religion and social order, as having been the first to rouse the public voice against the establishment, under legislative sanction, of the race-course known as the Hippodrome, at Notting Hill, within two miles of the end of Oxford-street. The deadly mischief likely to result from such an establishment in its effects upon the happiness and respectability of thousands in and near the metropolis, had already begun to be felt. Gaming and drunkenness, prostitution, and a contempt for the Sabbath, had occurred to an alarming extent, as concomitants of the *monthly* races that were held there. At considerable expense, the Society took the lead in preparing petitions to both Houses of Parliament, and taking other active steps for creating a strong public opposition on moral and religious grounds to this obnoxious measure, which, although successfully carried through the House of Commons, has subsequently been abandoned by its promoters.

"The Committee of Management of the Society deem it necessary to state, that its method of proceeding for preventing the profanation of the Sabbath is now changed, inasmuch as it is confined to cases in which parishes themselves may be desirous of resorting to the Society for aid and advice. The costs of such interference the parishes are required to pay, in order that the Society's funds may be exclusively applied to putting down the trade in licentious and blasphemous publications, such funds never having been fully adequate to the many occasions which, under these heads of offence, call for its utmost exertions. The Society's attempts for preserving

the Sabbath from violation have, in addition to moderating the evil for a time, had the good effect of reviving the laws against such offences, which, at the time of the Society's entering on such proceedings, were fast falling into desuetude. The number of the Society's summary prosecutions against this class of offenders, have amounted to upwards of two thousand, and, in numerous instances, they were undertaken at the request of magistrates and ministers of parishes.

"With claims such as these, which have been briefly stated, to the good-will and confidence of the public, the Society makes its appeal to the patriotism of the friends of religion and morality throughout the country. With comparatively trifling means, it has hitherto been enabled, under the Divine favor, to maintain a powerful check upon the evil practices of those whose trade it is to profit by the moral ruin of our youth, and the spread of depravity and vice, in their most unhallowed forms, throughout the land. But the expenses to be incurred in carrying on its proceedings are necessarily very considerable, and it is with regret the Society is under the necessity of stating that its finances have been so much reduced, that it is unable to cope with the many cases which are constantly pressed upon its attention, and even in those that have been undertaken, it has been found necessary, for some years past, to incur an expenditure considerably exceeding its income. It is, therefore, with all the earnestness which is inspired by deep solicitude for the morals of the rising generation, and by a zealous interest for the well being of the community, that the Society for the Suppression of Vice calls upon the affluent, and the public at large, to contribute towards the replenishing of funds, which can be amply proved to be exclusively employed in promoting the virtue, and preserving the social and domestic happiness of its fellow citizens.

"NOTE.—At a general meeting of the Society, specially convened for the consideration of the subject, it has been resolved, 'that the bye-law of the Society, requiring that its members shall consist exclusively of members of the established church, be repealed.' Notice is therefore publicly given, that all well-disposed persons desirous of promoting the objects of the Society, are now eligible to become members thereof."

A very wise and judicious resolution.

In addition to the preceding account, Mr. Prichard also informed me of many other particulars, which he stated in evidence before the Parliamentary Committee on the Metropolitan Police in 1838, though not published in their Report.

He informed me that there were at one time ninety, and now, September, 1838, twenty-nine house in London for the open sale of improper works. That the officers of the Society had caused the police to seize on large parcels of such works and prints, and to tell the owners they would receive them at a certain police office, for example, 12,000 were sent to Bow-street. That the native productions were far inferior to the foreign, in point of execution and obscenity, that both were bound up as prayer books, specimens of which he showed me,—that the Society was in possession of French, German, Dutch, and English engravings, packs of cards, figures, toys, snuff boxes, &c. to a considerable extent, and that such productions were used in almost all infamous houses in London—that these were generally sold at 2*l.* and upwards each, some much less,—that there were shops for the sale of bad books, &c., to corrupt the lower classes and trades-people, varying in price from sixpence to two shillings and sixpence, and that the youth of both sexes, who gazed at such productions in shop windows, were watched by wretches and trapanned for either a nameless purpose or prostitution,—that penny theatres were the

nurseries of young thieves and prostitutes, and lastly, that the public in general, knew little of the actual state of licentiousness, or of the many devices to promote it.

The next information which I obtained was, the reports of THE LONDON SOCIETY FOR THE PROTECTION OF YOUNG FEMALES AND PREVENTION OF JUVENILE PROSTITUTION, and from its zealous and indefatigable Secretary Mr. J. B. Talbot. This truly excellent Society is supported by the nobility, Lord Mayor, sheriffs, and aldermen of the city of London, and by distinguished clergymen and other humane individuals.*

I freely quote the reports of the Society as the best on the subject to which they relate; and shall then conclude by giving the substance of Mr. Talbot's replies to questions I submitted to him and other public functionaries, which will complete the history of vice in this metropolis.

The Society was instituted in May 1835, soon after the publication of a suitable address.

"The Committee cannot avoid referring to the present dreadfully immoral state of the British Metropolis. No one can pass through the streets of London, without being struck with the awfully depraved condition of a certain class of the youth of both sexes at this period. Nor is it too much to say, that in London crime has arrived at a frightful magnitude; nay, it is asserted, that nowhere does it exist to such an extent as in this highly favoured city. Schools for the instruction of youth, in every species

* *Patrons*—The Right Hon. Earl Mount Cashel, the Right Hon. Earl Chichester, the Right Hon. Lord Viscount Gage. *Vice-Patrons*—Sir Arthur de Capel Brooke, Bart., W. T. Copeland, Esq. Ald. & M.P., David Salomons, Esq., Rev. Thomas Dale, M.A., Rev. Arthur Pearson, M.A., Rev. J. Williams, M.A., Rev. E. Pemberton, M.A., Rev. Andrew Reed, D.D., Rev. Joseph Fletcher, D.D., Lieut. E. de Montmorency, R.N. *Directors*—Right Hon. Earl Dartmouth, Right Hon. Lord Arden, Right Hon. Lord Wharncliffe, Sir C. Eardley Smith, Bart., Rev. David Laing, M.A., Thomas Wilson, Esq., Lennard Currie, Esq., Charles de St. Len, Esq., J. H. Burge, Esq.

of theft and immorality, are here established. Here we discover, upon investigation, that juvenile delinquents are promoted and encouraged, by those who receive the greater share of the plunder, and who incite to further acts of depredation and robbery. It is the common practice with the inmates of these dens of iniquity, after the avocations of the day cease, to revel in intoxication and debauchery during the greater part of the night; and he who has proved himself the greatest adept in their unlawful pursuits, is elevated to the rank of monarch for the night, and adorned with all the mock honours of a King, as a reward for his superior attainments. Facilities for like transactions are multiplied, in no ordinary degree, by the establishment of illegal places of dramatic entertainment, and unlicenced dancing-rooms.

"A long catalogue of crimes peculiar to the metropolis might be enumerated: suffice it, after what has been stated, to direct the attention of the public to the abominable system of traffic carried on by the traders in Juvenile Prostitution. It has been proved that upwards of four hundred individuals procure a livelihood by trepanning females from eleven to fifteen years of age, for the purposes of Prostitution. Every art is practised, every scheme is devised to effect this object; and when an innocent child appears in the streets without a protector, she is insidiously watched by one of these merciless wretches and decoyed, under some plausible pretext, to an abode of infamy and degradation. No sooner is the unsuspecting helpless one, within their grasp, than, by a preconcerted measure, she becomes a victim to their inhuman designs. She is stripped of the apparel with which parental care, or friendly solicitude had clothed her, and then decked with the gaudy trappings of her shame, she is compelled to walk the streets; and in her turn, while producing to her master or mistress the wages of her prostitution, becomes the ensnarer of the youth of the other

sex. After this, it is useless to attempt to return to the paths of virtue and honour; for she is then watched with the greatest vigilance, and should she attempt to escape from the clutches of her seducers, she is threatened with instant punishment, and is often barbarously treated. Thus situate, she becomes reckless and careless of her future course. It rarely occurs that one so young escapes contamination; and it is a fact, that numbers of these youthful victims imbibe disease, within a week or two of their seduction. They are then sent to one of the hospitals under a fictitious name by their keepers, or unfeelingly turned into the streets to perish; and it is not an uncommon circumstance, that, within the short space of a few weeks, the bloom of health, of beauty, and of innocence, gives place to the sallow hue of disease, of despair, and of death.

"This fact will be appreciated when it is known that in three of the largest hospitals in London, within the last eight years, there have not been less than 2700 cases of disease arising from this cause, in children from eleven to sixteen years of age.

"Often has the parent of a fondly-cherished daughter had to deplore the untimely fate of his child. His hopes have been blasted,—the cup of parental joy dashed from his lips,—the once manly frame has become a complete wreck,—and his grey hairs have been pressed with sorrow to the grave.

"With regret it is stated, that the instances of Juvenile Prostitution are exceedingly numerous, and most of them take place in the manner just depicted. Not less than 80,000 Prostitutes exist in London,—a great proportion of whom are of tender age. It is computed that 8,000 die every year, and yet the number so far from being reduced, is rather on the increase—the market, as it were, being constantly supplied by those who are ever on the alert to

entrap the innocent and the unwary. Here then is an amount of human misery, arising from one source! Nature is thus outraged, and the noblest powers of our species debased to the level of the brute. Incalculable is the suffering thus inflicted upon these unfortunate creatures.—Incalculable is the mischief forced upon society, by the example here produced.

"Distressing as this statement must be to every virtuous mind, the evil does not rest here;—it is impossible to calculate what extent of suffering is communicated to the youthful profligate of the other sex, by the poison of disease thus thrown into the mass of the population! In addition, there is the immense injury sustained, in a moral point of view, by the example thus afforded to the rising generation. If the reports of the London Criminal Courts are carefully examined, it will be found, that, nearly two-thirds of those convicted of outraging the laws of their country, are connected with the keepers of brothels, who are the encouragers and promoters of theft and dissipation.

"The Committee cannot refrain from alluding to the circumstance of a 'Gaol Committee' of the House of Lords, sitting at the present time; and although they consider it necessary that the Prisons of the country should be regulated by the best and most salutary laws, and with an anxious desire to reduce the amount of crime; yet they apprehend that an inquiry into the causes which fill our gaols, and our workhouses, and increase the burdens of the people, would expose to view, in all its fearful aggravation, the evil which this Society seeks to remove.

"It is lamentable to observe, that scarcely a day passes without bringing to light, by means of the public papers, some new acts of seduction—of desertion; and how often has the humane mind bitterly reflected on the amount of life sacrificed either by disease or suicide.

What revolting scenes, too, do we witness! To be deaf to the obscene language vociferated, or to be insensible to the dreadful practices adopted by the most abandoned of these creatures, is impossible. Will parents attempt to deny, that their sons and daughters are not liable to the contaminating effect of the example, thus openly placed before them?—or that a high responsibility attaches itself to them to endeavour to eradicate this alarming evil?

"But where is the Society to snatch from the seducer's grasp his innocent victim? No friend near to council—no extended hand to rescue—no eye to pity. Let it be the work of this Society to stand in the breach, to protect the innocent, to punish the guilty, to bring to the full glare of public censure all the nefarious and hidden transactions practised by the traders in Prostitution, to establish a refuge to which the wanderer may be directed, and to employ every lawful means to break up the odious system now in existence.

"Oh! then, ye who have distinguished yourselves in the righteous cause of benevolence; who have not forgotten the doubly-chained swarthy sons of Africa; who have extended the right hand of help to those in distress in foreign climes; forget not the miseries of your own beloved fatherland. Think of the sufferings incident to a life of Prostitution;—the contaminating effects of such a direful plague on the morals of the community, and the vast amount of crime of which it is the prolific parent. Oh! think of these things, and let not the opportunity pass unheeded to stem the torrent,—to stop the lava, whose devastating flood has so long deluged the streets of London.

"Ye who are parents—who may be fondly anticipating days of unalloyed pleasure in the society of a loved daughter, pure as the dew-drop's sparkling gem,—think that the horrors of a life of Prostitution may be her's. Possibly, when for a moment beyond your watchful care, she may

be decoyed, seduced, and ruined by one of those wretches in human form, whose name and pursuits it will be the objects of this Society to endeavour to eradicate.

"You are then earnestly entreated, as you value the welfare of your own children, as you value the happiness and prosperity of your country, and as you regard the morality of posterity, to co-operate with this Society, which offers to every one a large field for the exercise of benevolence. In order to carry out its objects, it is intended to establish Branch Societies in the metropolitan parishes, for the purpose of co-operating with the Parent Institution; and when London no longer requires the *whole* exertions of the Society, its attention will be directed to other large towns of the British nation; or if its funds will enable it, it will not shrink from the task even in its infant state.

"One of the objects of this Society will be to procure an alteration in the existing laws, so that the evidence necessary to convict, may be more readily and easily obtained; and to provide a summary and severe method of punishment. This object once obtained, the labours of the Society will be comparatively easy; and its projectors doubt not that the blessing of God will crown its endeavours with success."

The services rendered to public morals in 1836 will be appreciated, after the perusal of the following document:—

"*Extract from the Report of the Committee presented to the Public Meeting, at the London Tavern, on Tuesday, May* 3, 1836, *Mr. Sheriff Salomons, in the unavoidable absence of the Right Honourable the Lord Mayor, M.P., in the Chair, at which several Resolutions were unanimously carried, founded on the leading Facts contained in the Report.*

"In directing the attention of the subscribers and the public to the proceedings of the Society for the past year,

the Committee desire to express their thankfulness for the support they have hitherto received, and for the amount of good they confidently believe to have been effected. Their sincere acknowledgments are also due to the Directors of the Magdalen, Penitentiary, Guardian, and Maritime Penitent Female Refuge Institutions, for the kind and benevolent assistance they have afforded to this Society.

"Although the metropolis too frequently presents scenes of open and undisguised vice, distressing to every moral and religious person, yet no picture is perhaps more revolting than the frightful increase of juvenile prostitution. Under the shadow of night, and even at mid-day, the streets are perambulated by unhappy children, decoyed from the paths of virtue, by miscreants, for the mere purpose of gain, and who, though the authors of their destruction, yet remain unpunished. That there are in London hundreds of persons who live by the ruin of female virtue is too generally known to need any confirmation; and that artifices, the most subtle, are employed to entrap children of a tender age, is equally notorious.

"The Committee have much satisfaction in observing, that they have been instrumental in causing the removal of several most notorious brothels, particularly one in Batty-street, Commercial Road, kept by a person of the name of Maxwell; and another in Dock-street, Commercial Road, kept by an individual named Catherine Keeley, who had occupied the house for about sixteen years. Some others in the neighbourhoods of Bedford-square (East), and the Mile-End Road, have likewise been removed. In all cases, the Committee have been very careful not to adopt any proceedings until a formal complaint of the houses in question had been laid before them, signed by at least twelve resident housekeepers of the vicinity in which the brothels were situated.

"The Committee in one instance of seduction, that of

a child about thirteen or fourteen years of age, deemed it proper to interfere, inasmuch as the friends of the female applied to them for protection ; and upon a full investigation before the Honourable Mr. Norton, at Lambeth-street Police Office, the individual was committed for the offence, but, upon trial, was acquitted. The child remained under the protection of the Society for several weeks, and was ultimately restored to her sisters, residing at Limehouse, who pledged themselves to provide for her.

" Since the commencent of the Society, a great number of instances of juvenile prostitution have been brought under the notice of the Committee. It would be impossible, in the limits of a Report to detail every case. They will, therefore, merely cite a list of the most prominent, selecting those which more particularly exemplify the necessity of their Institution. They are as follow:—

" Mary Anne Stevens, aged sixteen years, had been on the town two years; had an infant three months old; applied to the Society to be rescued from her present degraded life. After being under the protection of the Society for four weeks, an asylum was procured for both mother and child.

" Mary Anne Clark, aged fifteen, had been deserted by those whom she considered her parents, in the county of Hants; had travelled to London, been decoyed into a house of ill-fame, ruined, and compelled to walk the streets. Being dissatisfied with her course of life, she applied to the Society, who found it necessary to send her to St. Bartholomew's Hospital. After her discharge, an asylum was procured for her, which she left, and accepted a situation provided by the Society.

" Mary Anne Smith, a servant, seventeen years old, had left Mazemore, Gloucestershire, to take a situation in Blackfriars-road. After leaving that situation, and accepting another, she was seduced by her young master,

deserted, decoyed by a procuress, and compelled to walk the streets. Being disgusted with her evil course of life, she applied to the Soeiety for protection, and an asylum was procured for her.

" Sarah Reeves, aged eighteen, had been decoyed from Cavendish, in Suffolk, by a procuress, brought to London, and taken to a brothel; but, by a determined resistance, she escaped from the clutches of her betrayer, and applied on the same day to the Society for protection. She was placed, by order of the late Mr. Walker, the Lambeth-street magistrate, in the Mile-end workhouse. After a patient and laborious investigation to trace the parties who had been instrumental in bringing her to London, which failed, as she proved to be, by the testimony of the Rev. Edward Pemberton, rector of Beauchamp, St. Paul's, Suffolk, and other highly respectable individuals, a good, moral, and virtuous character, the Committee provided a situation for her in London. Having expressed a desire to return to the country, she was sent to her mother at Cavendish, where she arrived in safety; and as a token of the estimation in which the Rev. E. Pemberton held the Society, from his knowledge of the case of this girl, he has forwarded to the Committee a donation of 5*l*.

" Sarah Beaumont, aged fifteen, whose mother had been dead some years, and whose father had been living in indolence, partly supported by his daughter's prostitution. She was taken into custody by a policeman at the back of the London Hospital, associated with several others, most of them under fourteen years of age. She was brought before the magistrates at Lambeth-street. Upon her earnestly pleading to be rescued from her degraded life, and at the request of her friends and the magistrates, an asylum was procured for her. She was in the most dreadful state of destitution; and when the Committee visited the lodgings of the father, in Dunk-street,

Whitechapel, not an article of furniture was to be found, a bundle of shavings in each corner of the room serving for a bed, on which the wretched inmates slept.

" Maria Scoggins, aged fifteen, held a situation as stay-maker. On her way to her father's house in the evening, she was decoyed to a brothel kept by Rosetta Davis, alias Abrahams, ruined, and turned upon the streets. She was discovered by her father, who implored the protection of the Society, by whom she was placed in an asylum.

" Mary Anne Carter, aged eighteen, applied to the Society to save her from going upon the town a second time. She had abandoned her course of life, and had been earning a living by needle-work at the house of her brother and sister; but in consequence of her brother threatening to turn her into the streets, she entreated the aid of the Society. The Committee accordingly placed her in one of the metropolitan asylums.

" Elizabeth Tate, aged fifteen, had been seduced by a young man at Limehouse, and there appeared every probability, from the poverty of her parents and relatives, that she must have resorted to the streets for a livelihood, having no one to look to for protection and support. Under these circumstances, the Committee found her a place of refuge.

" Eliza Jennings, aged fifteen years, had been living as servant at a low brothel; but, by the interference of the Society, was induced to return to her parents.

" A servant, living with a highly-respectable gentleman in Aldgate, had an illegitimate child; this circumstance induced her master to dismiss her from his service. She was described by him as a good and industrious servant; but he intimated that it was impossible he could either keep her, or give her a character. There appeared, therefore, no prospect but a recourse to the streets for the support of

herself and child. Her case being laid before the Society, they obtained another situation for her.

" Eliza Partis, aged thirteen, restored to her friends.

" Martha Metcalf was sentenced to one month's imprisonment in Cold-bath Fields, and upon her discharge, was induced by the Society to return to her parents, residing in Salmon's-lane, Limehouse.

" Ann Knox, had been seduced and kept for three months at a brothel in Thomas-street, opposite Sadler's Wells. After being deserted by her seducer, she was detained for three weeks at the same brothel by the keeper, named Graves; but upon the interference of the Society, was restored to her friends.

" Anne Hooper, between sixteen and seventeen years old, had been taken to St. Bartholomew's Hospital; and upon her discharge, one of the nurses recommended her to the Society. The Committee, after clothing her, procured her a respectable place in the City-road.

" Anne Turner, aged eighteen, left her parents, and after enduring the most dreadful privations for some months, was taken before the magistrate at the Thames Police Office for a misdemeanor. By the interposition of the Society, she was restored to her friends at Ipswich.

" Anne Nightingale, a young married woman, with three children, who had been deserted by her husband for six years. After enduring the utmost misery, she was induced to become a prostitute; and having lived this degraded life for three months, applied to the Society, who provided her a lodging, procured her needle-work, and ultimately placed her in a respectable situation.

" Fanny Llewellyn was decoyed to the house of Mrs. Phillips, a notorious brothel-keeper; after remaining there three days, she was, through the interference of the Society, restored to her parents.

"These are some of the cases which have come under the consideration of the Committee, and as their details amply prove that the most abominable system is in active operation for entrapping and ruining young females, they very earnestly solicit attention to them.

"In addition to these, it is stated on undoubted authority that a girl fifteen years of age, seeing in a shop window a paper requiring hands to work at waistcoat making, applied to and was engaged by the mistress, who agreed to give her board and lodging in return for her services. After she had been there about a fortnight, the mistress introduced her to a house of ill fame, kept by herself, and thus effected her ruin.

"Another girl, fifteen years of age, on the death of her father, who died somewhat embarrassed, was actually sold by her step-mother to the keeper of one of these houses in the eastern part of London. A violent illness was very soon the consequence of the inhuman and barbarous treatment she received; and, on being sent to a hospital, through the kind assistance of the sister, obtained admission into a Magdalen Institution.

"Another case, even more revolting, was that of Mary Anne Dutton, who, at the age of twelve years, was taken from the workhouse by a woman, who pretended to want her as a servant. This abandoned female caused the ruin of the poor child, and made a disgraceful profit by her prostitution.

"That such instances of depravity and cruelty should remain unpunished, and that such a system should continue unrepressed, must surely be considered a reproach to the national character. What has been stated, however, will convey but an imperfect idea of the extent of these evils, and of these horrific practices.

"To detail the numerous artifices employed to draw unwary children of both sexes into this vortex of misery

would be impossible, they are so complicated and varied; the Committee will, therefore, only allude to the treatment experienced by these unfortunate creatures after having been trepanned. As soon as the female is decoyed to a brothel, she is no longer allowed to wear her own clothes, which become the prize of the keeper. She is then decked with a few paltry trappings, and sent into the streets, followed by a child hired for the purpose, or by the master or mistress. Failing to bring home nightly a certain number of the other sex, she is severely punished. She is not permitted to appropriate one penny to her own use. During the day, she is compelled to wander about the house a victim of unrestrained and wanton barbarity, and frequently destitute of the common necessaries of life, unless she is employed in her usual practices. This, then, is a part of the dreadful picture of a life of prostitution!

"It is surely one of the most important duties of civilized society to endeavour to suppress this increasing and destructive evil; but, according to the old adage, "What is everybody's business is nobody's business;" and, therefore, this duty which is incumbent on all, is performed by none. To undertake this neglected duty is the object of this society. It proposes—

"1st. To suppress those houses which encourage juvenile prostitution.

"2nd. To punish persons acting as procurers or procuresses.

"3rd. To afford protection to the unhappy sufferers.

"The first-named object is of primary importance, for it has been ascertained that full two-thirds of the unfortunate females in our streets are under twenty years of age. From this it is evident, that the general number of prostitutes would be greatly reduced by accomplishing the objects of this Society, and a vast amount of crime and misery prevented.

"Much good, it is anticipated, will be achieved by the efforts of this Society, which, without attempting to grapple with evils beyond its reach, by confining its attention and energies to the prevention of juvenile prostitution (an object which humanity and policy unite in recommending to our support and encouragement, as Christians, as citizens, as men), would suppress, or effectually control, practices at which our common nature shudders.

"The Committee exceedingly regret that their finances will not allow them to give a detailed Report of the Public Meeting, which was of a very interesting character. The Subscribers, it is hoped, will approve of this determination, and by their active co-operation and assistance, give increased efficiency to the labours of the Committee.

"It now merely remains for the Committee to state, that they have received in donations and subscriptions, 143*l.* 14*s.* 11*d.*; and that they have expended 127*l*, 3*s.* 11*d.* (which includes the expense of two public meetings, charges connected with the cases detailed, and advertising, printing, stationery, &c. &c.), leaving a balance of 16*l.* 11*s.* in the hands of the Sub-Treasurer.

"The Committee cannot conclude their Report without tendering their acknowledgments to the Right Hon. the Lord Mayor and Mr. Sheriff Salomons, for their valuable services at and previous to the public meeting, and for their continued countenance and proffered assistance."

"July 13, 1836,

"Society's Office, 92, Fenchurch-street."

"Ordinary observation must convince every individual who passes through the streets of London, that prostitution exists to an incalculable extent. However apparent the evil—however alarming its consequences—however injurious to the morality of the rising generation—there are very few persons prepared, from an accurate know-

ledge of its varied ramifications, to disclose to the public the amount of its consequent horrors, its miseries, its destitution, its degradation, and the numberless crimes of which it is the prolific source.

"It must be perfectly clear, that to attempt to establish the fact that there are 80,000 prostitutes within the bills of mortality (of which there is little doubt), would be a a task of extreme difficulty, and would yield no further advantrge to the community than to impart information it did not previously possess. The mere cognizance of the circumstance, the Committee apprehend, could only be productive of good, as it would furnish data upon which to found a legislative enactment. This, most certainly would be desirable; and it is hoped that the information will shortly be obtained. The Committee are glad to observe, that one of their Vice-Patrons has already given notice of a motion in the House of Commons for an inquiry into the state of the metropolis, in reference to juvenile crime; and they are convinced that, in this investigation, scenes of the most horrible depravity and criminality will be exposed—scenes which will make humanity shudder, the existence of which were not even thought of by the religious and moral portion of the public.

"The Committee seek not to harrow up the feelings by any highly wrought picture of the dreadful evils which this Society seeks to remove. They invite observation. They call upon every parent, every brother, sister, relative, or friend, to pass through the streets of the metropolis, and to form their own judgment on this subject. The Committee, from positive information, are enabled to state, that there are in London, exclusive of the city, and some other parts, at least 1,500 brothels, and this, they have reason to believe, is not more than half the number; most of these are either tenanted by, or used as houses of "ac-

commodation" for, females of tender age; and, in the saloons, may be seen every night, an incredible number of young women in this awful condition.

"Much of the prevalence of intoxication—many of the petty thefts and juvenile delinquencies, daily on the increase—much of the vice and consequent misery, which calls forth the benevolence of the public—may be traced to these hot-beds of pollution. A mere glance at the convictions in the London Criminal Courts will show that many of the proprietors of these dens of iniquity add, to their other nefarous pursuits, the trafic in stolen property.

"In these haunts and their neighbourhoods, the laws of morality and common decency are constantly violated and set at defiance; and it is to be lamented that while such open and undisguised depravity is allowed to exist, all the benefits of religious instruction, all the advantages of early education, all the efforts of the philanthropic and benevolent, become neutralized. The eyes and ears of the young are soon familiarized to scenes of vice, and while the means of its indulgence are so easily accessible, their participation in it is rendered more than probable.

"It is indeed a stigma upon a country calling itself Christian and moral—so pre-eminently distinguished for its noble and efficient institutions, and its plans for the inculcation of sound moral principles into the minds of the humbler classes from their earliest years, that the objects of our solicitude should, at a period of life when they are most susceptible of impressions from such scenes as have been described, be exposed to their contaminating influence; while the difficulties in removing the receptacles of drepravity and crime, are so insurmountable, from a defective state of the law, that this can only be effectuated by Bodies associated for that express object.

"The immediate suppression of all such resorts would be almost impracticable; but to abate them is surely the duty

of the public, the administrators of the law, the ministers of religion, the teachers of the young, the officers of parishes, and of the fathers and heads of families. This Society therefore calls upon them for their co-operation, that, with promptitude and decision, all such lawful means may be employed as are available; but as the laws are confessedly defective on this subject, it is imperative on all persons to unite in petitioning the legislature for such an amendment of the law, as shall afford effectual means of abating this dreadful evil.

"The Committee are happily enabled to state that their honorary solicitor, T. Wontner, Esq. has received instructions to proceed against ten of the most notorious brothels in London; and that while they thus seek to root out brothels, and punish their keepers and procurers, they are also anxiously solicitous to protect the unfortunate victims of their baseness; and they will on no account suffer any to return to a life of degradation and wretchedness, while they possess the means for securing their return to honest employment. Since the establishment of this society, many have been rescued; and they trust, by the blessing of God on their efforts, others will be added to that number.

"The Committee feel assured that their efforts will be sustained by all the virtuous and the good. They trust the time is not far distant, when, by the united energies of all classes, this evil shall be effectually subdued; and this Society be hailed as the harbinger of a brighter day, in which such evils shall no longer impede the progressive happiness of the human family."—*October* 18, 1836.

"The Committee of the above Institution, feeling the deep importance of the objects they have in view, are desirous, as far as practicable, to increse the efficiency of their operations. Convinced of the necessity of suppressing those houses where juvenile prostitution is encouraged, of reducing the facilities for carrying forward this

atrocious practice, and, if possible, of preventing it altogether; they are also anxious that there should be established some appropriate refuge, to which, the children discovered in the houses occupied by the persons prosecuted, as well as those of tender age, who might casually apply to the Society for advice and protection, might be admitted. By these means, the Society, while it punished the guilty, would be enabled to shelter and rescue the victims of their sordid baseness, who, instead of being compelled to seek other haunts of vice, and the indulgence of criminal pursuits, might, under moral training, be restored to an industrious and virtuous course of employment.

"Nearly fifty unfortunate females have been either placed in the various asylums in the metropolis, or otherwise provided for. But while the Committee are thankful for the good they have, by these means effected, they are convinced their objects will be more fully carried out by the establishment of an asylum in immediate connexion with their Society, exclusively devoted to young females.

"When it is known that the existing asylums, with two exceptions, are *not available for the very young*, and in these two, females of *all ages* are admitted, the Committee believe that the necessity for such an Institution will be at once seen, where the restored children may be instructed in useful and religious knowledge, initiated in domestic duties, and, at the same time, be instrumental in producing funds towards their own maintenance and support.

"Nor is the class referred to, the only one that might be thus benefited. It is a well-known fact that numbers of young females who have been committed to prison for some trifling offence, at the expiration of the term of their imprisonment, are again turned loose upon society, in most cases having no parents or friends to whom they can apply. To such characters, *if truly desirous of becoming virtuous members of society*, the contemplated institution would

prove of incalculable service. There are others, again, who are totally neglected by their parents, and have no certain home; such are found progressing in various degrees of vice until they suffer the punishment due to their crimes, and are banished from their native land. To these such an asylum would become a preventive of future misery, and a medium of present good.

"As a considerable outlay will be required in the adoption of this plan, the Committee venture to suggest that an immediate subscription be entered into to raise the necessary sum for this object, and that such subscriptions be paid into the Bankers' hands, to the 'Asylum Fund,' from time to time, until the requisite amount be realized, when it will be at once applied to the purpose proposed.

"92, Fenchurch-street,

August, 1837."

The following is an extract of the Society's Report in 1837:—

"In consulting the history of the varied benevolent and philanthropic institutions with which the metropolis of the British Empire abounds, the hand of an overruling Providence is remarkably apparent. Some, which have burst forth with the brilliancy of the erratic comet, and dazzled the eye of the observer, have been quickly shrouded in darkness, rendering the surrounding gloom more thick and impenetrable; others, however, whose origin has been obscure, whose course has been more steady, and whose existence has been preserved and nourished by a few devoted friends, have pursued the even tenour of their way, unknowing and unknown, until they have at length gradually and silently effected the most magnificent results.

"The Committee believe that their Society will partake of the character last described, and anticipate the period when, by their exertions, combined with those of kindred

institutions, the giant evil which they seek to suppress shall be diminished, and the happiness of the human family enhanced.

"The Committee, in presenting their second report, indulge the hope, therefore, that the day of small beginnings will not be despised, when it is known that some of the most effective, extensive, and beneficial institutions have commenced under circumstances equally discouraging and unfavourable.

"The Committee will now detail the result of their operations during the past year, requesting the Subscribers' attention to the effect produced, as compared with the means afforded for carrying out their designs.

"The Committee feel a peculiar gratification from the fact, that, although at their last annual meeting, they appeared before the subscribers under some disadvantage, they are now entitled to number among their friends, noblemen of distinguished rank and virtue—members of parliament—clergymen of the Church of England—the High Priest of the Jews, and eminent members of that community—ministers of different denominations, and many gentlemen of worth and piety.

"The Committee also have a pleasure in stating, that T. Wontner, Esq., with much liberality, at the commencement of the year, kindly tendered his services as Honorary Solicitor, which were accepted; and that J. G. Sparke, Esq., of Finsbury Square, has consented to officiate as Honorary Consulting Surgeon.

"In reference to the first object contemplated by the Society, viz.:—to suppress those houses that encourage Juvenile Prostitution, the Committee submit the following list of parties who have been prosecuted by them.

"Leah Davis, an elderly female, the mother of thirteen daughters, all, either prostitutes, or brothel-keepers in various parts of London, was indicted at Clerkenwell Ses-

sion, and a true bill found against her by the grand jury. She absconded, and a bench warrant was immediately issued for her apprehension, although she has hitherto evaded its execution. The Committee are enabled to state, that her establishment in Cannon Place, Mile End, has been broken up; some of the girls restored to their friends, or placed in asylums; and that she herself has been, ever since, wandering about, without any settled place of residence, the warrant being still in force, deserted by those who were her former friends, and despised by every individual. As she had kept houses of this description nearly her whole life, many young girls, it is feared, had, by her means, been ruined.

"An indictment was also preferred against John Jacobs, who, with his wife, had been the keepers of brothels of the worst description, in different districts, for twenty-five years. The Committee lament to state that there can be no doubt, during that period, that a great number of young girls had been sacrificed by these mercenary parties. At the time of the prosecution, and for a year or two previous, there were females in his house, kept by him, from the age of twelve years upwards, as prostitutes, and one as young as ten years, who was employed as a watch upon the others. A bill was speedily found against him; and having left his house in New Norfolk Street, after the lapse of about eight weeks, he was taken into custody, upon a bench warrant, the Committee having offered a reward of 5*l.* for his apprehension. During this period, the abominable course of life he had been following was given up, and one of the females was rescued by the Society. It was stated in evidence that this man had had as many as fourteen young girls in his house at one time. He was brought up for trial at Clerkenwell, when the charges were completely and satisfactorily proved against him, and he was sentenced to six months' imprisonment in the House

of Correction, with hard labour, to pay a fine of 20*l.* to the King, and to be kept in prison until the fine be paid.

"The next prosecution was against David Romayne, aged twenty-seven, who had been the keeper of a disorderly house for seven years. This establishment was of the most despicable character. Three girls, of about fifteen years of age, were discovered there, living in the most abject degradation and misery, upon whom this family had been subsisting. The Committee are sure that they will be pardoned by the Subscribers for detailing the horrid practice adopted by this man. One of the three females, on a Sabbath evening, was stationed in the public street, to allure into this house the youths of the other sex who presented themselves; when a sufficient number were collected together, so as to make their united payments considerable, they were admitted to the scene of depravity which the establishment unfolded, and to which the other two females principally contributed. This practice has been repeatedly witnessed by the police, who have seen as many as twelve boys there congregated in the manner described. There is too much reason to fear, that the consequences to these youths have been fatally destructive. Upon a true bill being found against him, this man discharged the females, and decamped. A warrant was immediately procured, but he has hitherto evaded its execution. The Committee have offered a reward of 5*l.* for his apprehension, but without avail. They have, however, the satisfaction to state that they believe the wife is gaining a living and supporting her children by needlework, and that, having abandoned his former course of life, he is following his trade as a travelling confectioner in some part of the country.

"The attention of the Committee had been drawn to the case of a man named Ormond, of Lancaster Street, Burton Crescent, and an indictment was preferred against

him. The fact appeared to be quite clear that he had been for years, and was then, living upon the prostitution of his own daughters. Although there was no doubt as to the main points, the Committee regret to say that the grand jury threw out the bill, and this man escaped punishment. This circumstance was the more to be regretted, as Lancaster Street is inhabited by a great number of persons who live upon the wages of prostitution, and who, in all probability, if a conviction had been obtained in this case, would have been compelled to remove, and perhaps have abandoned that course of life altogether.

"Mary Davis, aged twenty-five, of Dorset Street, Stepney, the Committee deemed a proper object against whom a prosecution should issue, and she was accordingly indicted, but not appearing to the indictment, a warrant was granted for her apprehension. Upon this, she immediately gave up the house, discharged her three girls, and surrendered. She was brought up for trial, and pleaded guilty, and was bound over in her own recognizance of 80*l.*, with two responsible sureties for 40*l.* each, to appear when called up for judgment. It was stated that this had been a notorious house for the encouragement of young females, and that two, within a few months, from the bad treatment of Davis, had actually drowned themselves.

"Other parties are marked down for prosecution, but the Committee will not prejudge their cases, merely observing that they are of the most flagrant character.

"In consequence of these prosecutions, the effect produced in their neighbourhood has been most salutary: Some notorious keepers have given up their houses, and fled; others have abandoned the pernicious practices of which they have been the perpetrators; while not a few are preparing to remove. Indeed, a panic seems to have obtained generally among them, and it would be impos-

sible to calculate the immense amount of good that may be effected by the measures which have been already adopted.

"In this part of their labours the Committee have been materially assisted by a return from an official quarter of nearly 1,500 brothels, in various parts of the metropolis, exclusive of the City, where also, it is well known, they greatly abound, with the names of their keepers, &c. They are indebted to their Honorary Solicitor, T. Wontner, Esq., for the care and attention he has bestowed upon these cases, as also to those counsel who have so benevolently and gratuitously undertaken to plead on their behalf.

"The Committee will now briefly advert to the second object they have in view, viz., to punish procurers and procuresses. In this department, no opportunity has arisen to try the effect of an indictment. Several cases have, however, occurred to prove the fact, that persons are employed to decoy children for the purposes of prostitution. The Committee will mention one that came under their immediate cognizance:—A young girl, aged fourteen, had been decoyed by a woman to a brothel. She had not been long in the house, before she became completely disgusted with that mode of life, and endeavoured to escape. Some disturbance arose in consequence of this effort, and the police interfered, when the girl and the woman were brought before a magistrate. The facts were clearly proved against the woman; but she was discharged, with a reprimand, in consequence of the magistrate not having power to punish, it appearing that the little girl was persuaded to accompany the woman of her own accord, and without force being employed. A few days after this circumstance, she again applied to this Society, and was placed in Bartholomew's Hospital: she

has since recovered, and is now reconciled with her friends.

" Several other cases of a like character have occurred during the past year.

" The Committee, on this part of their Report, are happily enabled to state that measures have been taken, by which it is anticipated an important alteration will be made in the law, and they trust that in their next Report they shall have the high gratification of submitting the details to their friends and subscribers.

" The third object of the Society has engaged the especial attention of the Committee. To protect the unhappy sufferers has been an unceasing anxiety to them, and they believe they have been instrumental to this end. It would extend their Report to too great a length to detail every case; they will merely mention them in the aggregate. Assistance has been afforded to twenty females between the ages of eleven and nineteen years; there are now eight in the various asylums, three at service, seven reconciled to their friends, one married, and four placed in the hospitals; making a total of forty-three.

" In several instances, the Committee have also been enabled to give advice to parents and friends, who have applied to them, and whose daughters, by this means, have been prevented from entering on a life of prostitution.

" The Committee cannot avoid referring to the gratifying fact, that those females who have been placed at service have hitherto conducted themselves respectfully, and are now giving satisfaction to their employers by their prudent and consistent behaviour. In extreme cases, some above the age of twenty have been protected.

" During the year, the Committee issued a friendly invitation to the unfortunate objects of their solicitude, which invitation was extensively circulated, and a Com-

mittee was appointed to sit every Wednesday, from two to five o'clock, for the purpose of receiving applications, and every facility was afforded to those who might need the protection or assistance of the Society. In order that the design might be carried fully out, the Committee engaged a Probationary Asylum, in which the reformation of the applicants might be tested, and where they remained under proper discipline, until it was thought advisable to transfer them to other existing asylums. By the adoption of this plan, the funds of the Society have been materially preserved: unworthy objects have been quickly detected, and the really deserving have been sheltered, and restored to virtuous society.

"At the last Annual Meeting, it was recommended that the two Houses of Parliament should be petitioned by the various parishes for an alteration in the laws on the subject. Circumstances have, however, arisen which render that step, at present unnecessary; and the Committee hope, upon the renewal of the Metropolitan Police Bill, to be enabled to induce his Majesty's Ministers to append some clauses to this Act which shall render the operations of the Society less difficult and expensive. If this should not be the case, they think such an expression of public sentiment will be highly imperative and necessary.

"In conclusion, the Committee need not recur to any argument to prove the absolute necessity for a society like the present. Such, they believe, must be the universal impression, and they leave their cause in the hands of a discerning public. To a certain extent, they have been supported in their endeavours, and, as far as that support has been granted, they have used it for the general good, keeping invariably in view the impolicy of involving the Society in difficulty or debt, and rather choosing, although with reluctance, in numerous cases which they were conse-

quently compelled to reject, to limit their efforts to the amount of their income.

" The best acknowledgments of the Committee are due to the Rev. R. Saunders, for the first sermon preached on behalf of the Society; and to Captain Pilkington, for several admirable lectures delivered by him; as well as to those kind friends who have granted the use of their chapels and school-room on those occasions.

" The thanks of the Committee are also due to the Directors of the Bible Society for a grant of twenty-four Testaments, and to the Committee of the Religious Tract Society for a donation of Tracts, both for gratuitous distribution amongst those unfortunate objects who might apply to the Society for protection.

" The Committee confidently anticipate, that in proportion as their objects become known, they shall receive the sanction and support of the humane and patriotic. They earnestly appeal to the sympathies of a benevolent public in furtherance of their design; and in order that they may be enabled to counteract, in some measure, the dreadful effects of the evil, now so alarmingly prevalent throughout the metropolis, they solicit the aid of all who feel an interest in the welfare of society, the quietude of domestic life, and the interests of religion. Their resources are extremely limited, and they hope this appeal will not be made in vain."

The Report for May, 1838, also contains much valuable information, and detail of a prosecution which will be read with pleasure by every virtuous individual.

" After the lapse of another year, the Committee of the London Society for the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, are required to render to the subscribers an account of their Stewardship. While carrying forward the operations of the Society, they have had to encounter obstacles

of no ordinary character, arising from the almost universal apathy and indifference prevailing upon the subject, and, consequently, from the want of adequate funds, fully to achieve the contemplated objects. They have been met in their course by the sneers and contempt of the profane and immoral—the censures and condemnation of those who believe that licentiousness is necessary to the well-being of society—the supineness and negligence of the religious; but, amidst the buffetings of all, they have been enabled to persevere, supported by a consciousness of the importance of the objects they have in view, and by the sympathies and kindness of their subscribers.

"Upon looking back to the operations of the Society, during the short period of its existence, the Committee have ample reason to take courage and press forward. If they turn to the actual state and condition of the Metropolis in reference to the vice of Prostitution, they are compelled to acknowledge that great and mighty efforts are needed to check its progress; that the union of the moral and patriotic, the virtuous and humane, the religious and the good, must be full and complete, before an effectual barrier can be erected to stem the torrent of iniquity, to rescue the victims of unmanly stratagem, to throw a shield around the virtuous, and to protect the growing youth of the country from the contamination of evil example, and the influence of undisguised vice.

"Your Committee will not attempt to depict the character and extent of the evil they seek to suppress, but they may be allowed to say, that there never was, in the domestic history of London, a period when the utmost exertions of the moral and religious part of the community were more imperiously demanded than the present. They will not allude to the positive scenes of profligacy continually enacting within observation; but, for a moment, they are desirous of drawing attention to the shameless

efforts which are making to recruit actors for the drama. Scarcely a street can be passed through, without meeting some storehouse of obscenity. Agents are employed for the purpose of entrapping the unwary and innocent. The suburban villages, the bazaars, the parks, the theatres, furnish victims to this sin, and its consequent wickedness. Your Committee have authority for stating, that the keepers of brothels, and procurers, are frequently in the habit of obtaining females from the Workhouses and Penitentiaries;—indeed, the whole system upon which this vice is based, is one of deception, desertion, ruin, and death, unless the kind and benevolent aid of those who are interested in snatching the unfortunate from destruction interpose and save.

"Passing by other observations which might be adduced, your Committee will at once proceed to detail the operations of their Society during the year which has just closed; and in the first place they would remark, that although their income is at present extremely limited, yet in comparison with the financial accounts of the previous year, there is an augmentation upon the whole amount of about 220*l.*—many annual subscribers have been added to the original list, donors have been increased, and the prospects of the Society, upon the whole, are satisfactory and encouraging.

"From the commencement of the Society, the present defective state of the law, in reference to the keepers of infamous houses, has been an object of the greatest anxiety to the Committee, and at their last Annual Meeting, an application to Parliament was recommended. This application during the past year has been made, and a petition from your Committee, praying for an alteration in the existing statutes, has been presented to the House of Commons by Lord Ashley. Your Committee have also originated a petition to the same effect, and which was

presented by the same noble Lord, from four other Societies, whose objects are of a similar character to those of the London Society. Since the presentation of these petitions, your Committee, through their Solicitor and Secretary, have had an interview with the Chairman of the Police Committee, which was then sitting. Your Committee have also, through their officers, been examined before that body; and, from the evidence furnished, it is confidently anticipated, that in the forthcoming Report of the Police Committee, an effectual alteration in reference to the laws upon the subject will be recommended. Should such alteration be adopted in the Police Bill intended to be introduced into the House, either this or the next Session, the future operations of the Society will be greatly facilitated, and the evil consequently abated. Should such, however, not be the case, then your Committee will be again compelled to appear before the House, and temperately, but firmly, petition that the whole subject may be brought under its immediate and deliberate consideration. Your Committee have also united with other Societies in an Address to the Queen, upon the publication of her Majesty's Proclamation against Vice and Profaneness.

"Great difficulty having arisen to the Secretary and Collector in the exercise of their duties, from the circumstance of their not being enabled to gain admittance into the various families upon whom they have waited, the Committee, a few months since, resolved upon appointing two ladies as collectors:—Mrs. Brown and Mrs. Reed, were therefore selected for this purpose. They have commenced their labours, and it is hoped there will now be no impediment, in this respect, to the future progress of the Society.

"At the last Annual Meeting the Committee detailed the result of five Prosecutions, undertaken by the Society.

"They have now to report, that from May, 1837, to May, 1838, the following houses have been suppressed:—Two in New Road, Whitechapel.—Three in Wentworth Street, Spitalfields.—Three in Falconburgh Court, St. Giles's.—Three in Oxford Buildings, Oxford Street.—One in Fenton Street, Commercial Road.—One in Seymour Place, Bryanstone Square.—Five in Cannon Place, Mile End.—Making a total of eighteen houses suppressed during the year.

"One of the parties, named Jacobs, who was indicted by the Society in 1837, and sentenced to an imprisonment of six months, with a fine of 20*l.*, has been discharged during the past year, and the Committee have reason to believe he is now following an honest course of life. David Romaine, who was also indicted at the same time with Jacobs, and who had evaded the vigilance of the Society for nearly a year and a half, was taken into custody a few weeks since. Not being able to procure bail, he remained in prison until his trial, a period of five weeks. Upon his being brought up he pleaded guilty, and was sentenced to a further imprisonment of one month. The case of this man was of the most horrid and disgusting description. The Committee will be excused for briefly alluding to the house occupied by Romaine. It was in the parish of Mile-End, and was appropriated to children of all ages. Every facility was afforded in the establishment for the ruin of youth of both sexes. As many as twelve or fourteen boys, from ten to fifteen years of age, have been congregated there on the Sabbath, and the most dreadful scenes of depravity—scenes at which human nature shudders—were constantly enacted within its walls. Your Committee might ask whether it is a wonder, if such houses are tolerated, that they should meet with so many instances of juvenile female ruin—or that they should have to report cases of children,

from nine to twelve years of age, who have been decoyed into such receptacles, and made the victims of brutal violence or unbridled passion? So numerous are houses of this description throughout the metropolis, that, if there were no other reason, this fact alone would be sufficient to induce your Committee, with an untiring determination, to pursue the course laid down by the constitution of their Society, and afford one of the most powerful appeals to the friends of civil order, domestic peace, national prosperity, and religious safety, to assist in wiping out so foul a blot from the history of Britain. Of the eighteen houses suppressed during the past year by the Society, the Committee will only refer to two cases, viz.—those of William Sheen and Marie Aubrey; one at the east, the other at the west end of the metropolis. These two cases will at once develope the extremes of vice and iniquity, and exhibit the practices of those houses of the highest as well as those of the lowest class.

"William Sheen, a man of the most abandoned character, had, from the period of his being charged with murdering his own child, to the time of his falling under the notice of the Society, been the occupier of houses of the most infamous kind. These houses were used as lodging-houses for thieves, vagabonds, mendicants, and others of the lowest grade; and although they were described as lodging-houses, yet it was well known that the most diabolical practices were constantly perpetrated within them. The last houses in his possession were situated in Algar Place, Wentworth Street, Spitalfields, in the midst of a dense and ignorant population. The scenes of vice exhibited in these houses beggar all description, and the facts which have been developed are of so awful a nature as to preclude the possibility of detail. Men, women, and children, of all ages, were there associated for the vilest and basest purposes.

After perambulating all parts of London during the day, begging, thieving, and committing every description of crime, they congregated at night in these houses, revelling in debauchery and licentiousness, bidding defiance to all laws, and spreading a moral miasma around. It was proved upon the trial, which took place at Clerkenwell Sessions, on Tuesday, 27th June, 1837, that Sheen had occupied these houses about three years, and that it was his constant practice to harbour there sometimes as many as thirty or forty boys and girls, between the ages of nine and eighteen years. Parents who had lost their children, were constantly applying to the Police to search these dens of infamy, and in some instances the lost children were there discovered, associated with male and female thieves. The facts were clearly proved against him, and the jury found him guilty. The Chairman, Mr. Sergeant Adams, in passing sentence, animadverted, in very severe terms, upon the abominable character of this man, and regretted that he could not add solitary confinement to his punishment. The sentence was, that he be imprisoned for eighteen months with hard labour, and, at the end of that time, to enter into his own recognizances in the sum of 50*l.* for his good behaviour for twelve months.

"The other case, that of Marie Aubrey, a Frenchwoman, is of a different description. The Committee had long determined to suppress the house kept by this woman, but considerable time elapsed before they were in possession of the necessary evidence. By indefatigable exertions they at last succeeded, and a true Bill was found by the Grand Jury against her, and also against John Williams, her paramour. Warrants were immediately granted for their apprehension, but between the time of finding the bills and the granting the warrants, although two or three hours only elapsed, they contrived to escape. Every method was

adopted to capture them. Application was made to the French Ambassador, and to the Secretary of State, to prevent their receiving a passport to leave the country; handbills, offering a reward of 10*l.* for their apprehension, were extensively circulated throughout the metropolis; information was communicated to all the Police stations; and every possible lawful means were resorted to to secure their being brought to trial;—they have, however, for the present, avoided all the efforts that have been made, and have fled to France. So extensively has this case been published, that, should they attempt to return, they will be known in whatever part of London they may locate, and the warrants will be immediately executed. The house in question was situate in Seymour Place, Bryanstone Square. It was an establishment of great notoriety, visited by some of the most distinguished foreigners and others, and carried on in a style little short of that observed in the richest and noblest families. The house consisted of twelve or fourteen rooms, besides those appropriated to domestic uses, each of which was genteelly and fashionably furnished. The saloon, a very large room, was elegantly fitted up;—a profusion of valuable and splendid paintings decorated its walls, and its furniture was of a costly description. As a necessary appendage, there was a small room on the ground floor appropriated as a counting house; a service of solid silver plate was ordinarily in use when the visitors required it, which was the property of Marie Aubrey. At the time the prosecution was instituted there were about twelve or fourteen young females in the house, mostly from France and Italy. Besides Williams, who lived on the premises, and who pretended to carry on business as a coal merchant, there was a medical practitioner in the neighbourhood who was employed as agent. It was his duty to attend the establishment. He was frequently sent either to France, Italy, or the villages near London, to procure females; and

not unfrequently has he visited the Bazaars in and near Oxford Street, and engaged servants, who, shortly after being introduced to the house, were ruined. Aubrey had lived in the house a number of years, and had amassed a fortune. Shortly after she left, the inmates were sent away, and the house is now shut up and the furniture disposed of. Upon receiving a fresh importation of females, it was the practice of this woman to send a circular, stating the circumstance, to the parties who were in the habit of visiting the establishment. At the present time there are in the metropolis a great number of young females from France and Italy, and other parts of the Continent, a large proportion of whom have been decoyed from their homes, and introduced into the paths of iniquity by Marie Aubrey or her infamous agents. There are a number of houses of this description at the west-end now under the cognizance of the Society, and whose circulars are in its possession, who adopt this plan, and, by means of the Court Guide and twopenny post, are forwarding notices of their establishments indiscriminately to all. The Committee hope to be enabled to suppress some of these execrable places in a short time.

"The Committee desire to lay before this meeting the means adopted by the agents of such abominable characters as Marie Aubrey. As soon as they arrive on the continent they obtain information respecting those families who have daughters, and who are desirous of placing them in respectable situations; they then introduce themselves, and by fair promises induce the parents to allow their children to accompany the stranger to London, with the understanding that they are to be engaged as tambour workers, or in some other genteel occupation. A sum of money is left with the parents, as a guarantee for the due performance of the contract, with an agreement that a certain amount shall be forwarded quarterly. As soon as a

sufficient number of young females are obtained in this way, they are brought to England, and soon ruined. While they remain in the house they are first taken to, the money is duly forwarded, and their parents are thus unconsciously receiving the means of support from the prostitution of their own children ; if they remove, letters are sent to their friends to apprize them that their daughters have left the employ of their former mistress, and the money is accordingly stopped ;—they fail not to inform the parents that they have obtained other respectable situations, and are doing well. The difficulties attending the case of Aubrey have been extreme ; and although the Committee have not the satisfaction of reporting the capture of the parties, still they feel that their efforts have been productive of essential service ; Williams and Aubrey are both out of the country—their establishment broken up—a beneficial effect produced in the neighbourhood—and a salutary check exercised upon those who are following the same nefarious calling. They regret, exceedingly, that they were unable to include the agent in the prosecution ; but they trust the publicity given to the case will operate as a warning to him in future. The Committee, from experience, believe, that the only effectual method of suppressing such houses as these is by the power of the law ; however anxious they may be to employ other means in reference to the keepers of brothels, yet they are constrained to say that they fall very short of the desired end ; and until they have been brought under coercive measures, it is almost useless to endeavour to instil into their minds moral and virtuous principles, so powerful is the temptation to carry on this abominable traffic, so easy are the means by which money may be amassed, and so remote are the chances of their being brought to a condign and merited punishment.

" One or two cases have been brought under the notice of

the Committee, in which the parties have been guilty of trepanning females for the purposes of prostitution. The Committee had not the slightest doubt of the moral culpability of these persons, as in the case of the agent employed by Marie Aubrey; yet, in order to prove them legally guilty in order to fix the crime so clearly upon them as to ensure conviction—they must have had recourse to measures which, as virtuous men, they repudiated, and which, therefore, they could not consent to adopt. The Committee anticipate that, in the contemplated alteration of the law, the crime of trepanning females for this purpose may be made felony, and punished accordingly.

"The committee regret that, in the case of Marie Aubrey, they were not enabled to rescue any of the females belonging to the establishment, many of whom were very young; they have reason to believe however, that most of them have returned to the continent—they hope to their friends. The only one left in this country, they are apprized, is the daughter of an hotel-keeper at Boulogne; the Committee would have had great pleasure in saving her, if they could have induced her to leave her abandoned course of life; she has been received by another French woman, the keeper of a house of the same character as that of Marie Aubrey, in Bury-street, St. James's, in reference to which the Committee are instituting an investigation. From Sheen's house two or three females of about the age of fourteen, have been rescued, and are now under the care of the Society.

"The Committee, deeply sensible of the importance of endeavouring to rescue from destruction the unfortunate females who have been made the victims of licentiousness, have been unceasing in their exertions to promote this end. While those under the age of fifteen have engaged their first attention, no deserving object has been refused assistance; and where they have not been able to place them

under their own care, they have procured admission for them into other asylums. Thus, as far as their funds have enabled them, the Committee have been the instruments of saving many from perishing, snatching others from the misery to which they were hastening, and doing good to all who applied to them for protection.

"Your Committee reported at the last annual meeting, that they had protected and assisted forty-three, since which time they have procured admission into the various asylums for twenty-three destitute and friendless young girls; five have been placed out at service—one has received a reward of 1*l.* for her good behaviour for twelve months in service; six have been sent to their parishes; ten reconciled to their friends; ten have been sent to various hospitals; and thirteen are now under the care of the Society, making an aggregate of sixty-seven, who, during the year, have received the benefits arising from the efforts of your Committee. For the two years ending May, 1838, showing a total of one hundred and ten unfortunate females who have been assisted by the Society—many of whom are now enjoying the smiles of their friends, or otherwise provided for. From this number the Committee have the gratification of stating that, comparatively speaking, few have abused the advantages within their reach, and returned to their sinful course of life.

"Your Committee need not revert to the immense number of lewd women who throng the streets of the metropolis, and who are suffering the deepest degradation and misery. It may suffice to state the fact, that there are thousands between the ages of eleven and fourteen, who might, if increased means were afforded, be saved from the impending ruin into which they have thus early been introduced.

"Your Committee regret that they are compelled to state the fact, that most of the cases which have applied

to them for assistance, have been educated in Sabbath Schools, and that two-thirds have traced their ruin to the system of decoying—practised by abandoned females and the keepers of brothels. The Committee might occupy the attention of this meeting for a lengthened period, by detailing some of the cases which have been brought under their notice, but they do not deem it necessary. They may, however, be allowed to refer to two or three.

"Two children, one between eleven and twelve, the other between nine and ten years of age, came under the observation of the Society. They were discovered in one of the metropolitan hospitals in a dreadful state of suffering. The elder of the two was destitute and friendless, and very little of her past history could be elicited. She, however, had been ruined at a house in the neighbourhood of Westminster, and turned into the streets. She is now under a course of moral training, with every probability of becoming, in future life, a useful member of society. The younger, it appears, some years since left England with her parents and went to the East Indies; with them she resided at Calcutta a considerable time. Her mother died there; the father then went up the country, and left his child in the care of a female at Calcutta. Some time after he returned to England, but becoming embarrassed, he entered the service of the Queen of Spain, whither he went, accompanied by his daughter. She there fell a sacrifice. It is not known how long she continued in Spain. About six months since she returned to England, and was then placed in Guy's Hospital, where she remained about six or seven weeks, when she was taken under the care of the London Society. Within the last month a kind and benevolent lady has received her into her house, intending to educate and provide for her. The Committee would be happy, if authorized, to mention the name of this lady to whom their sincere acknowledgments are so eminently due.

"The case of a young female, who was induced by persuasion to come to London for the purpose of seeking a situation, is of an interesting character. It appeared that her friends, who are extremely poor, resided about sixty miles from London. Her mother died ten years since. Upon her father's second marriage, the step-mother used her ill, and she was placed in the workhouse. She left that place for a situation, which she filled about four months, when she was seized with typhus fever, and was confined some months, during which time she pledged all her clothes, and upon her recovery, was completely destitute. She came to London without money or friends, or knowing any one there, for the purpose of obtaining employment. She walked through the metropolis and found herself disappointed, and must have fallen a victim had not the London Society interfered, by whom she was taken care of, and ultimately provided with a situation, in which she remained a few days, but being suddenly taken ill, was sent home to her friends in the country, who had consented to receive her.

"Another case is that of a young woman who had lived an abandoned course for two years. She had become dreadfully intoxicated on one occasion, and was discovered wandering about on the Sabbath morning. From a motive of curiosity she entered one of the city churches. The subject of the sermon was, "The Return of the Prodigal," and so powerful was the impression made on her mind by what she heard, that she resolved to discontinue the life she was following. She knew not where to go, or what to do;—she however kept her resolution for a fortnight, living upon the precarious bounty of strangers, and sleeping under any shelter that presented itself, when she applied to your Committee, by whom she was introduced into one of the asylums.

"Your Committee have also, in some cases which were

not eligible, either for their own or kindred institutions, extended relief, by which they have been enabled to enter into some honourable occupation, and have thus been saved from destruction.

" The statements which your Committee have thus presented to this Meeting, are evidence that considerable good has been effected with limited means ; and an earnest, with increased support, that the objects of the Society will be productive of more extended, lasting, and beneficial results.

" Your Committee, desirous of furnishing every information in their power relative to the operations of the Society, invite the subscribers, and those who feel an interest in its welfare, to an inspection of its accounts, proceedings, &c. The books will be therefore available at all times, and the Secretary is instructed to render every assistance to those friends who may visit the Office for the purpose of inspecting them.

" During the year your Committee have devoted considerable time in communicating information and advice to parents, whose children had been enticed from their homes; —to those persons who applied in reference to houses of ill-fame;—and to unfortunate females who were anxious to abandon their dissolute and depraved habits. The Committee believe that the adoption of this plan has had a most salutary effect—children have been restored to parents, and many females reconciled to friends.

" Your Committee, aware of the inconvenience arising from the situation of the Office they now occupy, contemplate a removal to a more central position, thus affording every facilily to their friends and subscribers to become informed of the operations of the Society.

" Your Committee have thus detailed to the subscribers their proceedings for the past year, and in looking forward to the prospects of that just commenced, they would

refer to the good that has been effected, and urge upon their friends, and the friends of humanity, to press onward in their benevolent course. While thousands are standing with outstretched arms, and crying for help, while hundreds are endeavouring to ensnare and ruin the females of our land—while vice and wickedness, and misery and death are making such rapid advances through the metropolis, shall the objects of the London Society remain a dead letter, and the Committee be retarded and discouraged, because the patriotic—the humane—the religious—will not assist them by their sympathy—their advocacy—their prayers —and their money?

"The Committee, in conclusion, would desire to impress upon a benevolent and moral public, the absolute necessity of increased individual exertions towards the arrest of the gigantic evil which they seek to suppress. It must be remembered, that it is, in fact, their own interest they are advancing, for the interest of every individual member is deeply involved in the morals of the community by which he is surrounded;—if the general frame of society is tainted—if public exhibitions of profligacy are permitted—if the ear of age is to be shocked by licentiousness, and the eye of infancy to be familiarized to spectacles of obscenity, it will be in vain to expect that the contamination will not spread, and violate the seclusion of innocence and virtue. The Committee call upon a humane and patriotic people to come forward and assist in this great work while it is not yet too late—they invite them to stand between the 'dead and the living,' and 'to stay the plague.'"

As the following lamentable Report has been largely circulated by the Society this year, and is so highly conclusive on the preceding statements, I deem it well worthy of insertion:—

" Middlesex Adjourned Sessions, July 13, 1838, Mr. Sergeant Adams, Chairman.

" Mary Stewart was indicted, charged with keeping a common brothel in the parish of St. Marylebone, on and between the 1st of July, 1837, and the 22d of May, in the present year.

" Mr. Bodkin and Mr. Ballantine appeared for the prosecution, and Mr. C. Phillips and Mr. Clarkson for the defendant.

" The defendant (who appeared in Court gaudily attired, and conducted herself with much effrontery) pleaded " guilty."

Mr. Phillips then said, that in considering the extent of punishment the Court would adjudge the defendant to undergo, he trusted that the circumstance would be taken into consideration of her being afflicted with a disease which in all probability would ere long lead to a fatal result; at all events, the malady was one of the most painful to which the human frame was subjected; he alluded to a cancer, under which the defendant was unfortunately labouring.

" Mr. Bodkin said, that the prosecution was at the instance of the Society for the prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, whose object of course was, to put a stop to the abominable and horrid system which had been adopted by such persons as the defendant.

" The Chairman here observed, that if all the particulars which were set out in the affidavit before him were true, the defendant might think herself extremely fortunate that she had not been executed as a felon. If, as he had said, the statement of facts was correct, then it was a case in which the severest vengeance of the law was loudly demanded. The object here was not so much to put down the house, as it was to bring the offending party to well-merited punishment.

"Mr. Phillips hoped the Court would allow the defendant to put in an answer to the statement set out in the affidavit. She did not deny her guilt, but she did deny that the aggravated circumstances referred to, were founded in truth.

"Mr. Bodkin said, that the person who made the affidavit was present, and could be examined.

"The Chairman—And would of course be subjected to a cross-examination, by which means the truth would come out.

After a somewhat prolonged desultory conversation on the point, it was at length considered by the Court, that the best course to be pursued would be to call the girl herself.

"Martha Bull, examined by the Chairman, then said: —I was sixteen years of age last January. I first saw the defendant in August, at which period I was living at home with my mother. I first saw the defendant at her house, in Charlotte Street. I went there in consequence of a young girl telling me that I should get some work to do, and that she herself was in the habit of doing a great deal of work for Mrs. Stewart. I went there in the morning, about eleven o'clock, but she not being at home, I did not see her. On my calling again on the third day, I had an interview with her. She asked how old I was, and I told her sixteen. She then asked me * * * I answered that my mother would not allow me to do so. In the course of about a week, Maria Davis, a woman in the employ of Mrs. Stewart, came for me, and I went back with her to Mr. Stewart's. When we got to the house the defendant inquired how my health was, and then asked me to go down stairs, which I did. This was about five o'clock in the afternoon. She next proceeded to take off my clothes, and to put on me much finer and better dresses. I did not ask her why she dressed me up in such smart clothes; but I had heard her say, that she was going

to the theatre, and I supposed I was to go with her. On going home after the first interview, I did not mention what had passed to my mother, or to any one else. After I was dressed, Mrs. Stewart said, that the gentleman she wanted me to see was at the theatre, and that I must wait until he came home. I was then shewn into the drawing-room; but I did not go very willingly. I remained in that room, for perhaps, more than an hour and a half. I could not go away, because I had all Mrs. Stewart's clothes on. I sat there that time by myself. The shutters were closed, and the candles were a-light. Before she went away, Mrs. Stewart gave me a book of an infamous description, * * * * to read. I cannot say or not, whether I was locked in the room. When the gentleman returned from the theatre, he entered the room, and asked me if I understood what the book meant, and I said I did not. Mrs. Stewart then came up with some wine, and we all sat down. * * * The gentleman then told her to leave the room, which request having been complied with, * * I threatened if he persisted in that conduct to call Mrs. Stewart, but he said he would ring the bell for her, when he knew she would not say anything. He did so, and she came up, when she told me not to be frightened, and directly gave me some wine to drink. I said I did not * * * * I said, I would tell my mother as soon as I got home of the manner in which I had been treated. Upon this, he inquired who and what my mother was, and where she lived. Mrs. Stewart, however, had previously ordered me not to tell him, and I did not. He * * I made a noise, and a party who were in the adjoining room made complaint of it. Mrs. Stewart thereupon came and knocked at the door, and said I must not hollo so, for if I did, the persons in the next room would hear me. * * *

I holloed continually while this was going on, and Mrs. Stewart (who held me) as frequently desired that I would not do so. * * I went down stairs, but Mrs. Stewart remained for a short time with the gentleman. When I got down, supper was offered to me but I could not eat any. * * * I could not help myself, and was compelled thus to submit. The next morning he went away, having previously given me 20*l.*, all of which Mrs. Stewart took from me, saying she would buy me some clothes. This promise she performed, by procuring for me a new frock, some cotton stockings and several other trifling things. As I was going up stairs before the gentleman came, Mrs. Stewart told me I must get 20*l.* from him, because I * * I did not get away from the house for a week, during which period I saw a great many gentlemen, * * Some of them gave me 10*l.*, some 8*l.*, and in one instance 5*l.*; the whole of which money Mrs. Stewart used to have; she told me, that I must always say * * by which means I should get more money. At the end of the week, I went home to tell my sister, who is nineteen years old, and in a situation, about the matter, and what money I had had given me. Once when I was going into the country, Mrs. Stewart gave me 5*l.*, and once when my brother was in trouble, she let me have a sovereign. After I had been home, I went to Arlington-street to work, and was in the habit of going to Mrs. Stewart's to see gentlemen, but I never went to live there again. There were other young girls in the house; before I first went to this house, I used to go out cleaning. I have now, for some time, been under the protection of the Society. Mrs. Stewart's house was very handsomely furnished, and she kept three servants.

"The Chairman and the other magistrates then retired to consider what sentence ought, under all the circum-

stances of the case, to be passed on the defendant. On their return, the Chairman, addressing her, said—'It had never been his duty, since he had had the honour of occupying that chair, to pass upon any individual, a sentence under circumstances so painfully distressing, as those with which the case of the defendant was attended. In the first instance, the offence with which she was directly charged, was not the main feature of her crime; that was of a singularly aggravated and abhorrent nature. She was, however, represented by a medical certificate to be visited by a disease which was one of the most painful character, and one which, sooner or later, would terminate fatally. It was peculiarly distressing to discover that a woman who was afflicted with such a dreadful disease, and, although in all probability even on a rapid road to her end, should be engaged in bringing to utter ruin here and hereafter, females of a tender age. The doubt—if doubt there could be—which had arisen in the breasts of the Court, arose with respect to what could be done with her, in consequence of the disease, under which it was said, she was labouring. If it should turn out to be, as had been stated, that the disease was upon her, the fact would become known to the surgeon of the prison, and then there was a power elsewhere to soften down or alter that part of the sentence which it might, in her situation, be improper to carry into effect; but, sitting there, as the Court did, in the performance of its duty, to pass judgment in a case where the best interests of society had been threatened—where every principle of morality and of virtue had been violated, it was necessary for the public good, that it should take care and not permit itself to be influenced by any other feeling, than such as justice strictly demanded. The Court had nothing else to do than to pass such a sentence as the facts of the case called for, with the hope that it might act as a warning to all those who were following in the same dreadful

course of conduct, for which the defendant herself was about to suffer. The question here was, not whether the defendant kept a house for the purposes of prostitution, but whether she was one of those vile and base creatures, who, although from her years, she could not be actuated by the same vicious inclinations by which the male sex was at times influenced, yet, for the sake of filthy lucre and sordid gain, had consigned to eternal perdition, females of a youthful and tender age. He was afraid to pursue the subject further, lest his feelings should induce expressions from the lips of the Court, which might not be consistent, when it was considered that they came from the judgment seat.' After a few more remarks, strongly condemning the conduct of the defendant, she was sentenced to twelve months' imprisonment in the House of Correction, and to be kept to hard labour, and at the expiration of that period, to enter into her own recognizances of 300*l.*, and to find two sureties in 150*l.* each, to keep the peace for twelve months."—*Report in Times, in July* 18, 1838.]

Justice compels me to state, that on the 14th of October, 1838, Mr. Serjeant Adams stated publicly on the bench, that in consequence of an order from the Home Office, he had further investigated the evidence of the preceding case, and discovered, that the chief witness had sworn falsely, as she had been in a brothel two years before she went to the house of the prisoner. The effect will probably be a commutation of the sentence. Nevertheless, the prisoner deserves the most severe punishment. Mr. Talbot has shewn me a large collection of the most infamous books, prints, and portfolios found in her house; and there is not the slightest doubt that she is a most abandoned profligate wretch.

"The London Society commends itself to the support and patronage of the philanthropist, and those who are anxious for the moral and religious welfare of their country;

since it not only seeks to suppress one of the most alarming and dreadful evils, with which society is afflicted, but also to protect the unfortunate victims of its virulence, and restore them to the paths of virtue. During the past year, it has suppressed eighteen notorious brothels, and rescued sixty-seven young females from destruction, many of whom have been restored to their friends, placed in respectable servitude, or otherwise provided for.

"Assistance and aid are earnestly solicited, in order that the Committee may be enabled to carry out the benevolent objects of the Society."

Notwithstanding the preceding history of prostitution in London, I was anxious to compare it with that of Paris, and accordingly addressed a circular, containing the heads in M. Duchatelet's work, to the Commissioners of Police, the Secretary for the Suppression of Vice, Mr. Prichard, who most readily responded to my inquiries, and favoured me with a personal interview; as also did Mr. Talbot, the Secretary to the Society, whose reports I have just quoted. I have likewise to acknowledge the politeness and attention of Mr. Mayne, one of the Commissioners of Metropolitan Police, whose information I shall immediately record; but as it is much less satisfactory and extensive, for reasons already mentioned, I give precedence to what I consider more ample evidence.

Mr. Talbot kindly furnished me with the replies to my queries, October, 1838, the substance of which is as follows:—Mr. Talbot observed, in proposing that a Report of the London Society for the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, of which he is Secretary, be adopted and printed, "that the subject of licentiousness is of a painful nature, and while he was fully aware of the difficulties, he felt convinced that it must be broadly described; and he was willing to undertake the task, basing his observations on statistical information, which he knew to be correct. The

extent of licentiousness was not, in his opinion, fully known, nor could it be so, unless individuals, who knew something of it, stepped boldly forward, and proclaimed it to the Christian world. The security of society required this; and while he had as great a regard for real delicacy as any man, or any father could have, he must speak out. He believed he was in possession of information regarding this crying sin, of a limited character certainly, but still much more extensive than others possessed, and not generally known. As a father, he looked at his own children, at his own daughter, and he shuddered as he reflected, that if she passed through the streets without parents or friends being with her, she might, by persuasion or force, be torn from his bosom, be plunged into ruin, and he, perhaps, never see her again in this world. It was most distressing to the mind to refer to such deplorable facts, but it was absolutely necessary that they should be publicly known. He would, therefore, give a recent proof of the truth of his remarks.—A child, aged fourteen years, had lately applied to the Society, of which he was the Secretary, for protection. She was decoyed, at the age of twelve years, while passing to or from a Sunday school, into a brothel, and such was the influence gained over her, that, though she left not her home, she continued her visits to this abominable abode for about two years, unknown to her friends or relations. He was anxious that the public attention should be directed to such facts, though aware that he might be met with the cry of 'indelicate,' he was compelled to state them. He was not insensible to the claims of modesty—no man had a greater veneration for delicacy than he had, and he would not, even when speaking on these painful subjects, allow a word to escape him, if he knew it, to offend the ear of the chaste; but he would ask, as a father, whether it would not be better, that the child should receive the caution in

time from the parent, than to realize the horrors of the system by experimental knowledge; and how, he would ask, could parents, ignorant of the artifices employed, and the extent of the evil referred to, give the needed warning? There was indelicacy enough to be witnessed in our streets, but was it indelicate in a father or mother, guarding their beloved children from danger; or in a Christian public perusing a detail of these appalling facts?"

I most fully agree with Mr. Talbot, and therefore place the information with which he has kindly supplied me before the reader, convinced as I am, that every moral and religious individual will approve of my motive, which I am sure cannot fail to be productive of a vast deal of good, by assisting in urging the legislature of this empire to correct or diminish, the horrible state of immorality amongst us.

I submitted the following side-heads, or titles, after the example of M. Duchatalet, to Mr. Talbot, and I now give the substance of his replies, though I am bound to state that he afforded me much more information; some of which could only appear in a dead language, and some, according to my judgment, could not appear at all. In proof of this assertion, I have, however, to state that, according to Mr. T., "there is no country, or city, or town, where this evil is so systematically, so openly, or so extensively carried on, as in England and her chief city." The reader must peruse the whole of the preliminary chapters of this work to arrive at a satisfactory conclusion.

Number of prostitutes in London.—Mr. Talbot concludes, after the most laborious research and personal observation, and the evidence of eight different investigators, that there are 80,000 prostitutes in London. He gives the comparative state of population and licentiousness in Norwich, Belfast, Liverpool, and London, by which it appears, that the number in the latter would be 52,000. But as

crime has increased three or four hundred per cent. during the last twenty years, while the population did not advance more than thirty-three per cent., the inference is, that licentiousness, as well as other vices, extends in a tenfold ratio. He conscientiously believes, there is no exaggeration in the number he has given. The Rev. Robert Ainslie states, "that in the neighbourhood of Lincoln's Inn, there are twenty-two brothels, inhabited by one hundred and fifty women, besides children. In another district, there are twenty-three such houses, inhabited by four hundred and twenty-two females."

"The London Society," says Mr. Talbot, "has just had a *true bill* returned against a man in Wentworth Street, in whose eight houses, as many as two hundred prostitutes and thieves have been found."

Nations which supply such females.—London and the suburban villages supply the greater proportion. Some writers maintain, that every one in three of the daughters of persons in the lower rank in life, become prostitutes, before they are twenty years of age. It is also asserted, that there is one prostitute to every seven virtuous women. Unfortunate females arrive from every part of Great Britain and Ireland—a great portion from the large towns, and many from the villages, who come to London in the hope of obtaining situations, who are disappointed, and fall into prostitution. Considerable numbers arrive from France, Italy, and other continental nations; there are even some Greeks, and East, and West Indians. The parents are generally poor and illiterate. This account is very similar to M. Duchatelet's. (See page 43).

Education.—The education of prostitutes is very bad and defective. According to the *Metropolitan Police Report of Criminals*, from January 1837, to January 1838; of 3,103 prostitutes, 1,773 could neither read nor write—1,237 could read only, or read or write but very badly—

eighty-nine could read and write well, and four had received a superior education. It is also stated in the Report that all other criminals were equally, if not more illiterate.

Ages.—According to the Report alluded to in the preceding paragraph, there were three prostitutes of 3103, under the age of fifteen years; four hundred and fourteen from fifteen years to twenty; eight hundred and seventy-two from twenty to twenty-five; five hundred and twenty-five from twenty-five to thirty; two hundred and seventy-three from thirty to forty; eighty-eight from forty to fifty; and nineteen from fifty to sixty. Mr. Talbot has known prostitutes as young as ten years, and as old as fifty; after which age they generally become procuresses or brothel-keepers. Some ignorant medical practitioners think a girl of ten years of age cannot be violated, or become a prostitute; and such men have succeeded in rescuing culprits from the gallows by such erroneous evidence.

Causes of prostitution.—The causes are the same, or nearly so, as in France (see p. 45); viz. seduction; neglect of parents; idleness; the low price of needle and other female work; the employment of young men-milliners and drapers in shops in place of women; the facilities of prostitution; prevalence of intemperance; music and dancing in public houses, saloons, and theatres; the impression that males are not equally culpable as females; female love of dress and of superior society; the seductive promises of men; the idea that prostitution is indispensable; poverty; want of education; ignorance; misery; innate licentiousness; improper prints, books, and obscene weekly publications; and the profligacy of modern civilization. The neglect of parents and those who have the charge of youth, frequently produces the most lamentable results. Instances are frequently occurring in this capital, in which children on the streets owe their misery to this cause. In many cases,

parents, relations, and guardians, refuse to receive back such unfortunates after a first transgression, and inhumanly consign them to infamy. Such heartless persons forget the parable of "the return of the prodigal child." Trepanners readily kidnap such children, take them to brothels or low public houses, where they are initiated in the art of thieving and debauchery. A large portion of the boys above twelve years of age, and some even younger, committed to Newgate, have been connected with bad women, a fact of which there is too frequent proof, as these boys are visited every day by their mistresses, under the name of sisters. Finally, they appear in frills and pinafores, at the bar of the Old Bailey, charged with robbery or some other felony.

Mr. Talbot states, that in consequence of the neglect of parents and guardians, there are from twelve to fourteen thousand young prostitutes in London. Another cause of licentiousness is the erroneous impression, that the male is not equally guilty with the female. He pursues his course of iniquity with unbridled freedom, reckless of the injuries he may inflict, feeling secure by custom, in the undisturbed enjoyment of his criminal propensities. The divine law, however, equally condemns both sexes; and the custom of man cannot abrogate it. The heartless seducer is, however, received into society, while not only odium and disgrace, but disease, destitution, and misery, fall upon his innocent victim. He is now sanctioned by the infamous poor law—THE CHARTER OF LIBERTINISM—the "boon of the female population," but, in truth, the BANE of this portion of the population. The female is reprobated and shunned by all, while he who has been the cause of her guilt, and who is infinitely more guilty than she is, receives the tacit approbation of the world! She is consigned to infamy, driven to commit infanticide or suicide; or condemned to death or transportation for life. Such is the

barbarity of human laws, when opposed to the divine and natural.

According to the impulse of human and animal nature, the male is much more prone to the procreation of the species than the female; and no human law or custom, has ever, or can ever, reverse this inclination. Any human enactment opposed to this truth, is based on ignorance and error; and ought, in my opinion, be reprobated by every Christian philanthropist. Were human laws based upon those of nature, the odium, disgrace, and punishment of seduction, bastardy, and adultery, would also be inflicted on him, who perpetrates such crimes. This would be in strict accordance with the Mosaic legislation on these subjects, and with the physiology of human nature. In such cases, the moral and religious would sanction the punishment of the real and most guilty party, and act up to the dictates of our nature. Mr. Chitty, the celebrated legal author, is of this opinion; and contends that the laws should punish in person as well as by fine, the female seducer.—*Elements of Medical Jurisprudence.*

Dramatic entertainments.—I have already shewn, (see p. 5), that dramatic entertainments are among the predisposing causes of licentiousness; and I shall now demonstrate, that they are loudly condemned by many of our most enlightened divines. Thus, Archbishop Tillotson observes, with regard to plays; "They are intolerable, and not fit to be permitted in a civilized, much less a Christian nation. They do most notoriously minister to vice and infidelity. By their profaneness they are apt to instil bad principles into the minds of men, and to lessen that awe, which all men ought to have of God and religion; and by their lewdness, they teach vice, and are apt to infect the minds of men, and dispose them to lewd and dissolute practices."

Rollin, the principal of the University of Paris, quotes

the following passages from the writings of Rochefaucault, with approbation :—" All great diversions are dangerous to a Christian, but of all that have been invented, there is none we have so much reason to fear, as plays. The passions in these entertainments *are so naturally and so artfully delineated*, that they are excited by them, and imprinted on our hearts, especially that of love."

Had these distinguished writers witnessed modern performances, dances, and the intermixture of abandoned women with the virtuous in every part of our theatres, saloons, and green rooms ; and observed the conduct of all classes of men in these places, they would be shocked at the immorality of this enlightened age and nation.

Another fertile source of vice, is the practice of sending nurse maids and female servants with children into the royal parks, and squares, where there are always seducers, procurers, or procuresses. In sober truth, such wretches are in every part of this vast metropolis ; and therefore, young females and female children, from the age of eight or ten years upwards, ought to be cautioned against them. Female children in charity schools, and those who are day scholars, are often trepanned and ruined by the wretches just mentioned. The masters, mistresses, and guardians of such institutions, and of workhouses, Foundling hospitals, and other establishments in which there are female orphan girls, should therefore, be most careful how they allow them into such places, or the streets, or to whom they assign them as servants or apprentices. Mr. Talbot has known many of this class consigned to prostitution. He also states, that mothers and daughters on account of the pittance derived from female labour, are often compelled to walk the streets at night, in order to obtain the means of subsistence. A similar fact is mentioned by M. Duchatelet. (See p. 47.)

It is even most unsafe to allow one's own children to go

into the streets, squares, parks, or public promenades, with nurses or female servants, the licentiousness of all classes, high and low, rich and poor, is so formidable and extensive at present—such is "the march of intellect amongst us," and the result of "the schoolmaster being abroad," but in reality, not at home.

Trades and occupations. — Milliners, dress-makers, straw-bonnet makers, furriers, hat-binders, silk-winders, tambour-workers, shoe-binders, slop-women, or those who work for cheap tailors, those in pastry cook, fancy, and cigar shops, bazzars, servants to a great extent, frequenters of theatres, fairs, dancing rooms, and almost all places of public amusement in large towns and cities, are licentious. It is impossible to estimate the number addicted to secret prostitution in the different ranks of society.

Opinion of themselves. — The account given by the author on Prostitution in Paris, equally applies to London (see p. 49). Abandoned women usually entertain the lowest opinion of themselves; and generally shun virtuous society, while following their wretched calling. They often commit suicide, or become insane, or idiotic. (See p. 49.)

Religious feelings.—They have seldom any sense of religion while vicious, but when misery, poverty, and disease afflict them, they often wish for religious consolation. (See p. 50.)

Sense of shame.—Mr. Talbot observes, "when in the society of their companions, and male associates, they have no shame; and in very many instances outrage all decency in the public streets. They often exhibit themselves at the windows in the day time, in alluring positions; and in the evening, or approach of dusk, in the more retired streets, variis modis corporibus nudis, saltant, ludant, et cantant. This was the custom at Madame Aubrey's, and was complained of by the opposite neigh-

bours. I have known many examples." Their language in the streets is the grossest and most revolting possible, in the hearing of virtuous persons, in order to excite the passions. But when they seriously determine to abandon their infamous course of life, their sense of shame becomes painfully acute, and they refer with horror to their past conduct. When they apply for admission into an asylum, their conduct is most respectful and correct, and their language most remarkably delicate. "I have officially known many most singular examples." (See also p. 49.) They likewise think it a profanation to attend divine service, or to perform any religious act, while practising their vocation. (See p. 50.)

Bent and character of mind.—The reader will find a satisfactory account in the preceding chapter. (See p. 50.)

Manner of passing their leisure hours.—It is very difficult to give any account in this kingdom, because the state of society precludes the possibility of arriving at any positive conclusion, (see p. 51) which I am inclined to think refers to most nations.

Moral defects.—Mr. Talbot observes—"Prostitutes are, with very few exceptions greatly addicted to the abuse of spirituous liquors. They are not so at first, but they are invariably soon after their ruin, (see p. 52.) They are often ferocious thieves, though there are many exceptions. Their keepers urge them on; pelf, pelf is the requisite. Thieving is prevalent amongst them to a great extent, though lying, scandal, and extortion are their chief faults or vices. I do not think that, generally, they are gluttons, because intemperance destroys the appetite. They are in most cases spendthrifts, and slovens. (See p. 52.)

Good qualities.—The Parisian and London accounts are widely different (see p. 52). Mr. Talbot observes, "they have very few, if any good qualities. They have a strong sympathy for each other, and a desire to relieve

their distressed companions; but this feeling subsides when the miserable object of commiseration removes to a distance, although much more distressed than ever. Women of this class have little love for their offspring, whom they often destroy, though they are ardently attached to their parents. They invariably serve, and never injure each other. Their charity extends to none but their own class." M. Duchatelet records the contrary. (See p. 53).

Lovers and bullies.—" Every girl, or woman, has her fancy man, or bully, who lives upon her prostitution, and seldom confines himself to one female. Bullies are thieves, pickpockets, and often murderers. Girls, who are not more than thirteen years old, have their fancy-men. They are attached to such horrible vagabonds, whose business is partly to protect them, and partly to rob or murder those whom they entice into brothels. These men are the most desperate characters, and are ready to commit any crime, however atrocious. They are most commonly of the lower orders, but occasionally belong to the middle and upper classes of society, of all which I have known examples. Bullies spend the day in public-houses, and the night in brothels, in which they always assist in robbing, and often in murdering their victims." M. Duchatelet attests the truth of this statement. (See pp. 53, 54).

Now suppose that the number of prostitutes be 80,000, as already concluded, and that each has a bully, then there would be this great number of thieves and vagabonds let loose on the community. If we suppose one-fourth of the above number, then there will be 20,000 criminals, the future subjects of penal settlements or the gallows.

While writing the preceding facts appertaining to this chapter, an enlightened medical gentleman called upon me, who has had great experience in London and Paris, and who, on seeing my manuscripts, and learning their

tendency, fully corroborated all the preceding statements, and gave me much additional information, which was elicited by conversation.

He assured me that near what is called the Fleet ditch, almost every house is the lowest and most infamous brothel. There is an aqueduct of large dimensions, into which murdered bodies are precipitated by bullies, and discharged at a considerable distance into the Thames, without the slightest chance of discovery. He also informed me that there are two influential men in the city of London, who let two houses in the vicinity, not in reality worth 30*l.* a-year each, at 2*l.* a-week each as common brothels! "The rental of such houses varies from 100*l.* to 500*l.* a-year, and a premium from 100*l.* to 300*l.* is asked for the goodwill of a first-rate establishment." He likewise gave me an account of various parish officers, who refused to interfere to assist in suppressing degrees of immorality which I cannot mention in any language. He also informed me that there were several churches and places of divine worship, in different parts of the metropolis, which are made houses of assignation. Men milliners and fascinating young men, who have money to spare, are generally in the streets at church hours, to accost and escort females to places of public worship, to sit near or within view of them, and to make assignations. I may here remind the reader that this is the country of wealth, good living, and that money is no object when the passions are to be gratified. But to end this digression, I have to mention that my informant, a truly moral character, a respectable citizen, the father of a family, gave me the following account of bullies:—Two acquaintances of his, men of the world, were entrapped in one of the parks, by two apparently virtuous females, about twenty years of age, who were driving in a pony phaeton, to accompany them home to a most notoriously infamous square in this metropolis. All

was folly and debauchery until the next morning. But when the visiters were about to depart, they were sternly informed that they must pay more money. They replied they had no more, but would call again, when their vicious companions yelled vociferously. Two desperate looking villains, accompanied by a large mastiff, now entered the apartment, and threatened to murder the delinquents if they did not immediately pay more money. A frightful fight ensued; the mastiff seized one of the assaulted by the thigh, tore out a considerable portion of the flesh; the bullies were, however, finally laid prostrate, the assailed forced their way into the street, through the drawing-room windows; a crowd speedily assembled, and on learning the nature of the murderous assault, the mob attacked the house, and nearly demolished it before the police arrived. The injured parties effected their escape during the commotion. My friend further informed me, that in a certain court, near another notoriously profligate square, which was pulled down a few years ago, several skeletons were found under the floor, on which inquests were held by the coroner. He also mentioned numerous facts about suburban fairs, which I believe to be perfectly true, but which I cannot further notice. His statements are fully corroborated by the various authorities I have quoted in these pages.

I shall barely observe, that it is a well-known fact, that coroner's inquests are often held on the bodies of women, who commit suicide a few hours after their profligacy at suburban and metropolitan fairs; and that taverns and public houses near such places afford every accommodation for private prostitution. The first statement is so true, that had I sufficient leisure I should attend such inquests, for the purpose of ascertaining the changes in the ovaries in a few hours after conception.

Tribades. — Mr. Talbot has no information to give

on this head such as that offered by M. Duchatelet, (p. 56).

Tribades inter nos raro existant—a τριβας, mulier quæ in sexum suum libidinem exercet; τριβω idem valet quod frico, tero. Tribades itaque dici possunt, Latine, fricatrices de quibus dicunt Juvenal, Martial, et Horatius, &c. Attamen omnibus modis aliquando, voluptate damnosa et furtiva veneris monstiferes coeunt meretrices nostræ. "Rara sunt exempla," dicit D. Talbot sed pauca novi, et sic D. Prichard (see p. 56).

Classification of prostitutes.—The present defective state of our laws, renders a correct classification of depraved women impossible. There are, however, three divisions. Those who live by prostitution, amongst whom are those who have their own apartments, either in bad houses or private lodgings, for which they pay most exorbitantly; while there are others who walk the streets, pick up customers or friends, and take them to places of accommodation, for which a large price is exacted. These truly unfortunate creatures are closely watched, while walking the streets, so that it is impossible for them to escape, and if they attempt it, the spy, often a female child hired for the purpose, or a bully, or procuress, charges the fugitive with felony, as escaping with the clothes of the brothel keeper, when the police officer on duty immediately arrests the delinquent, and takes her to the station house of his division, but more commonly gives her up to the brothel keeper, who rewards him. "This inhuman and infamous practice is of nightly occurrence in this metropolis. When the forlorn unfortunate wretch returns to her infamous abode, she is maltreated, and kept nearly naked during the day, so that she cannot attempt to run away; she is often half starved, and at night again sent into the streets, as often as she is disengaged; while all the money she receives goes to her keeper, whether male or female. This

is not an exaggerated picture, but a fact attested by myself on many occasions. I have known a girl aged fifteen years, who in one night knew twelve men, and produced to her keeper as many pounds. Paucis horis, hæ puellæ sex vel septem hominibus congruunt; lavant et bibunt post singulum alcoholis paululum, vulgo brandy, et dein paratæ sunt aliis."

In this class must be included many engaged during the day in needlework, the wages of which are so small, that the deficiency for the support of existence must be acquired by infamy. Others frequent the theatres, or are kept-mistresses, who generally receive paramours in the absence of their keepers. Many servants may be classed under this head. "I believe one-third of prostitutes are servants; and one half brought up in their calling. Married women and widows also belong to this class, and many of them support their families in this way."

There is another class under this division, who are exclusively devoted to sailors, and who locate on the banks of the river. These are of the lowest description, and are in the employ of crimps, brothel keepers, and gin-palace keepers. There are also others who live near brick kilns, and are always to be found in the train of brick makers, navigators, and cads. There are others, who altogether associate with mendicants, and partly live upon the plunder of these nuisances; and others, in the neighbourhoods of the markets, who entirely devote themselves to the country waggoners and carters. There are more who attach themselves to soldiers, and when they are devoted to a particular regiment, they will follow that regiment all over the kingdom, and even over the world, if practicable.

The next class, according to Mr. Talbot, consists of procuresses, procurers, and panders—the most abominable wretches in existence, alike reckless of themselves, and of those who may become their prey. Some procurers are

men moving in the most respectable classes of Society. These are attached, for the most part, to brothels kept by foreigners; and are often sent to different towns and villages on the continent to engage young girls from their parents, as tambour-workers, dress-makers, &c., and a quarter's wages are sometimes advanced to the parents, to lull their suspicions. When the inhuman monsters have obtained a sufficient number, they bring them to London, where their modesty and virtue are sold to some profligate wretch for from 20*l.* to 100*l.* After a short period, these unfortunate children are said to become *stale*, are turned into the streets, contaminated or not, to starve; and the procurers are again despatched to the continent for others. Many such deplorable instances have been proved in our superior courts of justice, in the prosecutions instituted by the *Society for the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution.*

Procuresses are employed in this metropolis and elsewhere, to watch stage coach offices, and to offer advice, aid, and lodging to girls who come to London to obtain situations—others frequent servants' bazaars, or rather sinks of iniquity, workhouses, prisons, penitentiaries, for the purpose of hiring servants, and decoying innocent, or inexperienced girls, by every artifice and cunning which infamy can suggest. Fair promises generally have effect, and ruin is the result, as the reports of the daily press too forcibly demonstrate.

Many of the female wretches who are proprietors of infamous houses, appear at those places as most respectable persons. They prowl about bazaars, haberdashers and milliner's shops, and if they observe a showy young female, they purchase some trifling article, and request such young person shall be allowed to take it home. When she arrives, she is purposely delayed, and generally ruined. "I have known procuresses who were sent seventy miles from London, and no expense spared in their horrible traffic. Others

prowl about the streets of London day and night, for the purpose of entrapping the unwary ; and thus the demand for fresh victims is supplied.

" The other modes by which infamous houses are supplied," says Mr. Talbot, " as death, disease, or demand requires, is, that the keepers employ agents, young women about eighteen years, to perambulate the streets, and decoy any children they may meet with, under pretence of taking them to see a relative, or going a pleasant walk, or inviting them to a theatre, or getting them a place of service. The most subtle artifices are employed on these occasions, both by day and night. The Sabbath is a favourite day with these wretches, and they watch young children to Sunday schools, and entice them to their haunts; nay, I believe children have been actually taken from the schools in the sight of teachers and companions, they having no idea of so shocking a system being in operation. As soon as the children are secured, they are *sold*, and their ruin sealed, perhaps, by some hoary-headed debauché at an enormous price.

" In other instances, the child is permitted to return to its friends after being ruined. A case lately came before me, in which a little girl, ten years old, was decoyed by a trepanner as she was passing to a Sunday school, taken to a brothel, ruined, and sent home at the usual hour of the school breaking up. She was rewarded with sweetmeats and trifles, which induced her to visit the place again and again, paying to the infamous owner ten and twelve shillings a week, for the use of a room only.

" Another feature in this hideous system is, that if an innocent child be taken to what is termed a respectable establishment, she is violated for a high price, and then transferred to a house of an inferior description ; and this transfer takes place as often as the first house procures fresh inmates, and is continued until the wretched child,

after a few days or weeks, finds herself diseased, and in one of the lowest and vilest brothels in London.

"Other trepanners are sent into the country, locate themselves in certain places, become acquainted with the female children of the neighbourhood, engage some of them as servants, and bring them to town (London), in that or some other capacity, where they are speedily ruined. The brothel-keepers also negociate with country waggoners to bring them up girls under these and other false pretences, at a certain sum each."

Delinquents of this kind have been repeatedly brought before the police magistrates, but rarely punished as they deserve, in consequence of the shamefully defective state of the law.

"I speak advisedly when I state that there are *about four hundred trepanners in this metropolis.*"

Touters are females employed to watch prostitutes, but especially dress lodgers, while they perambulate the streets; and whose duty it is to urge them to address passengers, and to see that they are attentive to their calling, as well as to take care that they do not run away. These persons, children excepted, are either prostitutes who have lost their attractions, or brothel-keepers of both sexes.

"I have known children of eight or nine years of age thus engaged; they are trained for prostitutes, and generally become so at twelve years of age. A vast amount of money is derived from this source, as will appear hereafter."

The older touters frequent secluded places, and commit every imaginable vice, in order to support a truly miserable existence.

Physical characters.—Prostitutes are generally more healthful than might be expected, in consequence of their full and indolent mode of living; but many of them speedily get into bad health. (See p. 60.)

General health.—The general health is usually very bad, in consequence of their peculiar excesses, while exposure to the vicissitudes of the weather, their bad treatment, and intemperate habits induce disease, and consequently ill health. (See p. 61, &c.)

Several of these women apply to me at the Metropolitan Free Hospital, complaining of hoarseness, loss of voice, severe cough, rheumatism, inflamed eyes, and other diseases caused by exposure to cold, by intemperance, and bad treatment.

Fecundity.—It is impossible to ascertain the exact number of children borne by prostitutes in London; but there are 71,000 illegitimate births every year in the United Kingdom, of which there are 7,000 in London. Most of these result from seduction, which also causes numerous cases of child-murder, criminal abortion, and suicide.

Prostitutes are not prolific; but most of them, when pregnant, resort to criminal fœticide, as the care of children would interfere with their vocation. (See p. 53.)

Mortality of children.—This cannot be ascertained with any degree of exactness in this country. Mr. Talbot thinks it very considerable before the age of six months. (See p. 66.)

Diseases common to prostitutes.—The diseases common to unfortunate women have been already described. (See p. 67.) It is computed by the London Society for the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, that there are 8,000 deaths every year, either by disease or suicide. "What an awful amount of mortality! 8,000 human beings rushing unprepared into eternity! The thought is agonizing, the reality overwhelming. What a holocaust of human victims yearly sacrificed at the shrine of sensuality!" This would give a new race, if there be 80,000 in London, every ten years.

Mr. Clarke, the late chamberlain to the city of London, calculated the duration of life at four years, while others estimate it at seven years.

According to Mr. Talbot, whose inquiries and observations are very extensive, few die in hospitals, workhouses, or prisons. It was unknown until lately when death occurred, unless amongst the same class of persons, and the bodies were buried by means of charitable contributions. The new Act for the Registration of Deaths will soon afford more positive information on this subject.

Fever, when prevalent, destroys a great number. Few escape venereal disease, and many are destroyed by its ravages. All the hospitals are crowded with venereal cases, to the extent of their accommodation.

One of the surgeons of Guy's Hospital informed Mr. Talbot, that the number in three hospitals, during a period of eight years, was 2,700 cases of venereal in children, from the age of eleven to sixteen years; and that a far greater number than those admitted were refused for the want of accommodation.

"I have seen," says my intelligent informant, "as many as thirty persons turned away from one hospital, some of them in the most direful state, scarely able to walk."

We have also a great number of applications at the Metropolitan Free Hospital, and mostly made by girls from the age of twelve to sixteen years. The number of applications by persons of the other sex is comparatively few, though mere boys are frequently diseased.

"From the testimony I have in my possession," says Mr. Talbot, "I am enabled to state, that a great many brothel-keepers encourage boys into their dens. In one house there were three girls, and twelve or fourteen boys, waiting in a lower room on a Sabbath evening. Most of these boys, no doubt found to their cost, the injurious results of a Sunday evening visit like this. I think I am

correct in stating, that out of 5,000 brothels, 2,000 encourage boys; and supposing that in each house, fifty boys are to be found in the year, it gives the fearful aggregate of 100,000 visits made by boys to brothels. I shall not stop to inquire how many of this number become diseased, or how far the effects produced may influence their families, connexions, and society at large."

I can conscientiously bear my testimony in support of the truth of the preceding statements. I have been often shocked as a physician to different public charities in the metropolis, on seeing beardless boys, or rather children, presenting themselves for advice for venereal diseases. Several grey-headed members of my profession who came to see my practice, were absolutely amazed at such precocious depravity.

The number of patients admitted into the Lock Hospital in London, from its first receiving, in January, 1747, to March, 1836, was 44,973, of whom only four died. The dispensaries relieve a great many venereal cases, while adventurous quacks, chemists, druggists, and others, styling themselves surgeons, injure and kill a vast number. The most lamentable examples of bad and injudicious treatment, almost daily present themselves at our hospitals and dispensaries—a fact that every medical officer of such charities can attest as well as myself.

There are now (1838) five institutions for reclaiming unfortunate females in this metropolis, and they rescue about 500 annually. These asylums leave the sources of the evil unpurified. The only society which attempts the work of diminishing public depravation, is the London Society for the prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, which suppresses these houses in which juvenile corruption is encouraged, punishes procurers and procuresses, and protects and provides for their unfortunate and wretched victims. The laudable exertions of this Society have been already

noticed. The five asylums contain 500, while 8,000 were every year passing into eternity. The following are the other asylums alluded to:—

The Magdalen, 1758; the London Female Penitentiary, 1807; the Guardian Society, 1812; and the Maritime Penitent Refuge, 1829.

The efforts of these humane establishments have effected much good, as appears by the following facts:—

Restored to friends, placed out in service, married, or satisfactorily provided for, 6,262.

Left at their own request, or discharged for misconduct, 2,980.

Left from ill-health or incurable disease, 161.

Sent to parishes, absconded, or left, being pregnant, 151.

Emigrated, 47.

Died, 151.

In the institutions at the date of report, 253.

Average number admitted each year, 253.

Total number admitted, 10,005.

It appears that the various asylums just enumerated including the Lock Hospital, and Society for the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, have conjointly benefited 11,000 individuals, but that not fewer than *four millions* had within the same portion of time, been sacrificed by prostitution. If these facts were generally known, surely the Christian world would be roused to exertion for the amelioration of the wretched state of prostitutes. It is computed, that 462 millions sterling have been expended in patronising libertinism, and not a tenth part in diminishing it.

There is scarcely a family in the kingdom, who have not suffered more or less by licentiousness. The gaols and workhouses receive numerous inmates, in consequence of its almost universal prevalence; while it imposes a weighty and oppressive taxation upon the people of most

countries. It is manifest from the facts recorded in this volume, that we must speedily have better legislation in relation to the subject.

Number and localities of vicious houses.—Mr. Talbot has a return of 1,500 brothels in London, *exclusive* of the City, and some adjacent parts. No return has been, as yet, made of the *whole of London.* He found by a personal survey, in 1835, that there were 1,176 bad houses in Lambeth. There are other parishes in which the number is equally great. "I have little doubt," says he, "that there are 5,000 in London, an equal number to the gin-palaces." He has authority not to be disputed for stating, that children of eleven, twelve, and thirteen years of age, were often dragged into these wretched dens. It appeared by the evidence given before a Committee of the House of Commons, "That there were 5,000 gin-shops in London," and these are chiefly supported by prostitutes and their associates. At certain convivial meetings of some distillers in London, one of the standing toasts was, "The distillers' best friends, the unfortunate females of London." The number of places of worship, of schools, and societies for the welfare and benefit of the human race in this metropolis, amounts altogether to 2,150, and to oppose these, are 5,000 gin-shops, a large number of beer-shops, saloons, taverns, &c. &c.

Infamous houses, he states, are in all parts of the metropolis, but most numerous in small streets, leading from public thoroughfares. "Some of them adjoin churches, chapels, and even the courts of law. There is one locality in which vicious women accost persons as they issue from the door of a chapel on the Sabbath. In another situation, the officiating clergyman while in the pulpit, is in a position to witness the proceedings in a contiguous brothel."

One of the most notorious and infamous houses in London is opposite to a very much-frequented place of

divine worship, and can be seen from its windows. It is foreign to my purpose to mention the localities. Brothels are numerous near the Houses of Parliament and superior law courts. "I do not know," says Mr. Talbot, "any part of London free from them. They abound in the localities of all schools, colleges, squares, and respectable streets, and I know whole streets tenanted by them."

If the reader will refer to page 73, he will find that improper houses are not allowed in many of the positions just mentioned in Paris. It is highly disgraceful that they are tolerated in such localities, in this united kingdom.

Cigar, coffee-shops, &c.—"There can be no doubt but that many cigar, coffee, beer, pastry, and cook shops are places of assignation, and often of accommodation; in which young and well-looking girls are kept as decoys. These are numerous in the neighbourhood of theatres, and other places of public amusement. Varied and exorbitant demands are made for the use of rooms, according to the rank or appearance of the applicant. There are also many splendid saloons in different parts of "the town" (London), in which as many as two hundred dashing prostitutes assemble at the same time. Fashionable and wealthy young men visit these places, and choose their mistresses from those assembled. These saloons are also attached to "taverns," and are the sources of immense wealth. They are not exclusively confined to the "west-end of the town," or London, beyond Temple-bar. They are known in other parts under the name of "long rooms," particularly along the banks of the Thames, where sailors abound. Some of these long rooms can accommodate five hundred persons.

"Prostitutes are arranged in rows in these houses, like cattle in Smithfield market, until sailors and other visiters select their 'wives.' The suited then enter another ca-

pacious apartment in the establishment, and after every kind of revelry, drinking, and dancing, the poor Jacktars proceed to brothels, where they are stupified by poisoned drink, robbed, and either forced into the streets, dressed or undressed, or absolutely murdered by bullies, and then secretly made away with. The daily police reports in the leading newspapers supply numerous examples.

"The owners of these houses make an enormous property by the sale of 'refreshments,' and 'other articles,' and they encourage prostitutes, by either treating them to food and drink, or by giving them money."

Mr. Talbot also states, on the authority of Lieutenant Rivers, and Lieut. De Montmorency, of the Royal Hospital, Greenwich, that it is a common custom for abandoned women to be admitted on board of men-of-war, while in port, when leaving port, and on coming into port; and that they had actually seen more prostitutes on board than there were men. The custom is, that when any large ship comes into, or leaves port, a number of boats is seen along side, filled with these women, each boat having in it, either the brothel-keeper, two agents, or the owner of the boat. The sailors now ask permission of their officers to take their 'wives' on board, which is readily granted, and the vessel is speedily crowded with low abandoned prostitutes, when the keepers negotiate with the sailors for the prices of their *wives*. The effects of this scene, and of the dissipation and drunkenness which follow, on the minds of the young midshipmen and boys, can be readily imagined. If the respectable wife of an officer, or seaman, come on board, she must witness this debasing and degrading practice. She must hear horrid oaths, blasphemies, and obscenities, which may have a most demoralising effect on her future conduct, as well as on that of her children.

This abominable immorality issues from the metropolis, or is connected with it in the following manner:—

The brothel-keepers in the various ports, who supply the women, have seldom more than three or four. Whenever a large ship is expected, an order is forwarded to London, to send the requisite number of females to meet the expected demand. In this way the brothel-keeper in the country and in London are upon "terms of business;" the one supplying the other from the town market; and the other, in turn, occasionally furnishing victims for the metropolitan trade. The girls thus sent to the ports are either paid for at a certain sum per head, for the time they are likely to be absent, or the future possession of them is given to the country keeper, for a larger consideration. In this way, the greater number of prostitutes who infest the various ports, are really sent from London.

The effects upon sailors deserve attention. Most of the women admitted on board are diseased, and spread a dreadful contagion around, disabling or destroying some of the best seamen, often at a period when their services are most needed; or implanting the seeds of bad health, premature decay, and too often inducing a horrid and lingering death. These lamentable results are often felt in distant parts; and the curses and imprecations of those who have been injured, are poured upon the guilty perpetrators; and our country is often said to be the scourge and bane of the world.

The robberies of sailors are of very frequent occurrence, as will appear by the police reports of the offices near the river. The law is extremely defective as to the punishment of the plunderers of this class of persons, and should be amended. A police magistrate ought, in my opinion, to have a summary jurisdiction in such cases, and

the power of inflicting a fine and imprisonment, with hard labour, on the class of robbers alluded to.

Disturbances in improper houses.—It is an invariable characteristic of these houses that they are disorderly; and it is notorious, that their keepers or inmates are almost daily appearing before magistrates for breaches of the peace, or for robberies. Every possible vice is perpetuated in them, and they are held to be the greatest possible nuisances. All the rogues and vagabonds with which London is infested, are connected with them. "The burglar, the pick-pocket, and the crimp, all leave the brothel to perpetrate their depredations upon the public; and return to the brothel to divide the spoil. The brothel affords them a shelter against the public officer, and provides money, in the event of their apprehension, to subvert the course of justice, and to ensure an acquittal. It is the cause of an immense expenditure of public money to support an extended and expensive police, and our expensive law courts, and likewise the fertile source of disease, destruction, and death. It is also the cause of a degrading obloquy and disgrace attaching itself to our national character."

Number pandering to prostitution.—The number of persons pandering to the vice under consideration in this metropolis, of whatever kind, those directly engaged in aiding and assisting in decoying young females for the purpose, and looking after prostitutes in the streets, cannot be less than 5,000. It is computed that 400,000 persons are directly and indirectly connected with prostitution, and that 8,000,000*l.* is expended annually in London on this vice alone. This is easily proved. "Some girls obtain from twenty to thirty pounds a week, others more; while most of those who frequent theatres, &c., receive from ten to twelve pounds. Those of a still lower grade obtain about

four or five pounds, some less than one pound, and many not ten shillings. It is a melancholy fact, that those of the lowest description, who earn the least money, are generally, sooner or later, turned naked, or almost so, out of doors, and left a prey to starvation and disease. If we take the average earnings of each prostitute at 100*l.* per annum, which is under the amount, it gives the yearly income of 8,000,000*l.*

"Suppose the average expense of 80,000 amounts to 20*l.* each, which is over the mark, 1,600,000*l.* is the result. This sum, deducted from the earnings, leaves 6,400,000*l.* as the income of the keepers of prostitutes; or, supposing 5,000 to be the number, above 1,000*l.* per annum each, an income much larger than that of many professional men, military and naval officers, or respectable tradesmen. There is no exaggeration in this calculation."

The police reports daily demonstrate, that a man who goes to an improper house must pay exhorbitantly; if he drinks, he is stupified and robbed; or, if he remains sober, and refuses to expend freely, he is assaulted, maltreated, or murdered by bullies. The keepers of some of these houses receive from twenty to one hundred pounds each night from visitors. It is a fact, that the wealthy, pampered brute has paid from twenty to one hundred pounds as the price of the virtue of an innocent child, who never more sees her parents, and whose short life will be the most wretched that can be conceived.

It is worthy of remark, that most of the brothel-keepers in London are Jews and Jewesses, while the majority of prostitutes are nominally, but improperly, denominated Christians. I have not been able to discover the cause of this difference; and it will be found difficult to comprehend it, even on the perusal of the following remarks, which deserve attention.

"I am quite sensible," says Mr. Talbot, "that the

keepers of brothels and procuresses are, generally speaking, Jews and Jewesses; but it is to be borne in mind, that almost all the wretched girls are, what is erroneously termed, Christian. It is not, therefore, just for the Christian to decry the Jew, as being the only culpable party, for both are deeply implicated.

"I will however go a step further, and at once boldly accuse the Christian of being far more guilty than the Jew. I have already stated that there are 5,000 brothels and 400 trepanners in the metropolis: I will take it for granted that these persons are mostly Jews; and there are 2,000 more despicable persons, who follow unfortunate females through the streets, who watch them, and who compel them to accost all the other sex whom they meet. I then allow that there are 7,400 Jews engaged in this traffick, who are living on the degradation of Christian girls—the children of Christian parents, and who are plunging themselves and their unhappy victims into irremediable ruin.

"Now all respectable Jews condemn this infamous pursuit. There is not a mark of odium that can be attached to the human character that is not fixed upon the *Jew* who is known to have any connexion with this monstrous iniquity. I have the authority of Dr. Solomon Herschell, the high priest of the Jews, as well as the concurrent testimony of other respectable Jews for the statements I have made. I quote the following communication which I received from the learned and philanthropic Doctor.

"'I beg to say that this growing evil has long engaged my serious attention, and that I endeavour, by *all clerical means in my power* to diminish the number of those who, within the sphere of my influence, are guilty of abetting the progress of this vice, by holding them up to public disgrace, and excluding them from every mark of respect which the synagogue confers.

"'It is my decided opinion, that the only effectual remedy for the several and serious evils emanating from these sinks of infamy, is by an Act of Parliament, inflicting prompt and decided pains and penalties against the keepers of brothels, procurers, and procuresses.'

"I have also received similar testimony from the elders of the various synagogues in the metropolis.

"The parties engaged in encouraging vice are well known to the heads of the Jewish persuasion, and on no account are they suffered to associate with the moral and the virtuous; they are excluded from a communion in any of the civil or religious privileges of the Jews; they are not allowed to be married in the usual way, but the ceremony is performed by one of the most inferior officers; they cannot gain admission into a Jewish benefit society; they are prevented from participating in Jewish charities; and when death claims them, as the messenger sent to convey them to the dark regions of despair, they are deprived of the common and ordinary rites of burial; they are not interred in the same hallowed spot with their fathers, but their bodies are cast out, as being unworthy to sleep by the side of virtuous men. This is the invariable course pursued by the Jewish people; and, I may venture to say, that there is not a Jew of any respectability whatever, who does not, from his heart, abhor and deprecate these horrible practices.

"I will now fearlessly ask,—Do Christians act in the same manner? I answer, No, they do not. While they know that in London 80,000 Christian women are following this evil way; while they know that 8,000 are annually consigned to 'that bourne from which no traveller returns;' while they hear the cry of the returning prodigal; while they listen to the moans of the wretched, and while the shrieks of the damned are ringing in their ears, the victims exclaiming, 'You might have saved us,'

they dole forth, now and then, a paltry guinea, in order that an attempt may be made to save about 400 yearly, and leave the remaining poor, famishing 7,600 to drag on a miserable existence, while those who have plunged them into ruin have no mark of disgrace attached to them, and are allowed to participate in every privilege connected with the common rites of Christianity.

"Fellow Christians! will you longer remain inactive? Will you hear 7,600 voices crying out, 'Help us! help us! we have not got a friend on all the earth,' and not rise up as one man, unfurling the banner of the cross, and rushing to the rescue? Thus, while you are crushing the enemy, you will be pouring the balm of consolation into the broken spirit, and healing the wounded heart."

This appeal cannot be made in vain, to all denominations of Christians, whose profession of faith is, "Love God above all things, and thy neighbour as thyself. This do, and thou shalt live." How few, alas! strictly obey the law—how few sympathise with the miseries of their neighbours—"Mankind of every description, without any exception of persons." Were the professors of Christianity in this country strictly obedient to the divine law, and were they aware of the magnitude of the moral evils amongst them which are superficially described in these pages, there assuredly would be a greater number than two or three hundred individuals, in this vast metropolis, found co-operating for the suppression and punishment of vice, the diminution of prostitution, and the various crimes it produces; and for affording succour to the fearful number of unfortunate prostitutes amongst us, who sigh, almost in vain, for restoration to that happy position in society, from which they were heartlessly torn by the much more sensual and wicked sex. I cannot but venture to hope, that the benevolent and philanthropic of all religious denominations, will henceforth, now that the extent of vice

and crime is placed before them, aid in the Christian duty of attempting to control and diminish licentiousness, and the vices it causes; and in improving the horrible condition of the thousands of the unfortunate women amongst us, who are festering in sin, and woeful suffering, and whose vices are demoralizing, to a greater or less extent, every class of society.

Houses for the sale of improper productions.—These houses, according to Mr. Talbot, are very numerous, and females are generally the venders of all sorts of vile productions. There are many houses in which books, prints, &c. are sold openly; but a vast number in which they are disposed of secretly. "Pictures and devices are introduced into watches, seals, lockets, indeed into almost every article in common use, and are sold in shops where there is no suspicion of a probability of such things being kept. This traffic is common in bazaars, and with itinerant hawkers. Human ingenuity has almost exhausted itself in these productions. The foreign are infinitely more immoral than the native. All are used in the higher order of brothels. A large quantity is in the possession of the London Society for the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, which was found in the houses of Madame Aubrey, and Mrs. Stewart, who is now undergoing punishment in Cold Bath Fields prison." I have seen these productions, and they are of the most demoralizing tendency. I have also been credibly informed by different persons who had, at different periods, visited improper houses in London, Paris, Berlin, and other capitals, that such works, devices, and productions were in almost every flourishing establishment. It is for this reason I differed in opinion from M. Duchatelet, and questioned the accuracy of some of his statements.—(See pp. 51 and 41.)

The vendors of these productions, in this country, are

generally foreigners, hawkers, and Jews of all countries, both male and female. The number engaged in this kingdom is about 4,000.

Improper works vary in price from sixpence to two pounds sterling. The cheap ones are intended for apprentices, and youth of both sexes of the humbler classes. There are few boys or girls of the lower classes who have not such productions. Gaudily-coloured frontispieces are prefixed, and exposed in shop-windows to attract attention. Licentious songs are sold and sung daily in the public streets near the river, amidst groups of youth of both sexes. They have a great tendency to demoralize the mind. Partly owing to this cause, the author of "The Great Metropolis" observes, "That not one young man in one hundred can be met with who has not had connexion with lewd women. The moral condition of the lower classes in London, is of a nature which it is painful to contemplate. In the case of thousands, all traces of morality are utterly effaced from their minds. They are demoralized in their thoughts and habits, except when restrained by a fear of the laws, as if they were living in the most heathen part of the world. Sexual intercourse obtains amongst them to a most frightful extent." No one can deny, I presume, that our transported criminals, whose horrible vices have been already alluded to, in Chapter II.—Moral Depravation in Penal Colonies, page 17,—were initiated in the mother country; or that the uneducated of the lower classes are as depraved as the mind can imagine, both in the most civilized as well as in savage nations.

Not only books, prints, portfolios, paintings, but the most extraordinary inventions are used in the higher order of brothels in Paris, London, and other European capitals, and in all, in which gain is considerable. The most horrid and unnatural crimes are depicted and practised. The

foreign representations belong to the period of the early French revolution, and are the most shocking that can be imagined.

Mr. Talbot further informed me, "Sunt lupinaria, nunc inter nos, in quibus utuntur pueri vel puellæ!!" He mentioned localities, which of course, cannot be printed. These most infamous and horrible dens, are partly supplied by children and young persons, who are observed gazing at the windows of the improper printshops, already noticed, and "as much as 10*l.* was expended to secure one boy."

"*Lambeth Street Police Office.*—Police Constable H 102, stated, that at a late hour on Saturday night, October 6th, he entered a most shocking den in Wentworth Street, Whitechapel, where some hundreds of juvenile thieves of both sexes nightly congregate, and are allowed accommodation, and where it not unfrequently happens, that as many as four or six boys and girls are permitted to sleep in the same bed. On going into a small room on the first floor, he found the male prisoner in bed between both the girls, and perceiving the latter to be of such tender ages, about fourteen years, he felt it to be his duty to take all three to the station-house. The constable further stated, that there were four houses thrown into one, and divided into small compartments, having a bed in each, and so thin and low were the partitions between each, that the persons in one might hear everything that took place around, and a tall man could see into three or four about him. Mr. Wontner, the honorary solicitor to the London Society for the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, was present, and urged the magistrate to grant a warrant against the proprietor, so as to compel him to give bail to answer an indictment, but the magistrate considered this unnecessary, as enough had taken place to justify and support the indictment."—(*Times, October 9th*, 1838.)

I shall now conclude this part of my subject, by giving

the remaining facts in the language of Mr. Talbot, as well as his suggestions, for a modification of our laws, and rendering them more efficient for the improvement of public morals.

Penny Theatres, &c.—"Penny theatres, which have been of late very much suppressed, have been the ruin of thousands. Wherever a penny theatre exists, it is not only an intolerable nuisance to the neighbourhood, but is sure to draw all the children of the lower orders to witness the most absurd, and immoral performances, and when once the habit of attending these places is fixed, it is sure to lead to prostitution and robbery, and all imaginable crimes. There was one, a short time since, which had existed for nine months, in the neighbourhood of Bagnige Wells Road, which at last became so bad, that the parish authorities interfered, and compelled the proprietor to abandon it. Young females, who had been ruined by the instrumentality of that theatre, have applied to me for protection, after having been in the streets, in consequence of attending that place. Numerous instances might be adduced of this character, and I have no hesitation in affirming, that they are the most powerful auxiliaries to vice of every description. Dancing and music-rooms, regularly licensed at public-houses, are also sources of the most mischievous tendency, and produce the most lamentable and extensive results. I know not, however, of any places, which can at all compare, with the low lodging-houses abounding in the metropolis. I quote from the author of 'Facts relative to the punishment of Death in the Metropolis,' and have verified his assertions by personal experience:—

"'Another class of nurseries of crimes, not indeed to be found in every quarter of London, but confined to certain districts, such as St. Giles, the low parts of Westminster, and both sides of Whitechapel, are lodging-

houses, kept generally by receivers of stolen goods, and resorted to by none but thieves, or those who are on the point of becoming thieves. Houses of this description often contain fifty beds, which are occupied by persons of both sexes, from the age of ten to forty years. Into some of these houses boys only are admitted, the purpose of such exclusiveness being on the part of the boys to preserve their independence: that is, to escape the control of persons stronger than themselves, (they are equal and often superior to grown thieves in skill, presence of mind, and knowledge of their business), and on the part of the lodging-houses to repress and prevent the men from robbing the boys, so that the lodging-house keepers may reap as much as possible of the boys' plunder. Women, however, are not excluded. It would be more correct to say, that girls of all ages from ten (for it is seldom that the female companions of thieves live to be women) are admitted, not on their own account as independent lodgers, but as the acknowledged mistresses of the boys who introduce them. The scenes of profligacy that occur in these dens are indescribable, and would be incredible if described.'

Suggestions for corrective legislation.—" As these queries relate to remedial measures, I will refer to them altogether. In passing, I may observe, however, that to the three last I reply at once in the affirmative. Every thing which has even the appearance of vice should be at once suppressed. But this can only be effected by extending the powers of the magistracy and police; and, after this, by a most rigid classification of persons committed to prison. I give an instance from the 'Companion to the Newspaper:'—

" 'The two cases (a man and his wife) of "keeping a disorderly house,' a hot-bed of vice and misery, a fruitful source of wretchedness and guilt, the justices seem to look leniently upon, ten days' imprisonment only being inflicted

upon them; whilst 'selling fruit on the pathway,' a crime having in it no immorality whatever, is punished with no less than thirty days' incarceration. The keeper of a brothel is a being dead to every sense of decency and shame. To him or her, it is simply, a few days' confinement. They are not robbed of the slighest consideration among their usual associates, with whom, on the contrary, they find sympathy. They are 'in trouble,' and every effort is made by their friends to alleviate the tedium of their few days' detention.

"'To virtuous girls thirty days' imprisonment in a common gaol is, in most cases, ruin. The young female of fifteen, convicted, not of any breach of positive morality, but merely of an offence against convenience, is shut up perchance in the same room with the hardened dealer in female seduction. The two 'keepers of a disorderly house,' imprisoned for ten days, would thus be enabled to turn their 'trouble' to good account. A constant supply of victims is provided for them, and their committal ceases to be a punishment. This is a revolting picture, but it is a faithful one.'

"Without referring to education, as the *best* means of preventing crime and immorality, I state my belief, that after education has done all it can do, prostitution will still exist, and consequently, perhaps to a limited extent, every other description of crime. This affords no reason, however, why every means should not be adopted to restrain, if not suppress, prostitution. Therefore, while education, and the penitentiary system, are employing their peculiar means, legislation should also lend its powerful and effective aid. Under present circumstances it is evident, that the law is calculated to effect more good than either of the other two; for, while on the one hand, most prostitutes have received an education of some sort, and are able to read, if not to write—brothel-keepers who, for the sake of

money, are ever anxious, and ready to encourage and perpetuate prostitution, can only be restrained by the law. It will also be obvious that the penitentiary system is ineffective, as a great number of those rescued from prostitution by these means return to iniquity again; and even supposing that none fall back into vice, after remaining twelve months or more in an asylum, yet the moment they are taken from the streets, their places are filled by the decoyer, the panderer, and the brothel-keeper. Thus the market is always stocked, and thus, if death, disease, or any other circumstance cause a deficiency in this supply, every means is resorted to to make up that deficiency; and while money is so lavishly employed, there will be found persons to carry out this nefarious traffic, and to betray the innocent. I do not mean to decry penitentiaries—they are most useful institutions, and calculated to do much good to the unfortunate female—but they must fail to suppress the vice, while the emissaries of the brothel-keeper are allowed to pursue their course unmolested. Education may instruct the young, and guard them against vice. Penitentiaries may rescue the fallen, but the only power on earth that will reach the brothel-keeper, and restrain him, is the law. If the brothel-keeper and his agents, are brought under severe and effective enactments, it will follow that the number of prostitutes must be reduced, and consequently every other crime, in a proportionate ratio, lessened. If this be true, and I doubt not it will be admitted, the inquiry will naturally be made, 'What laws are there already in existence, and how far are they calculated to effect the desired end?'

"Several legislative enactments have been passed, viz., 25 Geo. II. c. 36, 28 Geo. II. c. 19, and 58 Geo. III. c. 70. Neither of these acts is at all sufficient to reach the evil; nevertheless much good may be done by their being vigorously enforced by the proper authorities, which are

the officers of parishes. Brothel-keepers mostly escape by removing from one parish to another; and in cases where conviction is obtained, the punishment is generally light. The heaviest punishment that I am aware of, was in the case of Belasco, who kept a brothel in Drury Lane, and who was sentenced to two years' imprisonment, which he underwent, and who a little time since came before a magistrate, and expressed great contrition for his offence, and promised to amend his life. The same Belasco, I have been informed, is now a waiter at a notorious gambling house at the west end, and lives in a brothel, kept by a member of his family. Any individual convicted of keeping a common brothel, in my opinion, should be transported for fourteen years at least.

"The first of these enactments is, indeed, the only one under which brothel-keepers can be indicted; and if brothel-keepers are kept under restraint, there would be but little employment for their agents. Much difficulty attends the administration of this act, independent of the culpable neglect of parish officers, who *now* urge that they are prohibited by the New Poor-law Act, from expending money on these prosecutions. The 36 Geo. II. provides, that when any two rate-payers of any given parish, give notice in writing to the constable or overseers of the said parish, of the existence of a brothel in such parish, that it shall be the duty of such officers to accompany the said two inhabitants to a justice of the peace, who shall bind over in penal bonds of 20*l.* and 50*l.*; the one party to prosecute, and the other to produce *material* evidence on the trial. Upon this the magistrate is to issue his warrant for the apprehension of the accused, and the two inhabitants are again to appear before the justice, and the man or woman is held to bail to answer the charge at the sessions, where the two inhabitants must attend to give or produce the material evidence; and if a conviction is ob-

tained, the two inhabitants may claim a reward of 10*l.* each, but if the prosecution fails, they are liable to an action. The parish ought to pay all the expenses of the prosecution of the brothel-keeper. It will be at once seen, that the trouble and loss of time here required, would alone be sufficient to deter any individual from interfering, separate from the odium which such a proceeding would inevitably entail. It should be known, also, that material evidence is the production of a witness who has had criminal intercourse in the house. No respectable individual would adopt this course himself, and every virtuous mind must entertain a repugnance to making a witness guilty, or even producing a guilty person to give evidence. These circumstances render the act inoperative, and it is rarely acted upon. I know a gentleman, in St. Martin's, who lost much time and money in these prosecutions, and at last relinquished his efforts in disgust. Thus it is apparent, that an alteration is requisite in this Act—I should say its total repeal, as far as regards brothels; and a more easy, simple, and efficient method adopted in its place. I would suggest that an Act of Parliament should be passed, founded upon the principle of summary jurisdiction, with an extension of the powers of the police and magistracy, giving to any person, whether parishioner or not, the right to complain to a magistrate of the existence of a brothel; and that the evidence of the police and neighbours to the fact, should be sufficient, without requiring a guilty witness to be produced, to authorise the magistrate to send the accused to prison for any term not exceeding six months; reserving to himself the right, in the event of a very flagrant case, to commit the offending party for trial as a felon. All the expenses to be paid by the county as in cases of felony. This would effectually check the evil, with but little trouble or expense. A system of harrassing might thus be kept up, the cases would obtain publicity in the

police reports, the number of brothels be reduced, and deeds of infamy soon be suppressed. Every person found detected in using indecent incentives, or selling indecent publications, or in any way promoting and encouraging prostitution or an illicit intercourse, should be punished as the brothel-keeper, or heavily fined. All tutors or servants, practising any means for the demoralization of either sex, should be punished in the same way as a confidential servant who had robbed his master, would be under the existing acts relative to felons. Much more might be said, but I think I have embodied, in my suggestions, all that would be requisite. Such a law, as that I have alluded to, would check vice, punish the perpetrators, and clear away the impediments to the successful efforts of education; and, remotely, abolish the necessity for penitentiaries, asylums, &c."

I have next to notice the information very readily and politely supplied to me by Mr. Mayne, Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police.

My interview with him took place in September, 1838, when I requested his replies to the preceding heads in this chapter, and received the following:

From all the information he had obtained from seventeen inspectors of police and other sources, he felt convinced that the number of prostitutes in London and the surrounding districts, except the city, was under 7,000, the brothels were nine hundred and thirty-three, houses of ill-fame eight hundred and forty-eight, and lodging-houses for prostitutes 1,554. In his opinion, there is no means of ascertaining the number of female servants, milliners, and women in the middle and upper classes of society who might properly be classed with prostitutes, or the women who frequent theatres exclusively, barracks, ships, prisons, &c.

The number of prostitutes taken into custody by the

metropolitan police, from January, 1837, to January, 1838, was 3,103, but many of these had been repeatedly in custody; two hundred and ninety-six men and two hundred and eight women for indecently exposing the person; six for assaults with intent to commit sodomy; thirteen for assaults with intent to commit; two for extorting money under threats; six for rape; eighteen for assaults with intent to commit.

During the year 1833, 3,427 prostitutes were charged before the police magistrates by the metropolitan police, of whom 2,259 were summarily convicted, and 1,168 discharged.

Ages of criminals.—The ages of prostitutes will be found in p. 160.

For murder by concealing the births of infants:—One from the age of fifteen to twenty, one from twenty to twenty-five.

For sodomy:—One male from twenty to twenty-five, one from thirty to forty; assaults with intent, one from twenty to twenty-five, one from thirty to forty; extorting money under threats, &c., one from twenty-five to thirty, three from thirty to forty, two from forty to fifty, one from fifty to sixty.

For rape:—One from fifteen to twenty, one from twenty to twenty-five, one from twenty-five to thirty, one from thirty to forty, and two from forty to fifty; for assaults with intent to commit, three from twenty to twenty-five, seven from twenty-five to thirty, one from thirty to forty, one from forty to fifty, one from fifty to sixty, two from sixty and upwards.

For bestiality:—One from twenty-five to thirty, one from thirty to forty, one from forty to fifty, one from sixty and upwards.

For indecently exposing the person:—One from twenty-

five to thirty, two from thirty to forty, and two from forty to fifty.

It appears by the Parliamentary Report of the Metropolitan Police Offices, August, 1838, that there were then forty houses in this metropolis engaged in the sale of obscene books and prints; and that these productions were introduced into schools, both male and female, by hawkers and others bargaining with servants for the sale of old clothes, &c. The Police Commissioners recommended that the magistrates should have power to seize on all such works and engravings, wherever they are found, and to fine the possessors of them. According to the present Vagrant Act, exposure inside shop-windows does not warrant any interference, and therefore the evil continues to prevail. The only mode of punishment at present is by an indictment at common law, which is a most tedious and expensive proceeding.

Mr. Rowan, a Police Commissioner, gave the following meagre and singular evidence: "He was opposed to the interference of the force (police), under his control in *bawdy*-houses, because such a power would be equal to licensing them."—*Parliamentary Report on the Metropolitan Police, August*, 1838.

This is the gist of his evidence as published; and every man who has a particle of common sense must be able to estimate its proper value. His competency as a police commissioner must be apparent to all.

On the same occasion, Mr. Wontner, the late secretary, and now the honorary and efficient solicitor to that excellent institution, the London Society for the Prevention of Juvenile Prostitution, was of opinion that Mr. Commissioner Rowan's police force should have a power to enter all infamous houses by an order of a magistrate; and that all girls under the age of fifteen should be removed, and

their evidence taken against the character of such houses and the keepers of them. He also stated that several houses were kept by the same two proprietors; so that if the manager of a certain house was prosecuted, he could immediately abscond, and another take his place.

He likewise proved, that the French brothel-keepers in this metropolis imported several girls of tender age, and re-shipped them after a certain time.

In the opinion of this witness, magistrates ought to have authority over such houses; and, when proved to be such, they ought to be at once shut up.

The foregoing history of prostitution and all crimes connected with it in London affords ample data, on which to found a legislative enactment. The horrible system is rapidly advancing in all directions, and among every class of society, and is so subversive of morality and religion, as to arouse every good man and professor of Christianity to activity in the cause of virtue. It is, therefore, imperative upon every one who values the future well-being of society, the security of domestic happiness, the preservation of Christianity and virtue, to raise his voice against the extent of immorality amongst us, and not to cease until that voice shall have reached the public, the legislature, the government—nay, the throne itself, and until the object it advocates shall have been effected.

"I appeal," says Mr. Talbot, "to every virtuous, to every moral person, by that happiness which he enjoys, by that love he bears to his children, by every tie which should bind man to man, to lend a helping hand against the destroyer, against the wicked. I appeal to Christians, parents, brothers, and sisters, and all virtuous and good men, to co-operate with those who are strenuously endeavouring to control and diminish licentiousness.

"Let all good citizens reflect on the amount of evil arising from this vice, the cruelties it entails on its victims;

let all reflect on their own happiness and on the happiness of their children, the safety of the social circle, and the eternal destiny of souls; and let them never rest until they have done something for, or mainly contributed to, the great and important work of moral regeneration."

In concluding this Chapter on Prostitution in London, I again acknowledge my great obligations to Mr. Talbot, for the varied important information which he has given me; and I add my testimony in favour of the zeal, the indefatigable perseverance, the cool and solid judgment which he has displayed, in carrying the laudable wishes of the truly excellent society of which he is the secretary, into effect. I have also to thank Mr. Mayne, Commissioner of the Metropolitan Police, and Mr. Pritchard, Secretary to the Society for the Suppression of Vice, for their readiness in affording me all the valuable information they possessed. I flatter myself with the hope, that our united co-operation will materially contribute to the improvement of public morals, not only at home, but in the most remote parts of the world.

I have now given but a very imperfect account of the actual state of licentiousness in this metropolis, as the facts with which I have been supplied from different sources, would occupy a large volume. Enough, however, has, I trust, been recorded, to convince every rational person, that there is much need of more efficient legislation on the subject. "The collective wisdom of the nation", must speedily interfere, and frame laws calculated for the correction of the present state of public morals amongst us. There is every disposition to do so on the part of the present constitutional and popular government—the Melbourne administration, were not every possible kind of impediment most foolishly thrown in their way by their opponents. But a much stronger power than either, A Free Press, will effect the object so much desired by

every enlightened citizen. I most cheerfully commit the cause of virtue and morality to that great engine, and I fear not the result of its powerful exertion.

I shall now proceed to place an account of prostitution in America before my readers; and I have to acknowledge that I am also indebted for it to Mr. Talbot.

CHAPTER V.

PROSTITUTION IN AMERICA.

THE following account of prostitution in New York was given in an address delivered by the Rev. Mr. M'Dowall, Chaplain to the New York Magdalen Asylum, in May, 1832, before a large meeting of ministers and others, assembled in the American Tract House from different and distant parts of the United States. He states that he and several other clergymen associated to establish Sabbath Schools in notoriously licentious districts of their native city. These labours brought the association into direct contact with profligates, and attention was necessarily drawn to them, as most of the children came from the houses of such persons.

There is a good deal of information given in the following narrative; but still, however, much less than in the preceding chapters on Prostitution in London and Paris. Nevertheless, the reader will find a multitude of curious facts well worthy of his reflection. He will also find a great similarity, even an identity, between the states of licentiousness in the old and new worlds.

I have only to remark, in conclusion, that the following account is in the Rev. Mr. M'Dowal's language; and I think it right to make this statement, as some of our medical reviewers would find fault with me, as they are most ready to do, with or without reason, had I ventured to employ Scriptural phrases.

Effects of licentiousness in nations.—To my countrymen at large I would say, the vices of the old world are sapping the very foundations of our political existence, and

poisoning the very life blood of our republic. Scarce a gale blows from the eastern hemisphere, that wafts not to our shores some contagion, more destructive in its ravages than the dreaded cholera. Already are the seeds of moral infection and moral disease deeply, widely sown. Our public journals teem with catalogues of villainy, crime, and murder, that would but little more than find a parallel in the records of France, England, Italy, or Spain. And where is the Montesquieu of the age, to declare the inevitable consequences? What statesman lifts his warning voice, and marks a nation's sure decline, when lustful passions reign, and vice eats out the heart? Name to me a fallen nation in the whole history of man, whose vices and intestine corruptions paved not her way to ruin. Tell what caused the world of old to be turned into a waste of water, and all flesh thereof to be destroyed? What laid proud Sodom and Gomorrah beneath the brackish waves of Asphaltes' sea? What laid the ruthless hand of desolation on the lofty domes of Babylon and Nineveh, and inscribed "Mene, Mene, Tekel," on the departing glory of Assyria? Or, later still,—What hath obscured the boasted learning and philosophy of ancient Greece, and wasted down the vaunted institutions of collossal Rome? Luxury, vice, and licentiousness are conspicuous in their downward history, and are engraven in livid characters, for our warning and instruction, on every memento of their decayed grandeur and departed greatness.

Look at the present tottering kingdoms of the earth! Effeminate Italy, degenerate, superstitious Spain, convulsed France, and writhing England. Read in their sickly aspects the sure effects of national licentiousness and national vice—of legalised, customary lewdness and debauchery. Would you follow up the odious detail, behold them alternately the prey of a ravenous, depraved, and lustful priesthood, the footstools of gay, sensual, and lux-

urious courts,—now the moon-eyed followers of mad ambition, and now the delighted slaves of corrupting pleasure,—to-day fighting in the cause of liberty, to-morrow cringing at a tyrant's footstool, riveting their mental shackles, and drinking to the very dregs, the poisoned chalice of debasing sensuality.

We pronounce upon their public morals, their public vices, fashions, and amusements; and while we point you to the puppet-shows, operas, and carnivals of Italy, the theatres and bull-fights of Spain, the lascivious dances, licensed brothels, and public carousals of France, the gambling-houses, horse-racing, cock-fighting, boxing-matches, fashionable libertinism, and genteel prostitution of England, we would ask, is it longer a matter of wonder that Italy is brought to kiss the toe of the mitred pontiff? Spain to light the fires of the inquisition? France, gay, unthinking France, to be a moral desert? And England, poor old England, our once honoured mother, is made to fatten a gormandizing, pompous, unwildly, and insatiate aristocracy and state-church?

Pursue the inquiry to whatever point of nicety, and you but incontestably prove the position of Montesquieu, that more free states (and we may add nations and kingdoms), have perished through corruption of morals, than violation of laws. Deeply impressed with this important truth, I must urge, that we are in more danger, as a nation, from the subversion of our morals, than from any other source. I feel it an imperious duty to bear my testimony, that we are fast approximating the refined licentiousness of Europe, and to raise my warning voice, feeble as it is, and say, the fate of nations gone before, hangs suspended o'er our heads.

The evidence of history, and the facts disclosed by an investigation of the state of general society, show that, whatever allowance is to be made for difference in the

manners, fashions, customs, and institutions of different cities, similar vices of proportionate magnitude prevail in them all; and if every tenth female in cities is considered a prostitute, as Colquhoun supposes, our country contains within the bosom of its cities 75,000 women, whose end is bitter as wormwood, and sharp as a two-edged sword; her feet go down to death, her steps take hold on hell. As the whirlwind passeth, so is the wicked no more; for in about five years they are carried to the grave, and their places are filled by a new class of unfortunate, guilty females. Thus 15,000 are annually cut off, and more than 15,000 annually prostituted.

But the number of men who go after them straightway, as oxen go to the slaughter, or as fools to the correction of the stocks, till darts strike through their liver, as a bird hasteth to the snare, not knowing that it is for their life, is five times as great. Indeed, they may be safely computed at 300,000 men. Nor do they all attain to a great age, for the years of the wicked are shortened. They that go in unto her mourn at the last, when their flesh and their body are consumed. For she hath cast down many wounded; yea, many strong men have been slain by her. Her house is the way to hell, going down to the chambers of death. For her house inclineth unto death, and her paths unto the dead. None that go unto her return again; neither take they hold of the paths of life. But he knoweth not that the dead are there, and that her guests are in the depths of hell. Admitting that 15,000 men yearly find a premature grave by licentiousness (and what intelligent man will fix the number at a lower estimate), and that 15,000 and upwards are annually introduced into the paths of uncleanness, we have the appalling sum of 30,000 souls sinking every year into the tomb, and a like number annually abandoning themselves.

Number of prostitutes in New York.—The extent of prostitution in this city, as shown by facts already developed during our labours, and the alarming increase of the unhappy victims of seduction among us, of which we have the most demonstrative evidence, so far exceed all our own previous calculations, that we are prepared to anticipate scepticism and incredulity in others. Indeed, enough is in our possession to cause a thrill of horror to be felt by every virtuous man and woman in the community, such as was never produced by any *expose* of vice which has ever met the public eye. Did not prudence and delicacy forbid the disgusting detail of what has been brought to our knowledge thus early in the history of this society, every parent would tremble for the safety of his sons as well as his daughters, and we could a tale disclose which would cause the blood to "chill within the veins, and each particular hair to stand erect, like quills upon the fretful porcupine." But we shall forbear, and only set forth those general facts which plead for the necessity of extensive and efficient efforts in behalf of those unhappy females, for whose reformation and salvation the New York Magdalen Society is engaged.

First, then, we would present the fact, that we have satisfactorily ascertained that the number of females in this city, who abandon themselves to prostitution, is not less than 10,000! The data on which this estimate is founded, are, first, the opinion of the alderman, whose experience and observation for several years past, as commissioner at Bellevue, enabled him to judge very accurately, and from whom we learned, in the commencement of our labours, what we then thought improbable, that there were *ten thousand harlots in this city.* But although we then judged that the number was overrated, we are driven to the painful admission, that his estimate was just,

from our own observation in the partial census we have attempted.

We have the names, street, and numbers of the houses of ill fame in this city, notoriously inhabited by abandoned women; and also the houses of assignation. Hence our opportunity of judging of the extent of prostitution in the city is now by no means limited; and we are satisfied we do not exaggerate when we repeat, that there are now *ten thousand* girls and women in the city of New York, who live by public and promiscuous prostitution. Besides these, we have the clearest evidence, that there are hundreds of private harlots and kept misses, many of whom keep up a show of industry as domestics, seamstresses, nurses, &c., in the most respectable families, and throng the houses of assignation every night. Although we have no means of ascertaining the number of these, yet enough has been learned from the facts already developed, to convince us, that the aggregate of these is alarmingly great, perhaps little behind the proportion of the city of London, whose police reports assert, on the authority of accurate researches, that the number of private prostitutes in that city is fully equal to the number of public harlots. This is a most appalling picture of moral degradation, and we forbear to dwell upon so painful and mortifying conclusions as those, to which this view of the subject would impel us. We cannot forget, however, that the Rev. Mr. Stafford, formerly employed as a missionary among the depraved population of our city, published his conviction, after careful investigation of this subject, that there were 15,000 abandoned females in this city (New York), and our population, permanent and transient, was then one-third less than it is now.

As, however, we would not add one shade to the dark picture of our city's pollution, we shall assume it as a fact that there are *ten thousand* only of these lewd women in

New York; and we do so, because we had rather underrate the aggregate than augment it.

Ages—Classification if prostitutes—Among these there are girls of fourteen, thirteen, and even twelve years of age, in incredible numbers, such as the House of Refuge has rescued, although that spacious institution would not hold all such, could they be sent there. Some of these, it is revolting to human nature to relate, are devoted to prostitution thus early in life by their *own mothers*, either in their own houses kept as brothels, or placed by these unnatural monsters in female form, in the houses kept by others.

Causes af prostitution.—Besides these, many of them are the daughters of the wealthy, respectable, and pious citizens of our own and other states, seduced from their homes by the villains who infest the community, preying upon female innocence, and succeeding in their diabolical purpose, either by promises of marriage, or, after deceiving them into a brothel, by the commission of a rape, often first depriving the victims of their lust of their reason, by stupefying drugs kept in these dens of iniquity for the purpose. Individual cases of each of these descriptions are known to the society, in which the unhappy girl has been kept imprisoned for weeks, until all hope of escape from infamy was lost, and she at last gave herself up to intemperance and crime.

Among these, are very many daughters of poor parents, and especially widowed mothers, whose necessities compelled them to seek employment as domestics. For such, especially the young and inexperienced, the keepers of these brothels are eagerly seeking in the character of procuresses; and soon after hiring them as servants, they are sent into a room with some man, or rather monster in human shape, and compelled to submit to his vile purpose, for which the procuress is liberally paid. The poor girl

now finds herself ruined, and is presently seduced to consent to a life of infamy, by the promise of plenty of money, fine clothes, &c., and all is lost. Numbers of these cases have already come under our observation, in which women were thus the active agents in effecting the ruin of the young and unwary of their own sex.

Great numbers of them have been married to drunken husbands, brought to this city, far from their homes and friends, and here abandoned with one or more children, perhaps shockingly diseased, and left to starve, or provide for themselves. Without friends, money, or character, they are soon found by some of those who prowl about for such prey; their children die from neglect or cruelty, or perhaps are sent to the almshouse, while the mothers give themselves up to guilt and infamy.

But we will not affect to conceal that hundreds, perhaps thousands of them, are the daughters of the ignorant, depraved, and vicious part of our population, trained up without culture of any kind, amidst the contagion of evil example, and enter upon a life of prostitution for the gratification of their unbridled passions, and become harlots altogether by choice. These have a short career, generally dying of the effects of intemperance and pollution, soon after entering upon this road to ruin.

Without attempting to protract these loathsome details, or offering comment which we deem unnecessary, we would here present the result of our observation, in reference to the effects of this course of life upon the wretched females themselves. Soon after they begin their vicious indulgence, in a drunken frolic, at the dance-house, or the theatre, or in the street, they become involved in riotous conduct, are arrested and sent to the watchhouse, whence they are committed to the Penitentiary for sixty days. This penance is most generally unproductive, for on their discharge they are eagerly sought for by the

former companions of their guilt, and return to their crimes. Soon they are overtaken by that disease, the judicial visitation of Heaven for the sin of uncleanness, and are presently found in the Almshouse Hospital, where, for weeks together, the deaths among them are said to average nearly one every day. Indeed it is evident in this city, as elsewhere long since shown, that among those who commence a life of prostitution early, from three to five years is the average period of their existence; for intemperance and pollution rapidly hurry them into the grave, a signal proof of the declaration, "that the wicked shall not live out half their days."

Now, in view of these melancholy truths, as painful to relate as they are to hear, and presenting a portrait of moral death, amidst the blaze of Gospel light with which our city is favoured, is there not enough to awaken compassion and zeal in the heart of every individual who fears God and loves his neighbour; *compassion* to snatch the wretched victims of vice from the sorrows they are preparing for themselves; and *zeal*, to step, as it were, between the living and the dead, to stay the plague which assails the very vitals of society?

It is scarcely necessary to declare, so well known is the fact, that in this vast city, multitudes of young creatures are continually deluded, inveigled, enticed, or surprised into the path of ruin, by means of the vilest artifices, of whom it may truly be said, in the language of Dr. Johnson, that their wretched condition "is as much their *misfortune as their fault.*" It is a lamentable fact, that men are the original cause of the evil complained of; yet it is but too true, that women take their revenge a hundred fold. Seductions of females amongst us are often attended with peculiar aggravations, and the abandoned of both sexes are reciprocally the tempters of the virtuous. But it is clearly ascertained, that bad women multiply the

seduction of heedless youth, more rapidly than bad men seduce modest women. A few of these courtezans suffice to corrupt whole cities; and there can be no doubt that some insinuating prostitutes have initiated more young men into these destructive ways, than the most abandoned rakes have debauched virgins during their whole lives. So that, though the latter deserve execration and great severity, yet the grand effort of those who would promote reformation, should be directed to arresting, and, if possible, reclaiming, those wretched females, who are the pest and nuisance of society, though equally the objects of our compassion and abhorrence.

In a former part of this report, we have hinted at the cruelty with which very many of these guilty and unfortunate girls are treated, by those in whose houses they are kept, in a state worse than Algerine slavery. In many of the houses, some broken-down rake is kept by the women who board the girls, in the double capacity of pimp and bully, or house-dog. When any benevolent person visits the house for the purpose of persuading the females to leave their sinful courses, this vagabond interferes, and either compels the visitor to leave the house, or forcibly conveys the girls into another apartment. If a girl shows a desire to reform, drugs are given her in her drink to stupify her senses, and she is often cruelly beaten by this monster in the form of a man.

Another means practised by the wretches who keep many of these houses of ill-fame to retain the girls whose ruin their arts have accomplished, is to own the clothes they wear, and when one wishes to go, she has no clothes; and even when they have clothes of their own, their mistresses will often forcibly detain them under the pretext of debt, numerous instances of which have come to our knowledge. When, as is often the case, the clothes worn by the girls belong to the keeper of the house, the wages of their

iniquity is also withheld from them, they receiving only their board, and the liquor, which is freely given, to make them contented with their cruel bondage.

Many of these houses are provided throughout with hired furniture, and often of an elegant kind. We have the names and residence of men in this city, who follow this low business, hiring out furniture by the week, at extravagant prices, to such houses.

Another fact, as sustained by abundant proof in our possession, and one in which every class of the community is interested, is, that there are hundreds, if not thousands, of female domestics in this city, who serve in respectable families, who visit the houses of assignation at convenient intervals, sometimes nightly, and by returning in tolerable season, escape detection by a lie in their mouths, and mingle with the daughters in the families where they live, passing for virtuous women. One of these, who has forsaken her evil ways, states that she met one man every Tuesday night, and another every Friday night, for months together, without missing a single night, and without ever incurring suspicion.

I knew another case. A widow had two children. She was a cook, and received six dollars a month for her services. The board of her two children cost eight dollars a month. She went to a house of ill-fame, received by vice the additional means necessary to board her children and to clothe herself. She was received into the New York Magdalen Asylum, and her children were sent to the almshouse. Again she abandoned herself to vice, and cared no more for her little ones.

I know two *respectable* females, sisters, who have diligently sewed on fine linen since the year 1822, and they conjointly made about one hundred dollars a year. The rent of their dwelling costs, perhaps, sixty-five dollars a year. On a certain occasion they were sent for by a mi-

nister's wife, to sew for her, but were informed that they must do it for less than the regular price, or others would be employed. "Oh! Mr. M'Dowall," said one of them to me, "the face of the poor is ground to the earth. Poor females cannot procure for their labour the means of subsistence, and they turn out on the town to get food, and raiment, and lodgings." Thus, in the anguish of her heart, spoke a distressed, but virtuous seamstress.

A *gentleman* (!) in this city (New York), accustomed to visit a house of ill-fame, told the procuress, that he wished her to obtain for him a girl who had never been seduced. She promised to do so, and inform him when she succeeded. After a few weeks, one Sabbath evening, he received a note from the procuress, informing him that a person had been obtained. He repaired to the house and to the chamber where the girl was. There he found his own daughter, a lovely girl, in the morning of life. Horror-struck, he exclaimed, "Good heavens! my daughter, is this *you?* How came you *here?*" "I came to see these paintings," said she: "how came you here, Pa?" He took her in his carriage, and returned home. On their way home, he inquired by what art she had been betrayed into that house. "Why," said she, "the lady who owns the house, has for several Sabbaths taken a pew near ours at the church. On the first Sabbath, she bowed to me; on the next she spoke, and inquired respecting my health. After a few more Sabbaths, she conversed freely with me, and asked me if I was fond of paintings. Having replied in the affirmative, she invited me to ride home with her at some future period, and see a collection she had. To-day she came with her carriage, and renewed the request. I went; and was amusing myself with the paintings when you came in." The poor girl did not yet know the character of the house, nor the de-

struction from which she had been rescued by an *adulterous father.*

Whence are these females? The country has a deep interest in the matter. About four-fifths of each city's profligates, are from the interior towns of its own and the neighbouring states and foreign countries, as is clearly shown by this fact:—Of sixty-seven women received into the New York Magdalen Asylum, fourteen were natives of New York city, fourteen were natives of the interior towns of this state, eighteen were natives of the circumjacent states in the following proportions:—four from New Jersey, four from Pennsylvania, three from Massachusetts, three from Connecticut, two from Rhode Island, one from Maryland, one from Virginia, and twenty-one were natives of foreign countries in the following proportions:—twelve from Ireland, four from England, one from Scotland, one from France, one from Germany, one from Nova Scotia, and one from Canada.

Houses of prostitution.—One gentleman in this city has a list of two hundred and twenty brothels in New York. Forty-eight, or about one-fifth of them, are places of assignation: one hundred and seventy-two are boarding houses, in which there are seven hundred women. Another gentleman has a list, on which there are nearly three hundred houses. He thinks he is able to complete it at four hundred; and it is my opinion that he can do it. I know houses of ill-fame in this city, which are on neither of those lists. On the supposition, then, that there are five hundred houses of this description in New York, (and I believe that that is as few as there are), we should have a line of houses, were they all set on one side of Broadway, reaching from its beginning to its end, a distance of about two and a half miles. But it is not material, whether there are one hundred houses, or five hundred, or one thousand,

since the existence of such houses is not denied. From the very nature of the case it is almost, or quite, impossible to institute so rigid a moral police as to detect every house of the kind. That these houses are numerous, will not be disputed by those who are qualified to express an opinion on the subject.

These two hundred and twenty (or five hundred) houses are located not in one neighbourhood, but are dispersed through the city.

Assignation houses.—Are buildings whose rooms are fitted to lodge, for the night, or an hour, any lewd man and woman who go there and pay one dollar for a little while, or two dollars for the night. Sometimes a house can be found where the charges are one half less. These houses are seldom occupied by more than one or two persons; and that person is sometimes a man. To these private places, genteel in their outward appearance, resort, by day and by night, men and boys, girls and women, of all ages and colours, married and single, to commit fornication. The amount of wickedness committed in assignation houses, is not easily ascertained. It is enormous, as the following fact shows. Some years since, a young female was decoyed into one of them by a base fellow, who committed violence upon her person. The mistress was indicted, and sentenced to six months' imprisonment in the city penitentiary for keeping the establishment. To keep her house open while she was in the prison, a person was hired by her to live in it. De Witt Clinton being governor of the state, a lawyer undertook to procure from him a pardon for her, and obtained it forty days before the six months expired. This pardon cost her 1,450 dollars. That money was made at her house while she was in the penitentiary; and her visitors paid but fifty cents a pair for an hour's entertainment, or one dollar for an evening's accommodation. There were, therefore,

during one hundred and forty-two days, 1,450 pairs lodged all night in her house, or 2,900 pairs for an hour at a time; that is, ten couple a night, or twenty couple for a shorter period, giving for the year 3,650 night's lodging, or 7,300 for a less time. This is but one house. On the list of the gentleman to whom I alluded, there are forty-eight houses of this class. And my opinion is, that there are not less than one hundred in the city.

Accurate calculations cannot be made; but though there is something indefinite about the whole matter, enough is known to prove, that in these assignation houses is committed an enormous amount of impurity. A pure God looks with abhorrence upon it. The fires of his wrath will be kindled against the polluted despisers of his law, "Thou shalt not commit adultery."

Boarding houses.—On the list of two and twenty brothels, one hundred and seventy-two are kept to board harlots. If there are five hundred brothels in the city, then about four hundred of them are boarding-houses for women. There are usually from five to ten females in each house. In some houses there are more, in others less. In the one hundred and seventy-two houses there were about seven hundred prostitutes. If there are in the city four hundred boarding-houses, on an average having only five boarders, there are 2,000 female furies in them. To these add those who visit houses of assignation, and say whether the Magdalen Report has not some plausibility of truth in its statement, that "the number of females in this city who abandon themselves to prostitution, is not less than 10,000?" And on the Magdalen Committee which issued it, there were two distinguished physicians in extensive practice in New York.

Some of these houses are technically called "*genteel*," and are locked up, and none but *gentlemen* are admitted into them. The others are the low hovels, where admis-

sion is given to all classes, even to the off-scouring of almshouses, hospitals, prisons, and nations.

Men (rakes) board in these houses. Each house usually has one man, and some have three or four. When there is but one man the mistress keeps him. When there are more, they are kept in part, or wholly, by the girls. They are young men ; and some of them are said to be the sons of some of the first families in the city and country. I have seen men there who had received a collegiate education. Indeed, wholesale merchants have become panders in a brothel, and their children died in an almshouse. Disgraced and impoverished by profligacy, gambling, theatre-going, and intemperance, their relatives disowned and cast them off. Idle, dissipated, without character, and without friends, they are compelled to steal, and to be the pimps of harlots, who board and clothe them in the finest broad cloth, furnish them with pocket-money, and send them to associate with their former companions, and to mingle in society with merchants, and clerks, and gentlemen's sons, and boarders at public houses, and with sportsmen, and gamblers, at gambling-houses, with men at the theatre, circus, nine-pin alley, roulette-table, porter-houses, and other places of resort.

It is the business of these men to seduce other men from virtue, and to conduct them to their mistresses, or to the girls they board.

Aside from slothfulness and a love of vice, a kind of necessity growing out of their situation and loss of self-respect, urges them to pursue this course. The community have no confidence in them, and their spirits are so broken, that they cannot summon the resolution required to free themselves from their horrid state.

Immeasurable is the pernicious influence of these men. Polished in their manners, easy and agreeable in their conversation, the unwary by them are often deceived and

beguiled, and led to ruin. Associated with these are some young men possessing splendid fortunes, and they sleep not except they have done mischief, and their sleep is taken away unless they cause some to fall. They eat the bread of wickedness, and drink the wine of violence. They associate troops of poorer youth with them, and pay all the expenses of riotous living. By means of whorish women they are brought to a piece of bread, and get a wound and dishonour—a reproach that shall not be wiped away. The blacklegs, knucklers, and gamblers, either associate with, or belong to this class of persons.

In the lowest houses, the petty thieves of the city uniformly mingle with the women there. "Loveculls" is the familiar name the women give them. These men steal for a living. Their booty is sometimes divided with the women. They also act as house-guards, performing the office of mastiffs. They beat the women, and often abuse those who enter their dwellings to rescue the females. Here the desperadoes of society meet.

Corruption of children—necessity of maternal vigilance.—A multitude of children are in the brothels. Parents with large families, widows with several little ones around them, unmarried women with one child, either keep such houses or board in them. Orphans are sometimes taken by the bawds and reared to puberty. In three minutes, on one Sabbath-day, I counted 111 children playing in the streets, running through one of the most infamous parts of the city. These little ones came out of the nests of vice, and the houses adjacent to them. Thousands of children in this city daily witness the most degrading scenes. They eat, they drink, they converse, they sleep with the profligate, and see, and hear, and practise the vilest vices. The mass of them probably do know and not know, that licentiousness is sin. Girls and boys not eleven years old are contaminated. The records of the

House of Refuge will probably place this fact beyond a doubt. Cases have occurred in a public hospital in this city, which render the assertion indisputable. Minute observation made in some of our streets, will convince any man that it is true.

Some children in some of the public schools, are gathered out of these houses. Several schools are located in the most polluted neighbourhoods of the city. The scholars pass by many of those places. Some of the boys out of vicious families play in the park, and in other open squares. In the schools, and in the parks, and in the streets, the children converse about the common occurrences and business in these dens. Children passing from school often stop and look in at the windows and doors, and see, and listen, and converse with the little girls and boys there, and then with one another, about the things they saw and heard at these doors and windows.

These children mingle with other children, and tell them all they know, and these communicate it to others, and thus this polluted intelligence passes from child to child, until it often reaches the nurseries of the rich and the pious, and pollutes their imaginations, and poisons their moral feelings. And yet parents, whom God commands diligently to instruct their children in all things contained in his word, feel and say, that children ought not to receive any instruction on this subject. But Solomon called his son to the window and showed him a harlot in the street, and informed him how she seduced the youth near her. He showed his son the harlot leading the young man off to her chamber. Then he tells his son the consequences, and leaves the whole matter to press on the mind of his child, and declares that through knowledge his son should be saved.

There is another thing which mothers must look at until their hearts ache, and their hands and prayers remove it.

Yes, mothers, you must know that there are thousands of children in this city, growing up to manhood and to womanhood in, or in the vicinity and under the influence of, places given up to every form of iniquity. Gideon Lee, Esq. said, (as may be seen by a document published by the New-York Society for the promotion of knowledge and industry), that there are from 10,000 to 13,000 children in this city who do not, though of proper ages, attend public schools, and these, in the main, grow up in ignorance and vice. Most of them live in, or near abandoned parts of the city. They see, and hear of, and practise the sin, or daily mingle in play and social intercourse, with polluted children and youth giving them lessons. Look at the fact, that so many are growing up under this corrupt influence, and reflect that each one of these may be supposed to associate with at least one other child from other parts of the city, and we have an aggregate of nearly 30,000 city youth contaminated by licentiousness. And where is the child, thus exposed, that can escape the stain?

Why, I once went into a New York Sabbath school-room, connected with one of our richest and most respectable congregations, and there saw, upon the walls, and cut into the plaster, engravings of the most licentious tendency. With these characters in and on the walls of that room, the teachers and the scholars pursued the business of the school. Ought not these facts to be exposed? Ought they not to be known; first, that those children which are comparatively pure, may be preserved from a further degradation; and secondly, that combined and powerful "action against the prevailing licentiousness of the day," may be put forth to rescue degraded children, living in brothels?

I wish to call the attention of mothers to this subject. Facts might be stated. The son of a minister is the ruined monument of this iniquity. The daughter of a minister

recently died a victim to licentiousness. The daughter of another minister fell into the sin, and then seduced her own sister. The daughter of a third minister kept a house of ill-fame. The son of an elder came to the city, was led astray by corrupt youth, and is now an outcast and a vagabond. Cases might be multiplied; but enough are given to show, that the security of virtuous children requires that this vice should be exposed. And without its exposure, there is no hope that means will be used to rescue the vicious. Wherefore, I believe the diffusion of light on the subject is indispensable.

Their character.—The character of the abandoned is darker than the worst portrait the ablest pen can draft. Their imaginations are defiled, and their minds filled with the vilest affections and the deadliest passions. Their manners, fashions, language, and actions are degrading and mortal. In the arts and habitual practice of deceiving, they are skilled to a degree that is almost incredible. For lying, they are notorious. Very seldom are they known by their real names. They are malevolent, cruel, and revengeful to a degree, that often shocks those who witness their conduct. "They are without excuse, because that when they knew God they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools; and changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness, through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections. For even their women did change the

natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the women, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was meet. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient: Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant-breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who, knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death; not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them."

The Sabbath-day profaned.—But to dwell no longer on the combination of wickedness in their character, single out for observation the Sabbath-day, and see how efficient is the ministry of hell in the temples of perdition, when the gospel of mercy is speaking in the churches. At the very hour in the morning, afternoon, and evening of every Lord's-day, when the people of God assemble for religious worship, then in an especial manner do the children of the wicked one meet in troops at harlots' houses. At night, these houses are thronged with men and boys. But on the Sabbath-day and evening they are filled to overflowing. Between Saturday night and Monday morning there is more iniquity committed in these dens, than in any other two, or perhaps four, days of the week. On the Sabbath-day the rooms are often so filled with visitors that there is no place for them to sit down; and on that account, many are refused admission at the doors. One Sabbath evening, in half-an-hour, I counted fifteen men who entered and

eleven who came out of one house in which there were but six or seven women; and during that same half-hour, I saw several troops, of from three to seven men in each troop, sent off from another house but two doors distant from it, because, as the mistress, who looked out at the window, said, the house was so full that they could not then be received, but should be admitted if they would return in fifteen or twenty minutes. Such occurrences are not rare; they happen every week, not at every house, but at several of them.

Parties of pleasure are made up of these persons, who visit places of public resort, as gardens, parks, open squares, &c., and ride into the suburbs of the city, and into the country, in gigs, chaises and steam-boats. Men from the country often come to the city and spend the Sabbath in these seats of Satan. Remind them that they must come to judgment, and immediately they attack the preacher as a conspirator against the liberty and independence of the country, as one of the party attempting to unite church and state, to promote priestcraft, and the like. Thus it is, that these men do not remember the Sabbath-day, to keep it holy.

Murder committed.—The commission of most murders is connected with, or results directly from the breach of the seventh commandment. A multitude of cases is on record in the Bible. Hamor, and Shechem, and all the males in their city were slain in consequence of Dinah's being dishonoured. Because Amnon defiled his sister Tamar, Absalom slew him. Uriah was put in the hottest part of the battle, and left there to be slain, that David might conceal his infamous crime. Herod cut off the head of John the Baptist, to appease the malice of the woman with whom it was unlawful for that prince to live. The history of the world is replete with blood, shed by reason of adultery. Wars have been waged by it; duels have been fought;

assassinations committed; poisons given, and abortions effected.

So many persons die in the places of abandonment, and their remains are hurried to the grave so rapidly, and so little investigation of the causes of their deaths is made, that nothing definite and satisfactory can be said sbout the means by which they come to their end. Intemperance, consumption, or an inflammation of the bowels, stomach, or liver, or some other disease is said to have destroyed the person; and further inquiries are not made. About two years since, I saw a dead man in one of these places. The women said that on the previous evening there was fighting in the room, and that fair play had not been shown to the man. Before I left the house, an officer came to it, inquired the name, age, time, and cause of his death, and then left the place, saying, that the corpse should be removed in an hour. In the fall of 1830, a young man went to one of these houses in Orange-street to spend the evening, and at midnight the men of the house returned home from a thieving rout, and robbed the youth of his watch, money, and clothes, and blindfolded him and beat him till blood flowed freely. He fell on the floor, and on it lay nearly naked and motionless. The men carried him away. In the fight, a wound was inflicted on the head of the mistress, who took refuge in the New York Magdalen Asylum, whence she went on the town again, and thence to prison.

Frightful visions disturbed her repose in the Asylum. She seemed, in her sleep, to see a man covered in blood, and with his throat cut. Quietude at night but few of the inmates of the Asylum enjoyed. Fear, deep and powerful, shook each one, and some of them could not rest at all. One woman confessed that she had been the cause of the death of two or three grown persons. The consciousness of having shed blood troubled them.

Suicide.—Life is a burden to these wretched women. Their hopes of happiness and respectability in life are blasted. Death, they welcome as the harbinger of rest. The majority of them have repeatedly and voluntarily taken poison, but its effects, in many instances, have been obviated by medical aid timely called to their relief. One fatal case I shall never forget. It was that of a young female, whose funeral services I was requested to perform. As I entered her room, filled with degraded persons, black blood dropped from her coffin. Its lid was fastened, and the persons present said, that the corpse had a terrific appearance, and could not be shown to any individual. Thus, in a brothel, perished by her own hand a woman seduced to ignoble living by a man respected in the community. The multitude of cases of this description that have come to my knowledge, induce me to believe that nearly one hundred suicides a-year are effected among them in this city. It is true, that the city register of deaths gives few or no accounts of them. Ignorance of the cases, or policy, may be the reason.

Infanticide.—Thousands of children are murdered. Dead infants are frequently found; sometimes in privies, wells, sewers, ponds, docks, streets, open fields, and in other places And the criminal records of the country prove the fact, that mothers have slain their recently born infants; and reclaimed prostitutes have stated, that they have done the criminal deed. One of them told me, that she had destroyed five of her own offspring. Another said that she had destroyed three, and several admitted that they had individually put one to death. Will not blood be found in the hands of many a parent? Have no maiden mothers laid violent hands, on the fruits of illicit love? Are fathers guiltless in this matter? Tales that would make men's ears tingle can be told. Do men offer physicians large sums of money to prevent propagation?

A man, no matter where, called on a doctor, and proffered five hundred dollars for the accomplishment of such a deed; but that physician was an honourable man, and he told the gentleman that if the child was not born, he would expose the father. The child was born, but not before its parents were married.

Abortions.—There are mothers who, in innumerable instances, resort to unnatural means to destroy those whom they are about to bring into being. To conceal from the community their shame, or to free themselves from the anxiety, expense, and labour of rearing their children, this crime is committed, and the accusation of guilty consciences is hushed by persuading themselves that it is better for their offspring to die thus early, than to be born to an inheritance of shame and poverty. Severe legislative enactments exist against those who administer drugs to do this wicked work. But the thing is daily done in defiance of penalties. And advertisements of medicinal preparations recommended as "a complete preventive of propagation," are circulated in this city to let persons know how and where the antidote to pregnancy may be had. The fact that such a medicine is styled a "patent," and has an agent, to be found at a given place, is evidence of the fact, that abortions are extensively effected. Indeed, it is reported by reformed women, that in some houses of prostitution, it is a common practice every three months, to use means preventive of progeny.

The most serious evils usually come upon those guilty wretches, who dare to commit this unnatural and horrible crime. Inflammation ensues, and where death does not speedily follow, trains of disease often arise and affect the culprits, until they are laid in the grave.

Intemperance.—Intemperance and prostitution, like the heart, its arteries, and veins, are inseparably connected. The Bible regards the vices of drunkenness and adultery

as united. "Look not thou upon the wine when it is red—thine eyes shall behold strange women."—Prov. xxiii. 31, 33. "When I had fed them to the full, they then committed adultery, and assembled themselves by troops in the harlots' houses."—Jer. v. 7. "Let us walk honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkenness, nor in chambering and wantonness."—Rom. xiii. 13. "For the time past of our lives may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings."—1 Pet. i. 3. "Whoremongers and adulterers, God will judge."—Heb. xiii. 4. "For this ye know, that no whoremonger nor unclean person hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and God."—Eph. v. 19. "Behold this was the iniquity of thy sister Sodom, pride, fulness of bread and abundance of idleness was in her."—Ezek. xvi. 49. "He (Josiah) brake down the houses of the Sodomites, that were by the house of the Lord."—2 Kings xxiii. 7. "Do not prostitute thy daughter to cause her to be a whore, lest the land fall to whoredom, and the land become full of wickedness."—Jer. v. 7. "Whoredom and wine and new wine take away the heart."—Hos. iv. 11. "Be not deceived, neither fornicators nor drunkards shall inherit the kingdom of God." 1 Cor. vi. 9, 10. "The works of the flesh are manifest, which are these, adultery, fornication, uncleanness, and lasciviousness, of the which I tell you before as I have also told you in the time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God."—Gal. v. 19, 21.

The connexion of intemperance and prostitution appears in the houses where alcoholic liquors are vended, and chastity is sold at a price. There are grocers in this city, who own houses which they not only regularly, from year to year, rent to bawds, but also supply with provisions and ardent spirits. Moreover, there are several of our licensed 3,000 dram-shops, actually filled with profligate women.

In addition to these 3,000 grog-shops, every unchaste house is a place of intemperance. Liquor without license is sold in all of them. Almost all impure females are intemperate, and the majority of them are drunkards. Of sixty-seven once under my care, there was not one temperate woman. To ascertain whether intemperance led them into fornication, or fornication into intemperance, I put this question to each of them,—Did liquor lead you into this vice? Sixty-six unhesitatingly replied, "No; we first lost our virtue. To enliven our feelings, and ease the heavy reproaches of guilty consciences, we used ardent spirits." The other woman hesitated, and then said, that intemperance, brought on by domestic troubles, led her astray. She declined giving an answer to the question, —Did not conjugal infidelity bring on domestic trouble, and drive you to the drunkard's cups?

A careful investigation of this subject leads me to believe, that in a large portion of this city, male drunkards were coined in houses of fornication. Young men of sober habits are introduced in these craters of the bottomless pit. To please their misses, cordials are purchased, and all unite in drinking them. Cards, dice, dominoes, &c. are brought in, and it is not civil to refuse a game. The loser treats the company. A second game is proposed, and none are allowed to refuse a share in it. They play for liquor and drink it, and play again, and then repeat the draught; and the harlots, urged on by their avaricious, bloody keepers, influence the man to repeat their games and drinking bouts, until the company is intoxicated, and the panders and the prostitutes pick the fornicators' pockets, and put them into the street. These men having once leaped the boundary of virtue, continue to press onward in the path of death, waxing worse and worse in the society of gamblers, and drunkards, and thieves. The contagion of this example, introducing intemperance and gambling,

spreads through the better circles which these men meet. Thus sinners destroy much good.

Sailor boarding-houses and the houses of fornication are nearly identical terms. The son of the ocean takes his lodgings; he is robbed and turned into the street; and thence is carried to the hospital, or goes on board another ship, on which he dies of the disease received by consorting with the vile, and is cast into the deep waters. It is an awful fact, that the millions of dollars sailors earn, are principally expended in the maintenance of city vices. Friends of the sailor cannot bless him more than by extirpating stews and dram shops. If they were closed, then might the seaman sing upon the wave, and old age and firm health be enjoyed by thousands, who now fall in the freshness of their boyhood.

Licentiousness encourages the establishment of theatres and opera houses.—Such buildings are consecrated to the dissemination of loose principles in morals, and the promotion of every infamous vice. Examine their tragedies, comedies, and songs; witness their performances on the stage; see the classes of persons they congregate; listen to their blasphemy and their obscenity; behold the thieving and fighting, and the array of constables in them. Mark their galleries and punch rooms, devoted exclusively to harlots and to rakes—their dram shops and lobbies, and groups of profligate supernumeraries, and then say is not a theatre a brothel—a tippling house—a thieving establishment—a riotous place—a place for the manufacture and sport of prostitutes and cut-throats? And will ladies, virtuous, accomplished ladies, longer visit a theatre, and laud its praises? Let the theatre be avoided, for it leads "*to the pit.*" Its true character is drawn on its cellar doors, the entrance to the place for those who cannot afford to pay for a box, in these words, "TO THE PIT." Surely it is the way "to the pit," for the

theatre and houses of ill-fame are linked together by mutual interests and mutual pursuits. The morals of a theatre and the morals of a brothel are identically the same. But "it is a good school of human nature," says the objector. Yes, it is true, that it is a good place to obtain a knowledge of human nature, as exhibited in the character of the vilest portion of both sexes. The lewd and the profane, the intemperate and the thieves, have the principal labour there to perform on its stage, in its pit, galleries, and punch-rooms. Who denies it? who doubts it? Are not the majority, or all, of the companies of stage-players loose in their morals, and irreligious and scoffing in their language? Do not captains and mates of vessels, and merchants and gentlemen visiting the city, and many of our own townsmen, retire from the theatre to assignation houses with loose women? Only look at, and about, and inside a theatre, and what do you see? You see a mighty mass of buildings devoted to vice; you see hacks before it at night, and men and women of the town coming and going in them, *to a good and jovial society where the delusions of religion have no place.* The street before it is lined with apple, cake, and oyster stands, about which clusters, a sooty rabble of boys, girls, men, and women. Several of the houses adjacent to it are used for eating cellars, dram-drinking, gambling, theft, fighting, and lewdness.

"But good people visit the theatre." Yes, and are thereby partakers in other men's sins. Unless they withdraw their countenance from this school of immorality, they will perish in iniquity.

"It is a place of amusement." Yes; and to visit it little girls prostitute themselves for money, and boys steal. One hundred and fifty boys and girls, out of six hundred and ninety in the House of Refuge, were guilty of theft and impurity to get a seat in the theatre. The managers

of that noble charity say, they "cannot well avoid again calling the attention of those who may favour their report with a perusal, to the two most fertile sources of juvenile profligacy and crime—the theatres and grog-shops. Very few are the instances on their books, which do not go to demonstrate, that the earliest departure from honesty and filial duty, is immediately connected with, if it does not result from, the allurements of those two capital sources of *public amusements*. They are emphatically the Scylla and Charybdis of the currents of life, to the youth of this metropolis. Could we abstract from the various incentives to evil which abound in the city, the vicious excitement produced by these places of resort; we know of nothing, which could be found as a substitute, that would be productive of half the amount of crime and misery, which so evidently result from them."

Licentiousness leads to stealing.—Harlots are thieves. They maintain that it is no sin to steal from their paramours, and their keepers urge them to pick the libertines' pockets. They learned to rob men, not before, but after, they were cast out of virtuous society.

But the females alone are not chargeable with this crime, for men, straitened for means to indulge in the city round of carnal pleasures, rob others to enable them to gratify their licentious desires. Thus sons, clerks, and apprentices, unhesitatingly take money or goods, or both, to enable them to pursue their course. One case will illustrate it. A young man in this city, a Sabbath-school teacher, a member of a Christian church, and a clerk in a store, did steal money and goods from his employer to the amount of nearly a thousand dollars, to keep a harlot, whom I have laboured to rescue from the wailings of perdition. This fact, being known to the church of which he was a member, means to reclaim him were used, but

without any good effect, and he was excommunicated. May not such facts account for the failure of some merchants supposed to have been doing good business? A gentleman in Newark, N. J., told me that he had, during the last fourteen years, lost not less than twenty thousand dollars by profligate men taken into his service.

When there is no confidence in the honesty of men and women, they cannot find employment; and, being poor, they must live by vice, or reform. Reformation is not very frequent, and their ingenuity and intelligence are employed in devising ways and means whereby they can subsist. Hence the community is filled with counterfeiters, and gamblers, and thieves, and robbers, and highwaymen, and pirates, and murderers.

The majority of these outlaws were once respected in society. But lust indulged, intemperate habits formed, and fraudulent deeds committed, have degraded them to a level with the vilest in the abandoned community, and now, not being admitted into our dwellings, and stores, and workhouses, they do, by violence and stratagem, live by picking pockets at theatres, exchanges, post-offices, &c., breaking into houses, stores, and other places, secure to themselves the means of subsistence. They are idle, and yet they are fed. The women persuade each other to pick the pockets of their visitors, and the mistresses promise to assist them in secreting the booty. This truth is illustrated at the police-office in hundreds of instances, where men call on the magistrates to recover their watches and money stolen at brothels. I had a woman in my family who stole the watch and pocket-book of a sea-captain. She was convicted and sent to prison. I had another woman in my family who robbed a country gentleman of eight hundred dollars. She was convicted, and sentenced to three years' confinement in the state prison. A butcher

had four hundred dollars with him when he paid his addresses to such ladies, and on retiring from their company he was pennyless. An ex-alderman advised him to do nothing about the matter, as he would be exposed to the scorn of the virtuous. And he had wisdom enough to bear the loss, and say no more about it.

Stealing is reduced to a science, and thousands follow the art for a livelihood. Among the thieves there are different gradations of rank, as blacklegs, knucklers, sixties, spades, forties, highbinders, &c., &c. The first class appear like gentlemen, and pass as such in the crowd, on the steam-boat, stage, hotel, and exchange. They pass from city to city, rob banks, steal large sums of money, exchange trunks at boarding-houses, and the like. They scorn a petty thief, and will not associate with him. The knucklers and counterfeiters may be classed with the blacklegs. Among the counterfeiters, there is a party whose business it is to sell the spurious bills as such, to harlots and others in the brothels. The sixties are a class of thieves composed of apprentices, mechanics, and others, who labour during the day-time and steal at night. They are divided into regular companies, over each of which is a captain. The society has a president, and all its members are banded together by an oath of secrecy. They have a dialect of their own, and, like freemasons, can interchange ideas undiscovered by bystanders. Their booty is common property, and when disposed of, each thief receives his stipulated portion. Their places of conclave are brothels, and harlots are sometimes admitted into the fraternity. The spades are but a small club of thieves, of whom I have learned but little. The forties are but petty thieves of the city, and the most of them have been repeatedly in the penitentiary. There is but little concert among them. Each seizes what he can, and appropriates it to his own

use. The police is well acquainted with the most of these persons. The highbinders are a party of the forties, and, bravado-like, are ready for any assault. They annoyed my residence, in time past, to such a degree, that I had to call on the civil magistrate for protection.

The children of the brothel are trained to steal. This truth was clearly developed in the Infant and Sabbath Schools at the Five Points; for the little scholars used to purloin from each other their hats, and bonnets, and cakes, and from the school-room whatever they could secretly convey away. The reports of the House of Refuge give cases proving it.

Licentiousness is an inexorable tax-gatherer.—The *probable* cost of the vice is all that I shall now attempt to estimate. I cannot, at present, enter into minute calculations, and shall therefore present the general result of several computations, which is this, that it costs this city and vicinity more than 12,000,000 dollars annually, that is, more than 33,000 dollars a day. Thus 10,000 harlots' loss of labour, 1,040,000 dollars; rents, 200,000 dollars; courts, prisons, hospitals, and almshouses, 300,000 dollars; liquor, &c., purchased by their paramours, 5,475,000 dollars; their clothes, theatre tickets, coach hire, wines, spirituous liquors, physicians' bills, and incidental expenses, 3,250,000 dollars; board, 1,625,000 dollars; thefts, 1,000,000 dollars. If any of the items of expense stated here are too large, sufficient offsets may be found in the omission of charges that ought to have been made. I am aware that incredulity seems to be engraven on the very face of this bill; but I am persuaded that it approximates the truth.

Effects of licentiousness on men's intellects, morals, and bodies.—Conclusions as to the effects of this vice on men are not to be drawn from those libertines whose spirits

are lively, and whose powers are but little impaired. These are only commencing the downward course. Examine a few older practitioners: they are the social spirits of a former day. Listen to their light and fulsome conversation; see their silly smiles; mark their wanton attitudes and actions; notice their incapability for business, and their vacuity of look, manners, and actions. Go to the lunatic asylum, and there see the effects of lewdness on the intellects of human beings. Visit the brothel, dram-shop, gambling table, and theatre, and listen to the ribaldry and blasphemy there, and you will perceive its effects upon the moral feelings. But the fruits of licentiousness on the intellectual and moral feelings of men were noticed in the preceding part of this discourse. It now remains to notice its doings upon flesh and bones.

Aside from the poisonous work of alcohol, (for drunkards are licentious), this vice does strange havoc in human bodies. It marks the countenance. The eyes of some loose persons are covered either with a thin or a thick whitish fluid. Occasionally they have a limpid brightness, but oftener a dull, heavy, vicious appearance, and are started forward in their sockets. A peculiar, seducing witchery plays in the eyes rolling and staring on every person passing along the streets. They are "eyes full of adultery, that cannot cease from sinning, beguiling unstable souls." The cheeks and chins of some persons have a loose and oily texture and glistening appearance, not very unlike that of a fat goose dressed for the spit; and some cheeks seem as if they would melt. The nose, as the drunkard's, is sometimes edged and tipped with a greasy, fiery, pimpled appearance. There also is often a pale languor in the visage, sometimes tinged, as in consumptive cases, with a hectic flush, around and beneath which are seen weakness and lines of a whitish colour. Inflamma-

tion ensues; pimples, carbuncles, blisters, and pustules rise up on the face, forehead, nose, chin, throat, and palate. Suppuration having taken place, one little sore, as in cases of small-pox, joins to another, and often covers a large part or the whole of the countenance. The skin on the forehead and throat, and the cheeks, and the lips sometimes severely suffer. The end of the nose is often eaten away, and the palate and tonsils are frequently nearly devoured. The eye-sight is not seldom entirely and for ever ruined, and large masses of flesh rotted off the arms, shoulders, legs, and other portions of the body, as is very forcibly expressed in the twenty-seventh verse of the fifth chapter of the Book of Numbers. The intestines are often filled with syphilitic sores, the envelope of the heart itself not escaping the pervading poison. Even blood-vessels, nerves, and bones are attacked and destroyed by it.

"Many thought her sound
And healthy at the heart; but thought amiss;
For she was full of all disease: her bones
Were rotten: Consumption licked her blood, and drank
Her marrow up; her breath smelled mortally;
And in her bowels plague and fever lurk'd;
And in her very heart, and reins of life,
Corruption's worm gnawed greedily unseen."

There is not a bone, muscle, sinew, nerve, or blood-vessel in the human system that can escape its effects. It attacks both sexes, and, in some cases, is fatal the first time. It is true, that skilful hands timely applying true remedies to those abstaining from vicious indulgences, can remove the pains, sores, ulcers, and venereal virus of the complaint from the body; but such cases are rare, for the washed sow loves to return to her wallowing in the mire. And where the first effects of this judgment on the impure pass off, the secondary consequences commonly set in with terrible power, as may be seen in all our large public hospitals, and in certain cases of individuals all over the land.

It engenders irremediable disorders, as consumptions of various kinds, pleurisy, rheumatism, scrofula, diseases of the nervous system, palsies, and incurable diseases of the stomach, liver, and bowels.

It is contagious, and has predisposed the bodies of thousands to other diseases, and they are, at this moment, pining away in disgrace, pain, poverty, persecution, and despair, a burden to themselves, a curse to the purity of public morals, and a bill of expense to the community.

I think I do not exceed the truth in asserting that this vice destroys more human beings than alcohol does; indeed, I have no doubt but much of the havoc in society, attributed to that poison of Arabian discovery, legitimately belongs to lewdness. Be this as it may; both conjointly operate on the profligate, and rationally account for the fact that the abandoned seldom attain to a great age. "The years of the wicked" are "shortened." See them as mown grass wilting under the fires of their vices, and in rapid succession falling into a premature grave. Many die in less than one year; some live two, others five, and ten, or fifteen years. The period of their existence (as profligates) varies, according to the difference in their physical constitutions, the excesses to which they abandon themselves, and other circumstances. But the mass of the most dissipated perish in three or five years; and their death does not diminish the number in the lewd hosts. Others, recently virtuous, ere they are gone, are ready to supply their places.

We have ascertained that the mischiefs of this enormous evil are greatly aggravated by the persons who keep the brothels and houses of assignation in this city, many of whom live by the prostitution of others under their roof, accumulate large property, as the wages of their iniquity, and yet boast of their own personal integrity, and place their children out of the reach, as they think, of this pesti-

ferous example. The price of boarding, paid by the abandoned women, in this city, to those who accommodate them, varies from three to fifteen dollars a-week, according to the style of their accommodations, but is generally five or six dollars per week for white women. The following is an attempt at estimating the probable expense, or aggregate amount of the annual cost of the 10,000 harlots in this city:—

For *boarding*	1st	class,	suppose	250,	at	15	drs.	per week,	3,750 drs.
"	"	2d	"	"	750,	at	10	" "	7,500
"	"	3d	"	"	2,000,	at	7	" "	14,000
"	"	4th	"	"	2,000,	at	3	" "	6,000
Expense of boarding paid by the whole per week,									31,250

Which multiplied by the number of weeks in the year, make the annual amount of nearly three millions of dollars!! being paid for the boarding alone of these unhappy daughters of infamy, in a single year.

Now, if we add to this the probable expense of clothes, theatre tickets, coach-hire, wines, and spirituous liquors, and other expenses incidental to their mode of life, which, as we learn from the best evidence, far exceeds the amount paid weekly for board, we think it a moderate estimate, when we express our conviction, that six millions of dollars are annually expended in this city by prostitutes, all of which, besides what many of them accumulate in the banks and other property, is paid to them by the guilty companions of their iniquity.

What an awful waste of property, apart from any higher consideration! and what proportion of this immense annual amount is honestly acquired by those who thus expend it, who can say? or rather, what proportion is robbed from parents, masters, and guardians, by the young men, clerks, apprentices, &c., who infest these sinks of abomination, who can estimate? More than half is doubtless paid them by silly and inexperienced youth, who have no

means of supporting their extravagance, but by embezzling or stealing the property of others, and who are made the easy dupes of the arts of these infatuating furies, whose syren song lulls conscience to sleep, and thus prepares for any and every crime.

We have ascertained from various sources, that each female of this class is visited, on the average, by three men or boys daily, and that each of them spend at least fifty cents for liquors, porter, &c., besides the sum paid to the companions of their guilt, and the infamous myrmidons who procure and keep them. This will show that of the ten million times these women are visited, by men, for the purposes of prostitution in the course of a year, five millions of dollars are expended in addition to the items included in the above estimate.

From the reformed women in the several asylums, it is ascertained that it is no uncommon thing for them to receive from ten to twenty dollars of a night, and frequently from Saturday night to Monday morning, they will receive fifteen to twenty-five men, and obtain, as their reward, from thirty to fifty dollars. These items will go far to sustain the justness of our former calculations, and are intended to afford some idea of the stupendous expense of this one single vice, the cause of so much pauperism and crime; filling our almshouses, hospitals, prisons, and penitentiaries, and destroying our race.

But what is all this waste of wealth compared with the ruin of the generation of young men, and the destruction of female purity? It is insignificant when compared to the overthrow of the peace of families, the premature dissolution of broken-hearted parents, the wretchedness and disgrace of community. But all this is as the dust in the balance, when weighed beside the loss of hundreds of thousands of immortal souls. All else is worse than worthless, when viewed in the light of the eternal world,

for " her house is the way to death, and her path lays hold on hell."

In the calculation of the foregoing expenses, the profits resulting from hourly and nightly intercourse are omitted, and, as it will be perceived, the mere expense alone of weekly support taken into consideration, with a view of arriving more correctly at an estimate of the annual sum expended in the support of 15,000 abandoned females. Adding now the sums of money received by those women who compose the number of 10,000, who are the most interesting of the 15,000, who receive promiscuous visits during the week, which cannot be less than ten dollars per week, it will be found to be 5,200,000—making, together with the amount indispensably necessary for their support, 8,504,600 dollars—foolishly and ridiculously squandered in the indulgence of a passion which, when gratified, only contributes to create new feelings and desires, which never find repose but in the voluptuous enjoyment of imaginary indulgence.

It cannot surely now be denied, that the sum annually paid into the hands of abandoned females in this city does amount to 8,504,600 dollars, when the statement which is now submitted is carefully examined by the reader. For my own part, I feel persuaded that the annual sum paid as a compensation for the wages of sin is more than ten million of dollars. Let me now beseech all readers, and conjure you to continue your holy and blessed work of reformation: let no power on this earth dissuade you from the performance of a duty, which not only regards the happiness of the soul in this life, but more especially its eternal happiness in a blissful eternity.

Expenditure.—In taking my leave for the present of this part of my subject, my heart begins to grow heavy, when I contemplate the nature and extent of the task which now presents itself. In looking over the fifth num-

ber of your journal, I find you have very considerably underrated the number of public brothels and assignation-houses in this city; and without travelling out of three streets to swell the number, I think, and am quite persuaded of the fact, that you will find as many houses of prostitution in Church, Chapel, and Center Streets as your correspondent alleges to be contained in the city. Now, Sir, the result of my search and inquiries is, "that there are six hundred and fifty public notorious houses of prostitution in this city, containing 3,250 women, whose appearance in the street renders it almost impossible for the observer to distinguish between them and the wives and daughters of our respectable citizens; about four hundred houses more contain 4,000 women, who in public are easily distinguished on account of the inferiority of their dress; these may be considered as not imposing more upon their friends than a half or a third of the expense which those who are so remarkable for their fashionable dress and good-living uniformly exact. Between lodgers composed of white and coloured women of ill-fame, there are 2,750; privateers in place are certainly not less than 2,000; married women who support sometimes their husbands, and generally families, 1,000; transient prostitutes, 1,000; and certainly not less than 1,000 who appear to wear the garb of innocence and virtue, but are, upon the whole, the best supporters of the assignation-houses.

In order, however, to render the above statement as comprehensive as possible, the reader will find a recapitulation appended, with a minute ealculation of the expense attendant upon the support of 15,000 abandoned, degraded females, lost to every feeling of virtue and honour in this life, and perfectly insensible to the misery and desolation to which their crimes and iniquitous lives will unquestionably expose them in the world to come.

RECAPITULATION.

		Inmates.	*Drs.*	*Yearly exp. Dollars.*
Notorious Public Houses of Prostitution...	650	3,250	10	1,690,000
Do. do. do.	400	4,000	5	104,000
Lodgers, composed of white and coloured women		2,750	3	429,000
Privateers		2,000	3	312,000
Married Women who support Husbands and Families		1,000	5	260,000
Transient Prostitutes.....		1,000	5	260,000
Women wearing the apparent garb of innocence and virtue, but supporters of assignation houses		1,000	3	156,000
Respectable Boarding Houses in the lower part of the city, containing 600, Half Widows	200	600		93,600
		15,600		
Annual Cost to the Citizens of New York			*Dollars*	3,304,600

PART II.

VENEREAL ABUSES IN RELATION TO HEALTH AND DISEASE.

CHAPTER VI.

VENEREAL ABUSES IN RELATION TO HEALTH AND DISEASE.

The mass of incontrovertible evidence adduced in the preceding part of this work, will convince every rational person, of the extensive prevalence of licentiousness amongst mankind.

Here it may not be amiss to observe, that whatever may be set down in extenuation of natural passion, which spontaneously steals in upon, and seizes the hearts of youth, none can be offered for that morbid state of the brain, which is excited by whatever immoral means, whether latent, mechanical, or physical. It is shameful in youth, and truly despicable in after-life.

The preceding history has, however, no reference to the actual extent of adultery, concubinage, secret fornication, or self-abuse, which, after all, are the precursors, in numberless instances, of promiscuous intercourse between the sexes, and of other vices, upon which I have so circumstantially dwelt, and which generally prevail in all countries.

With respect to self-abuse, it must be observed, that it notoriously undermines the natural powers of the constitution, at every period of life, and leads to the production of the most formidable and incurable diseases, as I shall show hereafter.

Having given the foregoing very imperfect account of licentiousness in these times, I shall now proceed to describe the bad effects of venereal excesses on health, the numerous complaints which they induce in all parts of the

body; and the various remedial means which are adapted to the symptoms of each individual case.

Medical writers of all ages have described the baneful effects of venereal abuses, on health, and on population. They have also held that such excesses, and more especially the vice of masturbation, have largely contributed to the evils of humanity. According to M. Reveille-Parisse, "Neither plague, nor war, nor small-pox, nor similar contagious diseases, had produced such disastrous results on humanity, as the vicious habit of masturbation—the destructive element of civilized societies, and it is more active as it is continually in operation, and greatly diminishes populations."—(*Rev. Med., Avril* 1828).

The late Mr. Benjamin Bell, of Edinburgh, also, in noticing the effects of this indulgence, says, "A habit so baneful to many of our youth, that I believe it to be more destructive in its effects, than a great proportion of all the diseases, to which in early life, they are liable; were it to prove hurtful to those only whose self-indulgence gives rise to it, there would be less cause to regret the effects of it; besides rendering the parent himself miserable, it evidently entails the severest distress upon posterity, by generating languor, debility, and disease, instead of that strength of constitution, without which there can be no enjoyment."

"The impotence caused by the latter excesses," says M. Pinel, "reduces youth to the nullity of old age."

The late Dr. Parry, of Bath, wrote strongly against immoderate coition, as also did Dr. Gregory.

"Hæc vero nimis culta," says Professor Gregory, "valde nocet præsertim junioribus, quorum animos pariter ac corpora multum degenerat." (Conspectus de Med.)—Every person's feelings must convince him of the languor, lassitude, and inertness which succeed the evacuation of the spermatic fluid. This was noticed by Aristotle, who

said, "Tristiam autem multam seminis emissionem censet, cur ex omnibus animantibus, homo maxime omnium, postquam concubit, dissolvatur et languescat."

The following celebrated writers, whom I ought to have quoted in the first place, have also expatiated on the injurious effects of venereal abuses; namely, Hippocrates, Celsus, Galen, Pliny, Aretæus, Ætius, Lommius, Sanctorius, Tulpius, Blancard, Hoffman, Boerhaave, Van Swieten, Ludwig, De Gorter, Robinson, Kloehof, Lewis, Stoerck, Gaubius, Tissot, Wichman, A. P. Buchan, Lallemand, Copland, Deslandes, and many others, whose names will appear in the course of the following observations. Indeed there is no standard work, on the Practice of Medicine or Surgery, in which *excessus veneris*, or in plain language, excess of venery, is not included, amongst the most common causes of delicate health and diseases.

Every adult knows, that the emission of the seminal fluid without a spontaneous natural impulse, is injurious to health, and weakens the slender thread of human life. The learned Gaubius has truly described its bad effects, (Institutiones Pathologiæ Medicinalis, 1758):—"The immoderate evacuation of the semen, is not only injurious, on account of the loss of so very vital a fluid, but especially in consequence of the universal convulsive action, which accompanies its emission, which if too frequently repeated, destroys health. It is rapidly succeeded by a sudden resolution or collapse of all the vital energies, which cannot often occur, without enfeebling all organs. Hence the lassitude, debility, immobility, tottering walk, pains in the head, convulsions (or derangements) in all the organs of the senses, but more particularly the defect, or loss of vision, and hearing; febrile excitement, burning heat of the skin, indigestion, flatulency, spasmodic pains in the stomach and bowels, emaciation, pulmonary and dorsal consumption and effeminacy, caused by excessive venery

of whatever kind. The various diseases hitherto mentioned, increase and become incurable, in consequence of the morbid and incessant desire for venery, which often solely occupies, and greatly influences, the mind, as well as the body; and incites salacious images during sleep; when the exquisitively sensitive organs, on the slightest irritation, even when there is but a small quantity of semen in its receptacles, evacuate it. We evidently perceive then, why this excess is so pernicious to young persons." And I may add, to all guilty of it.

Every part of the body may suffer from this abuse, more especially such parts as are predisposed to disease. Thus it is, that a person predisposed to defect of vision, hearing, respiration, to consumption, indigestion, and a host of other complaints, hereafter duly noticed in their proper places, becomes speedily affected by it. The universal prevalence of unnatural indulgence among the youth of the male sex, and occasionally of the female, warrants this conclusion, which is adopted by almost all learned and experienced medical practitioners.

John Hunter, Montegre, and a very few others, deny its dangerous consequences, and allege that many who practised it excessively from infancy, had nevertheless, enjoyed vigour and health. The more prevalent opinion however, is, that this assertion is generally erroneous, and that a preponderating majority have delicate health, and some one of the host of diseases induced by this abominable habit. It is admitted by the most enlightened physiologists of modern times, that masturbation causes much more excitement in the whole system than sexual intercourse, and that it is more frequently repeated, and is consequently more injurious to health, and more productive of disease. Hence we find it when indulged to excess, inducing extreme nervousness or morbid sensibility in every part of the body, great depression of spirits, melancholy, mania often leading

to suicide, epilepsy, hysteria, paralysis, loss of sight, hearing, in unmarried persons, and others.

M. Deslandes, a late elaborate author on the subject, is of opinion, that as the masturbator has not a material subject for the beginning and end of his pleasures, his imagination must supply and invent one, and that this mental exertion very much contributes to his subsequent depression. In such cases the mind is occupied with a lover, a married or single woman, a former wife or mistress, or some amorous vagary which greatly excites the nervous system. Prints, statues, public exhibitions, and a variety of other subjects, are fixed on by the imagination; and the mechanical force employed is more stimulating than the natural.

It is also to be recollected, that this solitary vice may be perpetrated by either sex, as often as the person pleases, while the compliance of the opposite sex is not always, or so frequently, to be obtained.

This vice is almost universal among young persons, and there are perhaps but few males, who have not been more or less addicted to it in early life, and who have not sooner or later felt some of its bad effects. How often do this very numerous class of individuals apply for advice, and keep secret the real cause of their sufferings! How often does the well-informed physician suspect the cause, but refrain from putting the necessary questions; lest he might wound the modesty of the young, or inform them of that which they are ignorant, or excite in them a dangerous curiosity. He well knows the depravities of human nature; he is ever ready to correct them, but he fears to allude to them in certain cases, unless he has well studied those under consideration, lest he might be the means of corrupting youthful innocence, or shocking adult modesty. As a general rule this is a good one, but like all others liable to exceptions.

There is no well informed medical practitioner, who does not indirectly inquire, in taking the history of every case, from the age of puberty onwards, the state of the genital organs, the colour of the urine, its deposits if any, the frequency of evacuating the bladder, and in some cases, whether the patient is married or single, whether he or she have offspring or not, the number of children, the age of the last born, as well as the state of menstruation and of all the reproductive organs. In the course of these necessary inquiries, and no medical practitioner could omit them, who had a just claim to judgment, he may also learn whether sexual congress is painful or not, and also whether venereal excesses have been committed or not. But there is much more caution required in cases of youth, and particularly of children. In this class of cases the parents ought to be informed of the medical adviser's suspicion, and be recommended to make a close observation of the manners and habits of the suspected, which will soon lead to a just conclusion. After a due consideration of the symptoms hereafter enumerated, there can be little difficulty in forming a correct opinion, in the majority of instances, as to the nature of the disease.

It is scarcely necessary to observe, that the influence of the sexual organs on every part of the body is well known and universally admitted. The natural use of these organs in reproduction gives almost an electrical shock to the whole frame; and cannot be too often repeated, without deranging every function, and every part of the body, especially those predisposed to disease. The excessive abuse of these organs is, therefore, most injurious to health, and a powerful cause of many diseases. All venereal excesses, whether by the natural use or the abuse of the reproductive organs, are contrary to the laws of nature, of morals, and of religion. They defeat the perpetuation of the species, and the primitive command of the Divine

Author of Nature. I have adduced sufficient arguments in proof of the validity of this conclusion in another work —(THE PHILOSOPHY OF MARRIAGE.)

I have described the physiology, or natural history of the use of the generative faculty, in the work just referred to, and shall now briefly consider its abuses.

It is impossible to lay down a general rule, as to the frequency with which the natural performance of the reproductive function may be indulged in, so much depends on age, habit, state of health, and constitution, climate, season, &c.; but it is the universal opinion of physiologists, that a continence for four or more days should be observed by all from the age of twenty-one and upwards, to ensure generation. It is also held that frequent connexions are not only infertile, in most cases, but are injurious to the health of both parties.

The crime of Onan was punished with instant death, because "the thing which he did displeased the Lord," and was a bar to generation. Nevertheless it is frequently committed by grown persons to prevent impregnation, and has been lately recommended by certain depraved men, styled political economists, as worthy of universal adoption by the working classes—a recommendation which never was, nor ever will be, followed by a preponderating majority of the community. Indeed, there is no animal but man which performs an act destructive to its species, unless deprived of the opposite sex; and even then, in extremely few instances.

Masturbation consists in certain mechanical irritations made on some part of the sexual apparatus, and even on remote parts of the body, to excite voluptuous sensations; or the effusion of the seminal fluid of the male, and vaginal and uterine, and mucus, not seminal, of the female. The universal nervous connexion between all parts of the body, excites that sympathy, by which the vivid excitations of

one apparatus, as the sexual, are communicated to the brain and spinal marrow, the sources of nervous supply to all parts; and hence the nervous agitations, depressions, and mental excitations, caused by natural or artificial excitement of the reproductive organs. It is also an established fact, that the frequent repetition of such excitement, must be highly injurious to the body, and, sooner or later, induce a debility proportionate to it; and this may either totally destroy the function of the over exerted organs, or induce flaccidity, want of erection, and temporary or permanent impotence. Many proofs of this statement will be adduced in the following pages.

The local effects are usually combined with general debility of the whole economy, in consequence of the frequent, or long continued irritation in the parts, which were primitively excited. The diseases induced may be described as follow:—The bladder does not perform its function properly, it, in many cases, must be evacuated more frequently than usual, and it often compels the individual, more particularly when he lives freely, to rise frequently during the night, especially in winter; there is more or less sediment in the urine, sometimes white, but generally red, like brick dust. The sediment is only apparent after the urine has cooled, and has been passed for an hour or more. There are pains or unusual sensations in the small of the back, loins, and lower extremities, there is more or less indigestion, flatulence, biliousness, heat in the stomach, and constipation or relaxation of the bowels—the intellectual faculties are enfeebled, the mind and body are injured, the action of the heart is disordered, and often violent, and lastly there is often great emaciation. Many other symptoms exist, which will be detailed hereafter. But enough has been now stated to show, that the debilitating effects of venereal abuses, of whatever kind, may be highly injurious to health, and I shall fully prove hereafter, as de-

structive to the lives of those who indulge in them. They are in reality, murderous excesses, which so powerfully excite pleasurable sensations, for the instant, that they daily increase and too seldom diminish, until reason and judicious medical advice expose their evil tendency and results.

It is evident that onanism and masturbation are as immoral and as destructive to the continuance of the species, as other crimes, which our laws punish with death. I cannot comprehend the difference in crime of a healthful adult diverting by whatever means an elaborated and prolific seminal fluid, after several days secretion and retention, from its natural destination—from the perpetuation of the species. It is a violation of the law of nature, a most immoral, and antisocial offence.

It has been urged, that there is much excuse for persons, from puberty to the adult age, who are properly deemed unfit, by physiologists and legislators, for the perpetuation of the species, before the mind and body are fully developed, more especially as the sexual function is the universal theme of conversation among persons of all ages, but more particularly of those of the male sex; while parental authority wisely enforces morality and chastity, and total abstinence from premature sexual enjoyment. The contaminating influence of servants, tutors, governesses, and school-fellows on children, is also almost universal, and causes unthinking youths to commit a crime, of which they will, too often, have great reason to repent bitterly at a more advanced period of life.

Nature affords relief to the continent, at every period of life to old age, by causing an involuntary emission of the semen during sleep, similar to other excretions; and this, when spontaneous, or unprovoked, occurs once or twice a week, or ten days, from the age of fourteen to fifty years, without any injury to the health. But it is no longer

natural when excited by incentives of whatever kind, and then may become a fertile source of disease.

The frequency of nocturnal emissions varies according to the age and health of individuals, to say nothing of the effects produced by an excited imagination. No danger, however, need be apprehended from the retention of the seminal fluid in its receptacles, even though abundantly secreted, for weeks or months, as is the case with the strictly continent, who are under the control of moral and religious restraint; for, in such instances, the seminal fluid is absorbed, and carried back into the circulation of the blood, from which it was originally derived. It is also to be borne in mind, that the genital organs of such persons in general, gradually become small and diminished in size, for the want of natural use, which is the case with all other organs of the body under like condition, in states of desuetude, and they secrete but sparingly, and sometimes scarcely at all. Dr. Gall observed, that the organs of all clergymen of the catholic church, who were remarkable for chastity, were diminished, and he justly inferred that the individuals were generally impotent. I can also bear my testimony in support of the truth of this statement.

It is for this reason that the great majority of the Roman Catholic clergy, and all like them, who, from moral and religious principles, have their natural desires subdued, become exempt from sexual impulse, strictly continent, and eventually more or less impotent. Nevertheless, the world, in general, forms not only a very erroneous but uncharitable opinion on the subject. Hence arise not only the unbecoming and illiberal sneers at, but the malignant inuendos against, the clergy just mentioned, and even the laity of both sexes, respecting nieces, cousins, housekeepers, and females in general.

In further illustration of this physiological principle, I

may here advert to the converse as regards widowers and widows, who re-enter the married state much more frequently than old batchelors and old maids, and who after all, it must be admitted, are much more valuable and useful members of society, than the latter class.

This digression, however the maw-worm critic may object to it, naturally arises out of the subject, and is not unworthy of notice.

When nocturnal, diurnal, or imaginative emissions of the semen occur, once in eight or ten days, or once in a fortnight, or month, and more rarely to young persons, they are not injurious to health; but when they happen two or three times during one day or night, or even oftener, they arise from excessive irritability, chronic inflammation, or debility of the *vesiculæ seminales*, or seminal receptacles; and may induce temporary or permanent sterility or impotence, accompanied by great mental anxiety, derangement of the general health, indigestion, biliousness, despondency, &c. It remains for me to treat fully of the various forms of this disease, in a subsequent part of this work.

Buffon observed, "the natural state of mankind after puberty is marriage," but the offspring of such parents would be deteriorated, the requisite cares and support of a family could not be given, the health of both sexes would be seriously injured by excesses, and the mortality of their children would be frightful. (See Philosophy of Marriage.) Every adult of common understanding well knows, how different were his mind and body, and his power of procuring the means of subsistence, at the age of fourteen and twenty-one or twenty-five years; and how much more competent he is at the latter than he was at the former age, to be the father and support of a family.

The immorality of onanism and masturbation is strongly condemned in the Bible, as opposed to the laws of nature,

(Gen. xxxviii. 9; Deut. xxiii. 10; Ezekiel xvi; Lev. xv; 1 John ii. 9; Prov. vi. xxiii. 27; Mat. vi; 1 Cor. vi. 15; Rom. i. 8. &c.) It is manifest that the laws of the Divine Author of Nature ought to be sacred to man, and that he cannot violate them, without injury to himself and to the welfare of society. They teach him the wise precept of self-preservation, and hence, that suicide is a crime. Nature has impressed on the heart of every well constituted living being, which possesses the reproductive faculty, the desire to unite with a sex different from its own, and to exercise this faculty, for the continuance of the species; and it is not therefore permitted to man, to infringe on this divine and natural law, and to destroy or diminish his species. The crimes of omission and commission in this respect, cause the same result; the first contributes to the extinction of the species, by an unnatural means, by causing abortion or infanticide, &c.; the second by homicide, and therefore these crimes are equally bad in the eyes of the Divine Author of Nature. It follows from this train of reasoning, that marriage is obligatory on all, who possess the requisite means to fulfil its obligations. There, are, however, some individuals who, on account of religious motives, evade this obligatory law, and observe an absolute continence, with the only view of more efficaciously working out the safety of their souls. They allege, that the Divine Redeemer set them the example of celibacy, and that the apostles, when selected, no longer knew their wives. There are many other individuals from the age of puberty upwards, who refrain from entering into matrimonial engagements, for want of means to support a family, and educate their offspring.

But it is a most humiliating reflection to know, that men vigorously developed and endowed with natural powers for reproduction, prevent, by wicked machinations, the vital fluid placed in them for reproduction, from ac-

complishing that object, which, without doubt, is the most powerful means that nature has employed to compel men to associate, unite, and co-operate in common for the happiness of all. Every one will admit that, he who is addicted to the unmanly habit of masturbation or onanism, is isolated from society, concentrates all his affections in himself, exerts none of the mutual sympathies of the different members of society, which contribute most powerfully to the good of all.

The commonest observer knows, that no vertebrated animal is capable of procreation on its entrance into the world; and the human species does not form an exception to this general law. It is at the age of puberty, which occurs at different periods, according to the different species, but which is the same for individuals of each class in all seasons and climates, that the sexual organs develope, that love is excited, and that the venereal appetite or temperament is determined. I have given a full account of puberty and the developement of sexual impulse, in my work on Marriage, to which I must refer the reader. I may here observe, that there are very few cases of precocious developement in either sex, at the third or fourth year, but such individuals are incapable of procreation, and masturbation only can be accomplished in such cases at this age. The generative faculty does not exist at birth, because its exercise would be injurious to developement and health, and without reason to control it, would be destructive of life.

Precocious excitation of the genital organs, accelerates the increase and sensibility of these parts. The premature increase of the penis caused by masturbation or unnatural indulgence is so remarkable in infants, as to establish this vicious habit, the power of which is so great, that many children practise it in spite of all means of prevention and correction. Although it is not until the age of puberty, that the sexual organs acquire the developement necessary

for the proper performance of the reproductive functions, nevertheless the vascular or erectile tissue in the genital apparatus of both sexes, is susceptible of being the seat of a greater or less degree of turgescence, even in the cradle. I have repeatedly observed it exemplified even in new-born infants, during the first ablution.

This turgescence causes a great sensibility of the erectile tissues, and often induces infants to perceive agreeable sensations, under the influence of the least instinctive, physical, or mechanical excitement. Hence it is that some instinctive or mechanical touching, as during daily ablution, informs them of this source of pleasure, and this is soon engendered into a habit. Nurses and nursery maids when washing children daily, often instruct them in this kind of excitation. It is also well known that young infants often acquire it instinctively. The great majority of them, however, are initiated by older children or individuals. The signs by which this vice may be detected, will be described hereafter.

It is a physiological fact, that children of a tender age, evince vague desires, and an inclination for venery, long before the period of puberty. The secret cause is hidden in the sexual organs. There is not a mother or nurse, who has not observed the virile member of boys, even in the cradle, susceptible of erection, by the slightest physical excitation of this part. Female children are also liable to itching, irritation, and genital discharges from the period of birth to puberty, and the adult age. Every one who has observed the indiscriminate association of boys and girls, must have seen their abortive attempts at coition, at the age of five or six years; and this without having received any hint on the subject; but this inclination is generally prevented, controlled, or corrected by the precaution of parents, and the care they take of the education of their children. Infants and children, however, who are accus-

tomed to warm, spiced, and heating aliments, to wine and diluted spirtuous or fermented fluids, often become affected with genital excitement, which induces lacivious touchings, and titillations, which they imagine will allay the inconvenience from which they suffer. Such efforts not only fail, but the sensation becomes more urgent.

There are but few children, from the age of five upwards, in civilized or savage countries, who are free from this vice, a fact which is well known to most adults, but especially to medical practitioners, confessors, and those at the head of schools and colleges. If we reflect on the injury it inflicts on full-grown persons, it will be easy to imagine its baneful effects on infants, children, and adolescents, during their imperfect developement. Indeed it is injurious at all ages.

It must be evident to all thinking persons, that masturbation of male children under the age of puberty unless they are prematurely developed, is not attended with a seminal emission, inasmuch as the organs which secrete the seminal fluid are not yet developed. But even at a tender age, the prostate and Cowper's glands, as well as the mucous membrane lining the urethra, are susceptible of great excitation, which causes them to secrete a greater or less quantity of fluids not seminal, the abundant and repeated loss of which is highly injurious to health. The quantity is always considerably increased at the age of puberty, when the parts which supply it are further developed.

Nearly the same kind of fluid is evacuated by female children, and it is as injurious to their health as to that of the other sex. It is at the age of puberty that menstruation often becomes profuse and premature, and frequently impedes or destroys the reproductive function. The medical adviser must, however, be very cautious in alluding to the cause, and can only delicately hint at it to the mother, or any other adult female, who may accompany the girl.

It must be evident from the foregoing statements, that the original cause of masturbation may be instinctive or accidental; but that it is much more commonly put in operation by older children, playfellows, nurses, servants, governesses, tutors, and schoolboys.

Children are also demoralized by the numerous causes already enumerated, and by incidentally observing domestic animals in copulation.

It is a fortunate circumstance that children addicted to masturbation, generally present striking external appearances, which will be readily detected by those, who have paid any attention to the subject. Such children want that charming sweetness of countenance, which is natural to their age. The eyes are dull, and more or less watery or inflamed. The skin of the forehead and face is wrinkled as in more advanced life. Pictures and figures which are naturally represented unveiled always attract their attention and curiosity; and if surprised during the inspection, a sudden embarrassment is perceptible in their gestures and expression of countenance. They generally show a degree of forwardness characteristic of a more advanced age. They prefer children of their own age, and of the opposite sex. Their pleasures and amusements are less infantile and less frivolous; and their habits, tastes, and dispositions are precocious. In fine, they are readily detected on being closely watched by day, or before they go to sleep, or during sleep. Their organs will be found disproportionately developed, vascular, and sometimes the seat of mucous or yellowish discharges. I have repeatedly seen such cases, even in infants of one year old; and these I feel convinced were most generally induced by the nurses and nurse-maids, for the purpose of tranquillizing the unfortunate children committed to their care.

Two remarkable cases have recently come under my own notice,—a most enlightened lady informed me, with

sorrow, that she detected her little girl, a lovely child, aged five years and a half, in the act of passing a thimble into the vagina, and when questioned and reproved for this conduct, said it was one of the maids that showed her how to do it. The lady also heard her little boy, aged three years, naturally a remarkably modest child, laughing loudly, and on being asked the cause, he said that the nurse-maid had been tickling him. Such cases as these are much more frequent than parents generally imagine; though too well known to medical practitioners. They show how cautious parents should be in hiring servants, and in allowing their children to be much in their company, or to sleep with them. Indeed it must be obvious to the commonest observer, that the depravities of boys and girls, in all large cities and towns, are almost universal.

It is now generally admitted, that one of the most alarming, and at the same time, one of the most increasing evils which infests the peace and security of domestic life, is the depravity of servants. It is an evil of which all families complain, and for which there seems to be almost no prospect of a remedy. There was a time when this class of society were industrious, respectful, and trustworthy; but they are now, with very few exceptions, idle, insolent, and practised in every species of depravity, fraud, and imposition. The evil is so alarmingly on the increase, as apparently to defy all remedy. All families have a common interest in improving the morals of their domestics. I cannot too often repeat that servants ought to be as little about children as possible, unless in the presence of one or both parents. The celebrated Mr. Edgeworth instantly dismissed any domestic, who spoke at all to his children. This was, perhaps, carrying matters too far. There are some exceptions; for there are many servants who have received a moderate general and religious education, and who are honest, modest, and trustworthy, until

contaminated by others. The seductions of men, encouraged by the chartered libertinism of the infamous Poor Law, is not only the ruin of thousands of our female servants, but may, through them, be the ruin of our children.

But it is at the age of puberty that youth furiously abandon themselves to masturbation, as the sexual organs now become most sensitive and excitable; and hence manipulations are more frequently repeated. Premature puberty is also another cause, but one which very rarely exists in this climate. Though this artificial excitation arises, in general, spontaneously, it as frequently results from lessons given by children and others of a more advanced age. It is common in schools, and is "the contagion of scholars." We often see children in these establishments, and even at home, who were at first vigorous and healthful, speedily presenting all the signs of physical and moral decay. How careful then should parents and teachers be, to watch incessantly, the depositaries of future generations, and never allow two children to sleep in the same bed but without assigning the real motive; or two scholars to be constantly with each other; and to observe those traits of the countenance, which betray the vicious habit under consideration, and which are described in these pages.

When this baneful vice is carried to excess, it retards the growth of the body, and it often destroys life at an early age; or if existence continues it will be miserable, the enfeebled frame cannot sustain the exertions necessary for life; the weakened intellectual faculties are inadequate to the due performance of mental exertions; a shameful impotence or absolute sterility opposes connubial engagements; and if the power of procreation remain, the offspring will be feeble, delicate, and miserable pictures of those, who brought them into existence. In short, it induces a vast number of horrible diseases, which I shall fully describe hereafter.

This vice sometimes become invetrate at the age of

puberty, and excites for some years, an invincible estrangement from natural enjoyment.

When young persons are addicted to this destructive habit, they become inactive, dejected, fond of solitude, the appetite is diminished, there is great depression of spirits, and a total disinclination to activity, playfulness, and vivacity. These symptoms are greatly increased by the constant and frequent repetition of their cause. The forehead is partially covered with crimson-coloured hard pimples, called acne. Such persons evince great timidity and disrelish for society. The memory is impaired, and the power of comprehension considerably diminished; all the mental faculties so much injured, that stupidity, idiocy, or lunacy, sooner or later, may appear. The digestion is much injured, and flatulency becomes a troublesome symptom, even before or after puberty. The senses of vision and hearing become imperfect; and blindness from amaurosis, or deafness frequently occurs. I was once consulted by a young man who had amaurosis of both eyes, whose spirits were as depressed as possible, and who finally confessed that excessive masturbation had produced his disease. We can easily understand how this and a variety of other formidable diseases may arise from too frequent coition, when it is recollected that it produces the most vivid and repeated stimulation of the whole nervous system, and excites an acute or chronic irritability, or total loss of sensibility in organs, which are naturally the most irritable. Mr. Hunter was of opinion, that masturbation, unless excessive, was not more injurious than coition, (Work on Venereal Dis. 1st edit.); but he recanted in his future editions. He forgot that the solitary masturbator can repeat his crime as often as he pleases; but the compliance of a female is not always to be obtained. Few escape the evil results of onanism, which is much worse than coition, being more frequently repeated, and being

more vivid and violent. Hence we find it induces the worst forms of indigestion, or morbid sensibility of the stomach, (Andral, Pathol.) the worst form of hypochondriasis, or lowness of spirits, (Martinet, Therapeutics,) aneurism, and other incurable diseases of the heart and its large vessels, (Dict. de Med. and Chir. Pratiques, art. Arteritis,) all the diseases of the brain and spinal marrow, (Dict. Abrégé des Sc. Med. art. Onanisme,) feebleness of the whole muscular system, chronic inflammation of the viscera of the chest, abdomen, and pelvis, and consumption (Op. Cit.), stricture of the urethra, suppression or incontinence of urine, piles, nocturnal emissions, &c. &c.

These are but a few of the evils caused by this vile and unmanly habit. It is, however, fortunately abandoned by most young persons about the age of eighteen, or twenty years, when they leave schools and colleges, and become free to indulge in natural enjoyment. But there are some persons who continue to practise it, either from habit, a fear of contracting syphilis, or a fixed aversion to the opposite sex, even at and after this age. I have known several examples of this kind. Some of these unfortunate persons, laboured under severe and distressing complaints, which rendered existence almost intolerable, and often excited the horrible feeling of the necessity of self-destruction. There are others who persist in this shameful vice after marriage, and it even prevails in some instances during hoary old age. I have been repeatedly consulted in all these cases. Legislators of all ages and countries, have fixed the proper age for marriage, but they never attempted to bring onanism or masturbation under the control of the laws—crimes which, when perpetrated by healthful adults, are most assuredly as destructive of human life, as all other unnatural offences. The first and last crimes were punished with death, according to the Levitical and other Jewish laws; and the second is equally heinous,

when the individual is capable of reproduction; but it may be urged that the excessive masturbator, is seldom in this condition, when his vice is of frequent or daily indulgence; as he is in such cases, a sterile member of society.

I have already described the proper age for marriage, as well as the circumstances favourable to reproduction, both in my works on Marriage and on Midwifery, and Diseases of Women and Children; and can now offer but one general observation, that the adult age at which the mind and body are properly developed, is that pointed out by physiology and wise legislation.

There are individuals of all ages, who abandon themselves to venereal excesses, and the records of medicine afford numerous examples. The proofs of this statement are abundantly supplied by M. Deslandes, in his late elaborate work, entitled, *De l'Onanisme et des autres abus Veneriens, Considérés dans leur rapports avec la Sante*, 1835, which I shall freely quote in the succeeding pages, because it accords with, and confirms my own repeated observations and experience. Though the faculty of engendering ceases in man and other animals in old age, yet we frequently peruse police and other public reports of cases of female violation, effected by very aged persons. Some of this class also enter into matrimonial engagements; so that it is difficult, if not impossible, to decide what is the age, at which man is deprived of the power of committing venereal abuses or excesses.

As a general proposition, however, it may, I think, be maintained, that women suffer much less than the opposite sex from venereal excesses, as they are much less sensual and sensitive in the act of reproduction, and much less depressed by it. John Hunter was of opinion, that a man was much less debilitated after connexion with a prostitute, or a frigid woman, than with an amorous one, with whom his energies were greater and more prolonged, and

his consequent depression comparatively increased. I have been repeatedly assured of this fact, by different patients, as well as other individuals, but there are many subjects of this kind relative to reproduction, which cannot be treated of in the vernacular language, though the common topics of conversation among men of all classes of society. These must be passed over, with a few general remarks.

It has been long admitted, that the performance of the generative act is more injurious, at certain moments of life than at others, as during digestion, menstruation, pregnancy, suckling, and different indispositions. If coition or masturbation is practised immediately after a repast, or during hunger or fatigue, the results will be more injurious than at other times. Examples are not wanting of individuals who died suddenly in these acts soon after leaving the table, as happened within a few years, to a marshal of France. The digestion is suspended in other cases, and great depression of spirits induced.

The performance of the procreative act during the presence of menstruation, was punished with death, according to the law of Moses, (Levit. xx). Mania has also been induced by it. The exercise of this act ought to be moderate during pregnancy ; and especially when miscarriage is threatened. This is the opinion of all eminent obstetric authors; and these I have largely quoted in the article on ABORTION, in the *Cyclopædia of Practical Surgery*, Part I, April 1837. Montaigne observed, " that when the object of generation was accomplished, and when age prevents offspring, there are some who doubt whether it is permitted to seek for an embrace." This was deemed homicide according to Plato. There are certain nations, as the Mahometan, which abominate intercourse with pregnant women. Some negroes act in like manner. Pallus relates, that the Calmucks inflict a fine of nine pieces of

coin for each incontinence, which has been the cause of abortion.

It is the general opinion of experienced obstetricians, that moderate intercourse is not injurious, and certain theologians advise it to preserve the husband from infidelity. Sexual intimacy is also injurious during the presence of the child-bed evacuation, which continues for nine or more days after delivery, according to the state of health of the mother. I was once consulted in a case in which a drunken husband approached his wife a few hours after her confinement, in utter defiance to the remonstrance of the midwife and other women.

Suckling being a part of the generative process, is opposed to excessive conjugal intimacy, which more or less deteriorates the breast-milk, and injures the infant. Lascivious nurses are generally considered bad, as well as those who freely indulge in sexual commerce. This is based upon a correct theological conclusion. It is also a medical opinion, that sexual commerce ought to be moderate during the first six or nine months of suckling; and it is a well-known fact, that conception rarely occurs during this period.

The influence of the sexual act in relation to different causes of diseases, to the changes of the constitution and health, will be greatly modified by each peculiar circumstance. A man at the age of forty or fifty years, cannot expect the vigour he possessed at eighteen or twenty, though this expectation is generally entertained, as I can attest from numerous consultations. He who has suffered from severe disease of any kind, or from intense mental exertion, may have this function dormant for months or years, or may never regain the power or inclination he enjoyed before his illness or during former periods of life.

A gentleman of high literary attainments, aged forty years, once consulted me in consequence of a remarkable

modification in his virile powers. He was of a very amorous disposition, and indulged very freely. He found of late, that his constitution was totally changed in that respect. I inquired whether he had had any serious illness during the preceding year or two? He replied that he had had a bad liver complaint, for which he was ordered a great deal of mercury, from the effects of which he still suffered. His disease and its treatment, clearly accounted for the depressed state of his reproductive function. I assured him that the restoration of his general health, would in all probability, effect the cure of his temporary disease; but that he must not expect the same vigour he possessed at twenty, at the age of forty. He was, however, restored to health in a few weeks.

A similar case has lately been under my treatment. A gentleman, aged forty years, unmarried, of dark complexion, of a melancholico-bilio-nervous temperament, was attacked with typhus fever in the country, about two years since. He was seized with delirium for four days, during which time the medical attendant overlooked the state of the bladder. A physician was called in, who discovered a distended bladder, and ordered catheterism. A large quantity of urine was removed, and it was necessary to use the catheter for twenty days. Convalescence was in time established, but there remained disorders in the urinary function. This was followed by loss of virility. Dr. Prout was now consulted, and treated the patient for some months without benefit. Sir B. Brodie was not more successful. What rendered the case most distressing was, that the gentleman was engaged to marry in a few months, that is to say, he had promised two years before, when in good health to do so at a certain time. I told him he ought to decline it for the present, and he resolved to do so if possible. He finally got well, is now about to marry, and receive a large fortune. I have his permission for

stating his case, which he agreed with me in considering may be consolatory to others.

Another gentleman, under my care, is nearly in the same condition. He had previously consulted Dr. Elliotson and Sir B. Brodie. He wished Dr. Chambers and myself to consult on his case. Dr. Chambers was out of town at the time, and he proposed to me to see Sir Astley Cooper. The patient and myself waited on Sir Astley Cooper (Aug. 31st, 1838), when the worthy Baronet displayed his wonted benevolence, kindness, and judgment. There was no difference of opinion; we both suggested an adjournment of the nuptials, if possible.

The changes of residence, the influence of climate, diet, the various pursuits, and the septennary periods of life, all modify the faculty of procreation. We observe this fact attested by the state of a young man, who comes from the country to reside in our large city; and in the European who becomes exposed to the burning tropics.

Those inhabiting crowded dwellings, as manufacturies, prisons, ships, &c. experience a modification of their virile powers, and such persons readily feel the bad effects of venereal excesses.

Poverty, famine, excess in the use of wine and other inebriating liquors, over-exertion of mind or body, and debilitating diseases, are opposed to sexual commerce, which in such circumstances causes great enervation or depression. It is also to be avoided or used in moderation during the prevalence of epidemics, to which it predisposes. It is likewise contra-indicated in cases of epilepsy, convulsions, fevers, inflammations of the organs in the head, chest, and abdomen. It has been long observed, that the genital function is suppressed during acute diseases, and other powerfully depressing moral causes. There are, however, exceptions. Pinel describes the case of a young man affected with typhus, who continued masturbation after the

approach of death was announced to him. My revered friend, the late Baron Alibert, gave the history of a young man affected with an extensive pustular disease of the skin, which was always aggravated by masturbation ; after which the unfortunate patient was harrassed with an intense burning pruritus or itching.—(*Dict. des Sciences Med.*, Art. *Dartres*). Many cases are on record, of persons in a state of convalescence, inducing a dangerous or fatal relapse by coition or self-pollution.

Nervous disorders, mania, hysteria, gout, scrofula, stone in the bladder, diseases of the kidney and urinary apparatus, and diseases of the brain, lungs, heart, and large vessels, stomach, bowels, &c. are aggravated by venereal indulgences. I might give many illustrations, a few shall suffice. A man with disease of the heart had intercourse with a prostitute in one of the hospitals. He died suddenly during the act. On opening the body next day, it was observed, that an aneurism of the arch of the aorta had burst, and was the cause of his sudden death. An out-patient of mine at the Metropolitan Free Hospital, D—, who was seen by a great many students in 1836 and 1837, who witnessed the medical practice, laboured under hypertrophy or enlargement of the heart, arising from contracted valves—the bellows-sound was audible on both sides of the organ. He became very much improved by the treatment, which continued for several months, and then he proposed to marry. I observed in my clinical remarks on his case, that his conjugal duties would, in all probability, soon terminate his existence. He died nine weeks after his marriage.

Felix Plater gives the history of an aged man who married a second time, and who experienced, on attempting consummation, a violent suffocation which compelled him to suspend his efforts. This occurred several times, but when driven to desperation, he consulted empirics, who

advised him to persevere. He died in the act. (Observ. lib. 1, p. 174.) Examples of sudden death during coition are not rare, and are often induced by the bursting of an aneurism, by congestion of the lungs, and by apoplexy. Every adult knows the excited state of the heart, the breathing, the brain and the senses, during the act of generation.

SYMPTOMS OF DISEASES RESULTING FROM VENEREAL EXCESSES.

The results of venereal excesses at the adult age, whether by conjugal intercourse, onanism, diurnal or nocturnal masturbation, voluntary or involuntary spermatorrhœa or seminal effusion, are equally powerful in inducing local and constitutional disorders and diseases.

The most constant sign of venereal abuses is emaciation, which is caused by the disordered state of the digestion, and it is worthy of remark, that most persons become corpulent on avoiding the cause of their disease. There are, however, some few who remain thin and withered for the remainder of life; in consequence of excessive self-abuse during their youth. At first, there is little debility caused by masturbation, but sooner or later, it is experienced after the completion of the act. Young persons become inactive, dejected, and fond of solitude; the appetite for food is diminished; there is great depression of spirits, or melancholy, and a total disinclination to activity, playfulness, and vivacity. These symptoms are increased to a frightful extent if their cause be in frequent operation. There is great timidity, bashfulness, and a dislike to society. The memory becomes impaired, the power of comprehension is dull, the whole mental faculties are defective, and idiocy, lunacy, or paralysis may supervene. The senses of vision and hearing fail, and may be finally lost. It is easy to

understand the reason that so many formidable disorders and diseases are caused by venereal excesses, when it is recollected, that coition produces the most vivid stimulation of the whole organs through the medium of the brain and nervous system. Such electrical or nervous shocks too frequently repeated must injure all parts, but especially those predisposed to disease in different persons; as the brain, the eye, the ear, lung, the heart, &c. Many authors have contended that the debility is more or less considerable, according to the situation of the body during the venereal act. "Corporis agitatio in coeundo, instar canum," says Sanctorius, "magis nocet, quam seminis emissio. Hæc solum viscera; illa omnes nervos et viscera defatigat." (Aphor. 34.) "Usus coitus stando lœdit musculos et eorum perspiratum diminuit." (Aphor. 40.) "Hinc quoque natura voluit mares," says Plazzonus, "fœminis incumbere in coitu, fœminas vero adhinnire quidem, non autem insilire aut inequitare maritis, infesto et infausto fœminini dominii omne." Every medical practitioner who is properly educated will admit the correctness of these conclusions.

M. Sainte-Marie attributes the loss of power and emaciation of the muscles of the loins and lower extremities to a morbid state of the spinal marrow—an opinion long denied, but warranted by many cases and dissections, which I shall detail hereafter.

Tissot relates the following extraordinary case on the authority of an eminent surgeon. A man who cohabited with prostitutes in the street, in the erect posture, was seized with weakness accompanied by severe pains in the loins, and an atrophy of the thighs and legs accompanied by paralysis. "He died after having been confined to his bed, for six months, in a state well calculated to excite pity and dread." An eminent friend of mine was once called to a case of an old military officer, who was seized

with apoplexy under similar circumstances, and fell insensible in the street. He was relieved with great difficulty, but in a few months became paralytic. A brief enumeration of the bad effects of venereal excesses on mind and body cannot fail to be interesting to many of my readers. I shall, therefore, give it, as concisely as possible.

The mind is greatly affected by the abuses under notice. All the intellectual faculties are enfeebled, the memory is injured or lost, the ideas are confused, idiocy or mania ensues, or the sufferers have a constant mental inquietude, a continual agony, a reproach of conscience, so acute as often to induce the shedding of tears; or distress or melancholy is imprinted on the countenance; the sleep is disturbed by unpleasant dreams, and is unrefreshing; while heartfelt regret, remorse or despair, terminate in melancholy, idiocy, madness, or suicide. This is not an exaggerated picture, for every experienced medical practitioner can attest its fidelity. The justly celebrated M. Esquirol has recorded a case, which terminated by suicide, (Dict. des Sciences Medicales, Art. Folie et Suicide); and the daily reports in the public papers, afford many similar instances. Some cannot sleep at all, while others are in a state of drowsiness or coma. All are more or less affected with hypochondriasis, nervousness, or to use more scientific terms, neuropathy, neuromania,; complaining of unpleasant sensations in every part of the body, *de omnibus morbis, et quibusdem aliis*, "of all unpleasant sensations, diseases, and even more," sadness, faintness, tears, palpitations, suffocations, &c.

These complaints may be caused by disorders in the brain or spinal marrow, or to speak more scientifically, in the cerebro-spinal system; or they may be purely symptomatic of derangement of the digestive system, or indigestion. Such patients generally, but not always, complain of pains in the head, chest, and abdomen; in the stomach

and intestines, in fact, in every part of the body. The melancholy countenance is more or less disfigured by eruptions, of one kind or other, especially the forehead, nose, and cheeks; and in some cases, the trunk and extremities are similarly affected; but more particularly when the constitution is contaminated by syphilis, or when that disease is imperfectly treated, supposed to be cured, but not cured. Cutaneous eruptions of this description very often appear on infants after birth, caused by parental transmission. The organs which were the primary cause of the diseases just described, suffer in common with all others in the body. It is an unerring maxim—"in eo loco, quo quis peccat, punietur," to use a free translation, "whatever part of the body one abuses, in that will he suffer or be punished." The force and truth of this observation are well illustrated by those who abuse the reproductive organs. Many of them lose the power of erection; others have premature emissions of the semen, even before the slightest approach, some with a partial or without any erection; more on evacuating the bladder, or bowels. Many have constant urethral discharges, mucous, prostatic or seminal, with or without sensual impulse; others suffer from frequent or constant painful priapisms or erections, without the power of ejaculation; others have a frequent and urgent desire to evacuate the bladder, five, ten, or twenty times a day, with some pain on so doing; while some have the stream of urine diminished in size, curved, flattened, forked, or doubled, with pain in the lower part of the abdomen, in the loins, groins, about or near the anus, and extending down one or both thighs or testicles; or reflected to the stomach, lung, heart, brain, eye, ear, &c. Many suffer severely from painful swellings of the testicles, or spermatic cords, penis, or pain or unpleasant sensations in the bladder, kidneys, which disorder the digestive, respiratory, circulatory, and cerebral functions. In many cases,

the urine, after being passed, for some time, deposits varied coloured sediments, reddish, whitish, brownish, &c., or it evolves a strong or fœtid odour. In fine, persons thus affected are often sterile, or totally incapable of accomplishing their part in the function, which perpetuates the species.

Women are liable to most of the diseases just described, as well as a vast number peculiar to their organization—as debilitating mucous and purulent discharges from the vagina, uterus and uterine tubes, profuse menstruation, as well as other diseases of these parts, and of the ovaries. I cannot enter into the description of female complaints in this work, as I have elsewhere, very fully considered them. (Manual of Midwifery, and Diseases of Women and Children, third edition.)

Though many recover their strength by abandoning their vile habit, and using tonics, there are others who remain debilitated for a long time, and even some few for the remainder of life. There is a want of tone in all the functions. The countenance is pale, yellowish, or leaden coloured; there are dark circles about the eyes, the eyelids are often red and swollen, there are partial warm or cold sweats on the forehead, chest, or general perspiration on the slightest exertion or during sleep; the digestion is bad or variable, the temper peevish and irritable, the person is apprehensive of some mortal disease, or a reverse of fortune; there is incapability for generation, while there may be morbid sensibility of the stomach and intestinal tube causing colic, distention from gas or air, and inflammation, irritation, or ulceration in the organs in the lower part of the abdomen, especially in the softer sex. In the latter cases, there are often dull pains in one or both loins extending down the lower limbs and towards the extremity of the lower bowel. I have been consulted in many cases of this kind, and also by letter. Fatal diarrhœa or great irritability of the bowels, piles and rectal discharges may result

from masturbation or other venereal excesses. Deslandes and Hoffman relate such cases; and I have also met with some of them.

Head-aches, spasms, convulsive movements, pains in the back and loins, spinal tenderness or irritation, violent palpitations, not only of the heart but all the arteries to the extremities of the fingers and toes, with laborious respirations, and sense of suffocation and fainting, with temporary loss of vision, hearing, and universal tremblings, are caused by excessive masturbation, onanism, and coition. There is now a lady, under my care, who experiences the whole of these disorders, from the immoderate excesses of her husband. There is another lady, about whose case I have been consulted, who is thrown into hysterics at the approach of her husband, who is an enlightened and virtuous clergyman of the Established Church, and who is moderate in the performance of his conjugal duties. It is worthy of remark that this lady, though formerly married for some years, was totally ignorant of conjugal rites until her present union. When with her former husband, he laboured under syphilis in its worst forms, and during five years he had not consummated marriage. Such cases are by no means rare, as will appear on reference to my work on *Medical Jurisprudence,* Second Edition, 1836.

Persons guilty of these excesses often become predisposed to rheumatic and neuralgic pains; and also to gout, according to Deslandes, Barthez, Scudamore, Ollivier, Ferrus, and many others.

Many of this class of persons, whose health is greatly injured or entirely destroyed, feel the greatest remorse. They recal the time to mind, when health was perfect, when they knew nothing of sexual abuses; they remember those who gave them the first notions of vice, to condemn and curse them; while they reproach themselves as the authors of all their miseries. They often declare that never

before were human beings so afflicted as they are, and that without the especial aid of Providence, they cannot bear up against their condition. Distressed by the past, and the anticipations of the future, they determine to end their agonies, unless the mind is strong and under the influence of religion, or they lose their reason or commit suicide. M. Orfila ascribes their condition, " to moral and physical disgust, intellectual apathy, without the hope of cure ; which often follow premature abuses of all kinds." (*Med. Legale.*) This may be true in some cases, but I agree in opinion with M. Deslandes, that if such persons knew the resources of nature and of the healing art, and the rapidity with which health may in general be restored on the abandonment of vice, their despair would be easily removed, and their existence prolonged to advanced age. The following case will prove the correctness of this conclusion :—

" A young gentleman, aged twenty-four years, and one of the finest men I have ever seen," says M. Sainte-Marie, " shut himself up in an isolated chateau, (mansion or castle), with an old domestic in the confidence of the family, so as to escape conscription. There, with a view of dissipating the *ennui* of his solitude, he furiously addicted himself to masturbation. After three years excesses and seclusion, he returned to the world with a pale anxious countenance, which was entirely ascribed to his confinement. His friends now urged him to marry, and enjoy an advantageous and agreeable establishment, which would remove the long *ennui* from which he suffered. But his powers betrayed him. On the morning after the first night of his marriage, he arose with shame and confusion, not having had the power, as Montaigne observes, to *stain the nuptial couch.* From this he conceived an utter contempt for himself, which degenerated into gloomy and profound despair. In a few days he arose from table, and swallowed

a large dose of arsenic, but this substance was fortunately vomited with the food he had taken. He then repaired to Lyons to seek death, which he now preferred to life. There he became acquainted with a celebrated duellist, and purposely insulted him, having no other view than to lose his life, with sword in hand. But the fate of arms decided otherwise; he wounded his antagonist, and this changed his resolution. He now thought that life was not all defect and humiliation; he wished to live, and with this view he came to consult me. His impotence was the most trivial matter in the case. There was a dorsal consumption commencing. I ordered iced fluids internally, and iced douches or affusions along the vertebral or spinal column, with a milk diet. This treatment effected a perfect cure in three months. He quitted Lyons, went to join his family, who were greatly distressed at his long absence. I consider at this time, (1817,)" observes the narrator, " that he is the most happy of husbands, as his wife has made him a father three times since his recovery. (*Traduct de Wichman.*)

Notwithstanding the favourable termination of this case, I must observe that intelligent young persons addicted to masturbation often become dull and stupid; for it is evident that the depressed state of mind and body which immediately succeeds the performance of the venereal act, which with them is excessive or nearly so, must depress the mind; although when the cause is removed a rapid recovery may in general be expected. This was the result of a case of idiocy, for the cure of which, the celebrated Graefe of Berlin removed the clitoris by excision. The particulars of this case, will be given in their proper place, hereafter. There are, however, examples of incurable idiocy and loss of reason, in which the brain and its connexions are seriously injured, as is evinced by loss of vision, hearing, convulsions, paralysis, &c. M. Serrurier,

(*Dict. des Sciences Med.* Art. *Pollution.*) M. Pinel had a similar case of a sculptor, aged twenty-eight years, in the infirmary of the Bicetre. (*Nosograph. Phil.* t. iii. p. 127.) I have treated six unfortunate examples. Such cases are comparatively of rare occurrence in these countries.

It is very remarkable that those who become idiots from the causes under consideration, have the sexual sensibility, whilst the intellectual powers diminish. One of my foreign distinguished correspondents, the late Baron Alibert, of Paris, met with a striking illustration, which he thus described. A female shepherdess, aged twenty years, addicted to masturbation, had her mind enfeebled in two years, and was stupid, while the venereal appetite had at the same time acquired so high a degree of exaltation, that she was brought to the hospital labouring under nymphomania. She gave great scandal by an incessant automatic motion, which she could not restrain. The head, chest, and superior part of the body were excessively thin, while the lower half was remarkably plump. The sight or touch of one of the opposite sex, produced excitement and pollution. "We could, on touching this girl," says the Baron, "cause agitation of her whole body, and even throw her into convulsions. She remained in a convulsonary state for half an hour, similar to that observed in persons at Saint Medard. Her condition did not improve, and she was returned to her parents, on account of the scandal she gave." The late philanthropist, and humane M. Parent-Duchatelet, whom I have so freely quoted, gives the following frightful history of a case somewhat similar. A girl, aged seven years, had resided with her grandmother, a respectable and very religious woman; and at the end of this time returned to her parents. She became sad and dull, and rapidly lost flesh, the cause of which was sought for in vain. Her mother put some questions to her one day, which to her amazement she clearly understood. She

immediately related that from the age of four years, she constantly amused herself with boys of ten and twelve years of age, and that, what distressed her since her return home was, not having the same opportunities, but she supplied her desires alone. The parents used every means to eradicate her vice, by reasoning, caresses, presents, all kinds of dress, by medical and religious aid, and by correction, but all was useless. The child put her hands upon herself, even in sleep. After a short time, she wished the death of her parents; indeed, she threatened to cause their death, so that she might use their money and follow men. The parents were compelled to bolt their chamber door at night, as she threatened to murder them while asleep. She constantly applied her hand whenever her mother turned her back. All these facts were proved at a judicial inquiry. (*Annales d'Hygiene et de Med. Legale*, Janv. 1832.)

Other moral depravities also result from venereal abuses. The mind, accustomed to search for pleasure in a certain circle of ideas, can find no others, there is a repugnance to sexual intimacy, and both men and women have displayed it. Baron Alibert relates the case of a young man addicted to self-pollution in infancy, who followed the business of an artist. The appearance of the picture of a beautiful figure of a man inspired in him, an extraordinary emotion, though totally unconnected with the taste of the sodomists. On viewing this figure he had erection and ejaculation. M. Alibert advised him to paint the figure of a woman, and renounce Apollo du Belvedere for Venus de Medicis. In a short time nature, more powerful than factitious thoughts, regained her rights, and he was completely cured. (*Nouv. Elem. de Therapeutique*, third edition, t. ii.) Other depravities of this kind will appear in the cases narrated hereafter.

CHAPTER VII.

DISEASES CAUSED BY VENEREAL EXCESSES.

Diseases of the Cerebro-spinal system, or Brain and Spinal Marrow.—The universal excitement of the whole body during the act of generation, or its abuses, cannot be often repeated without inducing a host of diseases, which vary according to the predisposition of individuals. There are few diseases which have not resulted from venereal excesses; indeed, some doubt if there be a single malady which may not be induced. It is difficult to admit this last conclusion in its full extent, still few can deny, that venereal abuses are amongst the exciting causes of most of the diseases of the human body. The following brief outline of the history of diseases arising from these causes, will prove the truth of this position, and I am much indebted for it to M. Deslandes. In such cases, the symptoms induced by masturbation or coition already described, will be apparent, (see p. 281).

Apoplexy may occur in those predisposed to it, from these causes. The disorder of the circulation and respiration during the ejaculation of the semen, produces great determination of blood to the head, which may end in the rupture of a blood vessel in the brain or cerebellum. This has also happened during the process of digestion, when the distention of the stomach impedes the breathing. Those aged men who have died suddenly in the act of coition, were often killed by apoplexy. Such cases are recorded by Cœlius Aurelianus, Aretæus, Lommius, Tissot, Pinel, Cruveilhier, Londe, &c.

Van Hers describes the case of a man aged forty years,

who was attacked with apoplexy, while in the arms of his wife, the first night of marriage. He was relieved by a treatment commenced on the fifth day; but being furiously amorous, *furens amoris*, he committed other excesses, and died of the disease in a few days. (*Observ. Med.* lib. i.)

Hoffman relates a similar example. It was that of a soldier who fell dead before he achieved his object. On opening the body, there was effusion of blood in the brain. (*De Morb. ex nim. Vener.*)

M. Serres relates an analagous case in his work on the *Comparative Anatomy of the Brain*, t. ii. p. 602. It was that of a man aged thirty-two years, who excited by liquor, was seized with apoplexy during coition. In addition to the apoplectic symptoms, there was strong erection of the penis, which continued to the approach of death. The brain was sound, but the middle lobe of the cerebellum was highly irritated. The substance of the cerebellum was ruptured in different parts, and clots of blood were found on the superior vermicular processes.

I have met with a case nearly similar. A newly married man, aged twenty-six, of very full habit, died suddenly in the arms of his wife, the first night of his marriage. As he had been in apparent good health, it was supposed he was poisoned. On inspecting the body twenty-four hours after death, before the coroner's inquest, it was observed that there had been erection of the penis with seminal emission. There was no trace of poison in the stomach or bowels, but the base of the cerebellum was highly congested. In other cases apoplexy occurs soon after the act of reproduction.

M. Andral describes the case of a hotel-keeper, aged forty-nine years, who fell dead in the street as he was leaving a house in which he had been committing a debauch. There were two apoplectic clots in the right hemisphere of the cerebellum, and another in the left hemisphere of the

brain. (*Clinique Med.* t. v. 2 edit.) I must again observe that there is great determination of blood to the brain during coition, and especially in those who are intemperate. And hence in such cases, there is often profound sleep, or slight coma after the act. I know a gentleman, aged fifty, a great votary to Bacchus and Venus, who is frequently affected in this manner, and on some occasions, while asleep, his body is so cold and his respiration so slow, that his wife must shake him violently before she can awake him. He continued these excesses for six years, when he totally abandoned them on account of his obligation to his helpless children and amiable companion, and is now quite free from them, and in good health.

M. Serres relates the case of a man precisely similar, except that he persevered, and died of apoplexy of the cerebellum. Previous to death there was erection of the penis, and an abundant spermatic emission.

M. Guiot gives the case of a man, aged fifty-two years, who was very much addicted to women, and who, after several congestions of the brain, was seized with mania ; his genital organs were remarkably developed, and he had frequent pollutions. The last congestion was followed by palsy of one side, which killed him in twelve hours. Among his symptoms were erection of the penis, and the automatic motions of masturbation. On opening the head, there was an apoplectic effusion in the cerebellum. (*Biblioth. Med.* Nov. 1827.)

Chronic inflammation of the substance or membranes of the brain and cerebellum are often induced by masturbation or excessive venery.

M. Deslandes describes a case of chronic arachnitis induced by this cause. The patient was a boy, aged seven years, admitted into the Infant's Hospital. He was very

much addicted to masturbation, during which act, he was seized with convulsive motions; and he finally became an idiot. His repugnance to every kind of exercise was extreme, he remained motionless, his powers declined, his limbs wasted, and he became totally blind. His hearing and other senses were greatly enfeebled. Galvanism and other means were "tried in vain." He soon died, and the membranes over the superior longitudinal sinus were found highly inflamed, as also the superior surface of the brain itself.

In a case, somewhat similar, related by M. Desruelles, the disease was in the substance of the brain. There was paralysis of the left arm, with convulsions of the right, and of the muscles of the face. There was an abscess found in the hemisphere of the brain, opposite to the paralytic side, and corresponding with the members which had been convulsed.—(*Recueil period. de la Soc. de Med. de Paris*, Avril, 1822).

Chronic alterations are also found in the cerebellum of masturbators. These have been considered by some physicians as the cause, and by others as the effect of onanism. It is, perhaps, impossible to determine, in the present state of science, whether the disease of the cerebellum or the masturbation preceded the other. The only thing certain is their co-existence, and this is so common, as to remove all doubt on the subject. A few examples will prove this fact.—A girl addicted to masturbation finally prostituted herself to gratify her desires; but this did not prevent her from employing all kinds of manœuvres for self-abuse, to supply the insufficiency of her daily cohabitations with men; in fine, she was attacked with nymphomania. Ashamed of her state, she allowed the actual cautery to be applied to the clitoris, but without any advantageous result. She ultimately died, and there was a chronic in-

duration found in the middle lobe of the cerebellum. Different callosities in this organ, showed that it had been inflamed for a long time.—(*Serres, Op. Cit.*, p. 606).

Gall relates the case of a boy, aged thirteen years, who practised masturbation intensely, the two-thirds of whose cerebellum were occupied by an abscess (*Traité des Functions de Cerveau*, t. iii.)

A young man, aged nineteen years, who could not be restrained, even by mechanical means, from continuing self-pollution, had his penis scarified, so that the pain might prevent him from accomplishing the motions he was accustomed to make incessantly. All means were, however, useless, and he died in three months in the Hotel Dieu, in a state of extreme emaciation. He was often attacked with epileptic fits. On opening his head, there was an encephaloid tumour in the cerebellum, of the size of a nut, which had commenced ramollissement or softening.—(*Nouv. Biblioth. Med. Sep.*, 1827).

A girl, aged ten years, addicted to self-abuse, and of a dejected character, complained for about four months of acute pains in the head. These pains, for the last three weeks of life, caused piercing cries. She constantly placed her hand upon her head, became comatose, was affected with strabismus or squinting, and dilated pupils. She died, and on dissection there was observed inflammation, with purulent discharge on the superior part of the cerebellum, with tubercles, and white softening of this organ. —(*Payen, Essai sur l'Encephalite*, 1826).

A most extraordinary and, perhaps, unprecedented case is recorded by M. Combette, in the *Rev. Med. Avril*, 1831, in which there was complete destruction of the cerebellum of a girl, aged eleven years, who practised masturbation excessively. The organ was replaced by a gelatiniform membrane, extending over the medulla spinalis, or commencement of the spinal marrow. The genital organs

afforded proofs of the former practice. A finger could be easily introduced into the vagina. There was no hymen; the external lips of the vulva were vividly red, and appeared to have been frequently irritated. This girl was ricketty, could not stand or walk when she entered the Hospital for Orphans in 1830, and it was remarked that she always lay on her back.

It would be easy to multiply cases of this description, in which the different parts of the brain, cerebellum, or investing membranes are diseased by venereal excesses; but a few shall suffice.

A young soldier was troubled with frequent nocturnal pollutions, succeeded by epilepsy, which were induced by excessive masturbation. During the perpetration of this shameful vice, he forcibly extended the penis, until it acquired ten inches in length, and resembled a piece of sinew. He was emaciated to such a degree as to resemble a living skeleton; his sight was totally lost; his mental imbecility was extreme; his skin earthy and clammy; his tongue tremulous; his eyes sunken; his teeth decayed; his gums ulcerated; and after remaining for six months in this miserable state, he died.—(*M. Serrurier, Dict. des Sciences Med.* Art. *Pollution*). Many such deplorable cases are on record. The following one also proves that the *brain, spinal marrow, and arachnoid membrane* may be diseased.

A watchmaker, aged seventeen years, in good health, commenced masturbation, which he repeated three times daily. The spermatic ejaculation was always preceded or accompanied by a slight loss of reason, and a convulsive motion of the entensor muscles of the head, which were forcibly drawn backwards, whilst the neck was extraordinarily swollen. He experienced great depression at the end of the first year, after each act, but he persevered to such an extent as at last to dread the approach of death.

He now suffered from seminal emissions without erection, or with imperfect erection, which reduced his strength to the lowest state. The spasms of the neck continued generally for fifteen, but never less than eight hours, caused him to utter loud screams, and prevented him from taking any solid or even fluid aliment. He fell into a most helpless state, which was increased by the horror of remorse. "On seeing him," says Tissot, "I found him more like a corpse than a living being, incapable of any motion. There was a pale watery discharge of blood from his nose; foam issued from his mouth; he laboured under diarrhœa, and his alvine motions passed in bed, without his perceiving them. The flow of seed was constant; his eyes were dim and bleared; pulse very small, quick, and frequent; the respiration impeded; general emaciation extreme, except in the legs, which were œdematous or dropsical. The state of his mind was not less deteriorated; without idea, memory, incapable of uttering two sentences; without reflection or inquietude of any kind; without any other feeling but pain, which returned with every access, or at least every three days—a being beneath a brute, a spectacle most horrible to behold! I ordered him most strengthening remedies, and those most powerful in removing spasm without effect. He died at the end of some weeks, in June 1757, with general œdema, or dropsy of the whole body." (*Traitè sur l'Onanisme*, sect. iv.) This might appear an exaggerated narrative to non-medical readers; but there is no well-informed or scientific medical practitioner who could deny that such a lamentable case might occur.

M. Bouteille reports a case on the veracity of Lasserverie the senior surgeon of the hospital at Lyons, in which most of the symptoms resulting from a cerebral disease existed on the right side of the body, and consequently indicated a disease of the opposite side of the brain. I have also adduced

abundant evidence of this statement in the *Physician's Vademecum*, eleventh edition, 1837. The patient was a girl aged eleven years, who had contracted the vile habit of self-abuse some years previously, notwithstanding the vigilance of an attentive and virtuous mother. She became extremely nervous, and suffered from convulsive motions in her right arm and leg, accompanied by pain in the knee and sole of the foot. All remedies failed, and at length she could not swallow her food. She complained of headache, giddiness, and defect of vision and hearing on the right side, and the pains in the limbs became intense. She was finally cured, and the principal remedy was electricity used in different ways. (*Tratè de la Chorée.*)

Epilepsy is often induced by excessive coition and venereal abuses. The ancients designated coition *epilepsia brevis*. Galen, Van-Hers, Tissot, Zimmerman, Hoffman, Haller, Esquirol, and many others, describe such cases. I knew a young gentleman aged twenty years, who was seized with epilepsy in a repeated act of adultery. I have also treated others, in whom the disease was caused by masturbation.

M. Goupil relates the case of a male child, aged eighteen months, addicted to artificial excitation. At the age of three years and a half it was seized with convulsions, which frequently returned. All kinds of mechanical contrivances were applied on the limbs and genitals, which failed for some time, but at length succeeded. The intervals between the epileptic fits now became longer, and a cure was effected. The child was in perfect health at the tenth year.

The celebrated Zimmerman describes the case of a man aged twenty-three years, who became epileptic from the cause. The fits also came on after each nocturnal pollution. After the fits were over, he suffered from severe pains in the kidneys and coccyx. He avoided his habit

and got well; but relapsed in a short time, when the disease returned. After some time it attacked him in the street, and he was found dead, one morning, in his chamber, having tumbled out of bed, bathed in his blood.

Another convulsive disease caused by masturbation is *St. Vitus's dance*, a remarkable case of which is related by M. A. Petit. A cure was effected by the discontinuance of the habit.

All kinds of *Mental Alienation* may be induced by venereal excesses, and medical practitioners often overlook the cause, according to that celebrated physician, M. Esquirol. In his opinion, *mania* is the least seldom induced; and he adds, that maniacs who practice masturbation, offer a great obstacle to a cure. Such persons generally become stupid, consumptive, and emaciated, and usually die.

Idiocy is the commonest form of alienation caused by self-abuse. Esquirol in France, and Holst in Norway, have attested this fact.

Melancholy is often induced by the same cause as observed by Esquirol and Pinel. The last author states, that *paralysis* complicated with loss of reason, especially monomania and idiocy, was particularly observed in masturbators, as well as in those guilty of other venereal excesses. It is also an important fact that paralysis is much less frequent in women than in men, and that masturbation produces less mental aberrations of the former than the latter. This likewise proves that this vice is less common among women. and also that these are less sensual than the other sex, (see p. 162). It appears that of two hundred and fifty-six individuals admitted into the asylum of Charenton during the years 1826-7-8, there were twenty-four men whose madness was to be attributed to masturbation, or libertinage; whilst three women only were affected by the same causes. One-twentieth of the insane at Salpetriere consist of prostitutes, most of whom are affected with *idiocy* and *para-*

lysis. It is also a fact that masturbation is a more common cause of insanity among the rich than the poor, according to the reports of the French asylums, (vide ante, p. 70.)

The son of a most respectable and wealthy merchant in the city, was always of a weak mind, and at the age of sixteen years was not as grown as a boy of twelve. Long before the latter age he was initiated into vice by a servant. He is now, November 1838, thirty-five years, and a perfect idiot. The testes are reduced to the size and roundness of marbles. The sight of every strange female excites in him lascivious desires, and he would use violence to accomplish his wishes unless restrained by his keepers. It is necessary to caution newly hired female servants against him. He is never allowed to sleep or be alone, but as little as possible. His intellect is weakening every year. The records of medicine contain many similar cases.

Diseases of the Spinal Marrow. Tabes dorsalis—Myelitis.—When we consider the phenomena that accompany and succeed the functions of reproduction, it must be manifest that the *spinal marrow* must also be affected by the abuse of it. This was the opinion of Hippocrates, who termed the disease *tabes dorsalis,* dorsal consumption, but the existence of such a malady was long denied, until recent pathology had demonstrated it. The importance of the spinal marrow, a continuation of the brain, in supplying the chest, upper extremities, abdomen, and lower extremities with nerves, is now admitted by every well informed medical practitioner; and hence the multitude of disorders caused by spinal relaxation, irritation, curvature, or deformity. All modern works on the practice of medicine and surgery attest the truth of this fact, as the reader will perceive by the perusal of my account of the diseases of the spinal marrow in the *Physician's Vademecum* already quoted.

The agitation and involuntary contractions of the mus-

cles of the loins, and inferior portion of the body, and the tetanic spasm which seizes them at the moment of seminal ejaculation, the cramps which often accompany it; the general feeling of sadness, fatigue, and weakness which follows it, especially in the loins and lower limbs, clearly indicate the impressions made on the spinal marrow, the source from which all the muscles thus affected derive their nerves. Accordingly we find abundant cases, verified by dissection, demonstrative of this pathology.

The local symptoms of disordered spinal marrow caused by excesses of venery, are various unpleasant sensations, felt along the back, loins, or lower extremities. These sensations sometimes occur immediately after the venereal act, or may become of longer continuance, and finally are constant. In most cases, the pain is dull, and more troublesome than acute, and obliges the patient when he or she sits or stands, to change his or her posture frequently; and the pain is usually less, or entirely gone when the person lies in horizontal posture, either in bed or on a sofa. In other cases, there is a sense of formication or creeping of ants along the spine. These sensations vary in different individuals, and each experiences a peculiar one. Thus a man who, for two years, indulged in sexual excesses night and morning, complained of a sensation in his back as if it had been severely bruised. Others feel, as if a cord was tightly drawn round them; and more of a gnawing, tearing, piercing, or dull pain, extending to one or both inferior limbs, and sometimes to the genital organs. These pains are frequently most severe and excruciating, and particularly in the loins and hips of most persons, who commit venereal excesses, of whatever kind. When the disease of the spinal marrow advances, the pains become more severe, extending down one or both lower extremities; there are cramps or tremblings of certain muscles, or contractions; gradual weakness advances, of the lower half of the body,

and paraplegia, or palsy from the loins downwards, finally succeeds.

The following cases illustrate this disease:—A patient was reduced to the most extreme emaciation by nocturnal emissions, induced by venereal excesses. A variety of remedies were tried, in vain, and he died at the end of four months, from excruciating pains in the loins and joints. (*Serrurier, Dict. des Sciences Med.*, Article *Pollution*). There was every reason to conclude in this case, that there was disease of the lumbar part of the spinal marrow, or of its membranes. A somewhat analogous case is published by Hatte, of a young man, who was seized with lumbago, after excessive coition, which alternated with a state of satyriasis. (*Anc. Journ. de Med.*, tom. ii.) Van Swieten describes a remarkable case in point. He tried every thing, for three years, in the case of a young man who was seized after excessive unnatural indulgence, with vague and wandering pains in the back, accompanied by heat, and by a sense of painful coldness in the loins. His lower limbs became so cold that he sat close to the fire in summer. There was a continual rotatory movement of the testicles in the scrotum, and the patient felt a similar motion in the loins. (*Aphorism*, 586.) The spinal marrow was evidently affected in the following case of a masturbator, detailed by himself:—"My nerves are extremely feeble, my arms without power, and always trembling, and always in a continual perspiration. I have violent pains in the stomach, arms, legs, chest, kidneys, &c. &c." I agree with M. Deslandes, that many of the rheumatisms complained of by those who abuse the sexual functions, are neuralgiæ, &c.; and that these arise from more or less disorder or disease of the spinal marrow. I am also disposed to think, that many of the numerous cases of spinal irritation in girls, from puberty to the adult age, result from sedentary employments, and perhaps occa-

sionally, from the cause now under consideration. But I by no means agree with some, who ascribe all such cases, as well as vaginal mucous discharges, so common at this period of life, to the latter cause alone.

M. Bertini, of Turin, describes the case of a young man, who at the age of twelve, addicted himself to pollution; soon after which he was seized with tremblings of the arms and legs, accompanied with giddiness and pains in the head. He persisted in his vicious habit to the age of twenty-two years. He at length complained of a sensation of tingling in his legs and feet, and likewise of a continual trembling in these parts, which extended to the rest of his body. The agitation was so great, that he could not remain in bed, nor stand without support. There was pain on both sides of the sacro-lumbar region or small of the back, which was increased by pressure. Twenty-five leaches were applied, and they extracted about twelve ounces of blood. The trembling immediately ceased; the patient arose from his bed, and walked along the ward of the hospital, without any support. From that moment, he neither felt pains nor trembling, and he left the hospital free from complaint, eight days afterwards. He finally regained perfect health. (*Rev. Med., December* 1825.) I have repeatedly observed, that leeching, cupping, and counter-irritation over the loins and sacrum afford rapid relief in similar cases, and I have now (January 1838) a case of this kind under my care at the hospital. Such cases are often supposed to be lumbago, or disease of the kidney.

The *tetanic* form of disorder, resulting from the spinal marrow, is rarely excited by venereal excesses. Tissot describes one case of this kind, in a young man. The disease commenced by stiffness of the neck and spine, and soon extended to the other members; and the patient, for some time before his death, lay with his body bent back-

wards, and without power to stir either hand or foot; and he could not take aliment unless it was put into his mouth. He remained, for some weeks, in this deplorable condition, when he died almost without any suffering.

Paralysis which is the consequence of myelitis or inflammation of the spinal marrow in cases of masturbators, is much more common than tetanus. It attacks the lower extremities, but may likewise seize the upper. The following case occurred to Baron Dupruytren:—A young man, aged twenty-two years, who had addicted himself to excessive masturbation, was suddenly seized with paralysis, and deprived of all power of locomotion. His limbs were greatly wasted. M. Dupruytren observed to his pupils, that the myelitis was in the cervical portion of the spinal marrow, and when it extended to the origin of the phrenic nerve, it would cause instant death. He considered that the insatiable rage for, and practice of masturbation, had caused the disease; and that there was an atrophy of the anterior roots of the spinal nerves. (*Lancette Française, Septembre* 1833.) A man, aged forty years, who was much addicted to women, wine, and masturbation, was seized with tremblings of the arms and legs, bad digestion, melancholy, and finally with general paralysis, which commenced in the superior extremities. He concealed the real cause of his disease, for a long time, but at length confessed it. He died a miserable object, and was his own destroyer. M. Ollivier describes a most extraordinary case of paralaplegia, or palsy of the lower part of the body, caused by masturbation, which continued from the age of twenty-nine to the fiftieth year. All remedies proved useless. (*Traité de la Moelle Epinière, seconde edition.*) Haller also relates a case on the authority of Werzpremi, of a man, whose brain and spinal marrow were affected from the same cause. He complained, for thirty years, of pains along the spine, and especially on stooping, and

his lower limbs became so feeble at length that he could not stand for a minute. His memory failed, he became stupid, his sight was very weak, and his emaciation extreme. After having concealed the cause of his complaint for a long time, he at last avowed it with confusion, and the ordinary treatment for some months completely re-established his health.

Caries of the vertebræ and all forms of curvatures of the spine are also caused by masturbation. Sabatier attests this fact even after the sixth year. Boyer confirms the opinion, and relates cases of caries with disease of the spinal marrow and its membranes. Serres, Latour, Janson, Dalandeterie, and others, also give histories of well marked cases. In some of the cases related by these observers, the spinal marrow was first affected, and in others, the diseases of it, succeeded the spinal deformities.

Permanent *contractions of the lower extremities* for some time are caused by disease of the spinal marrow, which are induced by masturbation, especially in children and youths. M. Guersent, the eminent physician of Paris, relates a marked case in proof of this pathology. (*Gaz. Med., Fevr.* 1832.)

Having now traced nervous and paralytic affections, with tremblings, spasms, and various unpleasant or painful sensations in the inferior and superior extremities, and in the back, muscles of the chest and abdomen, as caused by premature and other venereal excesses, I shall next describe the diseases of the senses induced by these causes.

Diseases of the senses caused by venereal excesses.—*Loss of sight and hearing* frequently result from venereal abuses. Hoffman describes several examples. He cites the case of a young man, who greatly abused himself from the age of fifteen to twenty-three years. He experienced great pain in his head and eyes, during the seminal emission. When he attempted to read, he felt as if intoxicated, the

pupils became considerably dilated, and there was great pain in the eyes. The eyelids hung very much, the eyes were bathed in tears, and there was a whitish discharge from their angles. (*Consult. case* 103).

Amaurosis is often induced. Dr. Juengken, professor of ophthalmic surgery, at Berlin, observes in his valuable work on the subject, that in cases of amaurosis caused by masturbation, the pupil does not remain central; it is displaced superiorly, the superior part of the iris is straighter, as if retracted at its ciliary border. This symptom may, however, appear in scrofulous ophthalmia, and idiopathic iritis. In addition to this symptom, M. Sanson informs us, that there is photophia, or a greater or less degree of intolerance of light before this kind of amaurosis. (*Dict. de Med. et Chir. Prat.*, art. *Amaurose*). Scarpa well observes, that amaurosis induced by excessive masturbation or coition, is, in general, incurable. (*Treatise on Diseases of the Eye*). M. Buzzi, a later author, says he has cured four such cases, on the abandonment of the habit, by tonics, wine, &c. (*Annali Universali di Medicina*, 1829.) Dr. Rognetta, in an essay on amaurosis, observes, that nothing so much enervates the body as frequent emissions of the semen; and especially when they are induced by the hand. The spasm which accompanies them, throws the body into all the infirmities of old age, while the retina and optic nerve gradually lose their faculty, and blindness is the result. He also relates several cases of amaurosis, which defied all means, and which owed their origin to *luxuria manuensis—opus manuum*. He reports the case of a young jesuit, aged nineteen years, a native of Palermo, who laboured under great defect of vision, amounting to blindness. This unfortunate youth practised masturbation seven times a day; and sometimes committed a more horrible crime. He was strenuously advised to discontinue his vices, to return home, and bathe

in the sea. A clerical student, aged twenty years, applied to me in 1825, affected with amaurosis. He was totally blind. On inquiring into the history of his disease, I asked him about venereal indulgences. He became confused, and burst into tears, and confessed that he committed excesses in self-abuse. He also stated, that he had consulted many of the most eminent medical practitioners in this kingdom whom he named; but none afforded him relief, nor did any one of them even allude to the cause of his disease. He had been studying for the church, but abandoned it, on account of his loss of vision. He despaired of relief, and at first refused to take any medicine, though he was finally cured. M. Sanson mentions the case of a clerk of a notary, who from great excesses of different kinds, became amaurotic, and all remedies failed to relieve him. (*Lancette Franc., Oct.* 1831). The cause of blindness in these cases is easily explained. The sight is almost obliterated after the completion of the act of reproduction, and excessive repetition may destroy it. In proof of this assertion Hoffman, mentions the case of an abandoned woman, whose sight was obscured after each sexual congress; and she finally lost it. (*De Morb. ex nim. ven.*) It rarely happens that vision is suddenly destroyed; it is generally enfeebled by degrees; so that by the sufferer abandoning the vicious course, it may remain defective, or a cure may be effected.

Lorry was the first to observe that the convulsive and spasmodic motions of the muscles of the eye-balls during venereal excesses, were followed by strabismus, or squinting. (*See Houston's Manual of Diseases of the Eye,* 1838. English edition.)

Defective hearing and deafness may also be induced, by the causes under consideration. These diseases are, comparatively speaking, of rare occurrence; but we sometimes meet with cases in which the patient complains of noises

of different kinds in one or both ears; and of varied sounds, or of ringing, similar to rustling of trees, and other unpleasant sensations. The hearing certainly becomes dull, and even incurable deafness may be caused by venereal excesses. In such cases as well as in amaurosis, great benefit will often be derived, and sometimes a cure effected by a judicious use of strychnia, both internally and externally.

I have repeatedly been consulted in many cases of temporary and permanent deafness, in young persons as well as in adults, arising from the causes under consideration. Some of these were speedily cured by the sufferer abandoning his errors, and by the use of ordinary remedies.

The senses of *smell, taste,* and *touch* are often disordered by the causes under notice; and a cure is more easily accomplished in these, than in the derangements of the other senses just described.

Diseases of the circulatory system.—Continued and typhus fevers are sometimes induced by venereal excesses. Every writer on these diseases includes excessive venery among their causes. This was done from the most remote period of antiquity. Hippocrates gives the history of a youth aged sixteen years, who after having indulged in excesses with women and wine, was seized with all the symptoms of a typhoid fever. (*De Morb. Vulgaribus, Lib.* 3). Bartholin was called to treat the case of a newly married man, who was attacked, after conjugal excesses, with an acute fever, accompanied by all the usual symptoms, which was cured by the ordinary remedies. Hoffman describes the case of a man who, after venereal excesses, was seized with fever, which continued for several days. (*Op. cit.* 20, 21). Tissot records the cases of two vigorous young men, one of whom was seized the morning after his marriage, and the other on the second morning after his, with intense fever, which readily yielded to appropriate

remedies. Sauvages states that fever is common in India from the same causes; while Pinel attests, that mucous and typhous fevers are often induced in temperate climates, by excess of coition or masturbation. (*Nosograph. Philos., 4th Ed.*, t. i.) According to other more recent writers, ardent fevers, are often excited in the East Indies, and yellow fever in the West Indies, by the abuses under notice.

Diseases of the digestive system.—In consequence of the strong sympathy which exists, by means of nervous connexion between the digestive and sexual apparatus, the diseases of the one will readily affect the other. Hence it follows, that the digestive organs are greatly disordered by sexual abuses, and by the diseases of the genito-urinary organs, or any portion of them. The following symptoms usually occur from such causes:—derangement or loss of appetite; general debility; uncomfortable distention of the stomach after dinner or any full repast; flatulent or acid eructations; languor and aversion to motion; great lowness of spirits, and complaints of unpleasant sensations in every part of the body; rumination; sense of oppression and sinking after eating; heart-burn; irregularity of appetite; either obstinate costiveness, or diarrhœa; the alvine motions are brown or black; small slow pulse, quickened upon the slightest exertion; palpitation; flushed countenance after a meal; the tongue dry, and generally white in the morning; pale urine [depositing a red (lithic acid) or a white sediment (the phosphates), with an oily pellicle on the surface]; cold extremities; sallow countenance; various affections of the senses; depraved vision, &c.; pain in the head and breast; dry skin; sometimes, however, profuse diaphoresis or salivation; disturbed sleep, frightful dreams, hectic fever, symptoms of hypochondriasis.

All these symptoms will not be present in every case of indigestion, though they exist invariably in bad cases; and

are readily removed by proper remedies. I may here also observe, that the lower bowel is often diseased in those persons who commit venereal excesses, and is productive of painful suffering.

Diseases of the lympathic system.—The debilitating effects of venereal excesses often derange the absorbent or lymphatic system, and induce scrofula in young subjects. It frequently happens that scrofula and many other diseases disappear at puberty, when the sexual organs begin to develope; though other diseases occur at this period; and the glands in the neck, under the arms, and in the groins, sometimes become enlarged and inflamed, and may even suppurate, forming painful abscesses. The celebrated Cabanis has well described such cases, and every observant medical practitioner occasionally observes them. "From the moment that the evolution of the sexual organs commences, there is a general movement in the lymphatic system, the glands of the groins, the breasts, and those under the arms and in the neck enlarge, and often become painful. The first essay of venereal pleasures," continues this celebrated author, "is often necessary to complete the organs which supply them; thus the general enlargement of all the glands, and especially those of the breasts, the anterior surface of the neck, is often the consequence of this vivid commotion. This is most remarkable in women." Lordat relates a remarkable case in proof of this pathology. It was that of a young woman, the glands of whose neck inflamed and suppurated a few days after marriage; and thus increased and diminished in size according as she enjoyed or avoided the embraces of her husband. (Dumas. *Principes de Physiologie*). I also know a lady, aged thirty years, who informed me that the mammary glands became hot, tense, and very much swollen under the same circumstances, and that this state exists during the whole period

of pregnancy, and until the cessation of lactation, or suckling.

M. Dalandeterie relates two bad cases of scrofula, excited by venereal abuses. It is well known that this disease is always aggravated by debilitating causes. It is now also admitted, by many eminent pathologists, that curvatures of the spine, caries of the vertebræ, rickets, and even pulmonary tubercles (consumption) are scrofulous affections, and are often developed by masturbation, and other venereal excesses.

Rickets, deformities of the spine, arrest of growth, and all scrofulous complaints are often caused by venereal abuses. (See p. 305.) Portal, Petit, Richard, and Villermay, record many instances. Serrurier relates the case of a man who was reduced to the last state of marasmus, or emaciation, by venereal excesses. This unfortunate person, on attempting to sit in an easy chair, fractured his right thigh-bone in the middle, while crossing it over the left one. Thus, even that rare disease, medically termed friability of bone, may be caused by the baneful excesses, to which allusion has been so often made in these pages.

I have elsewhere described every species of SPINAL AND OTHER DEFORMITIES OF THE BONES, as well as every species of SCROFULA. (See *Lectures, on Diseases of Children*, London Medical and Surgical Journal, 1834-5-6. *Manual of Midwifery and Diseases of Women and Children, 3rd edition*, 1831. *The Physician's Vademecum; or, Manual of the Practice of Medicine, 11th edition*, 1837.)

Phthisis — pulmonary consumption.—Many eminent pathologists consider pulmonary consumption closely allied to, if not a species of, scrofula, on account of the tubercles or small tumours in the substance of the lung, which suppurate and produce the disease. This is an ancient as well as a modern conclusion. Two of my relations and

namesakes, who wrote on pulmonary consumption, inclined to entertain this opinion. I shall not now stop to discuss the pathology of phthisis; but proceed to prove that this direful, and I believe incurable disease, whatever advertising *curers* (the St. John Longs, Ramadges, Holmes, and Congreves) may publish to the contrary, is often accelerated by venereal excesses.

It is well known that the respiratory organs are greatly agitated and congested during the venereal act, and that the breathing becomes affected. "How many young persons," says Portal in his work on Pulmonary consumption, "are the victims of their unfortunate habit. Physicians daily see them imbecile, or so enervated both morally and physically, that they only enjoy a miserable existence; while some die of marasmus, and many of true pulmonary consumption." It results from numerous and well attested facts according to Fournier and Begin, that persons addicted to onanism or other excesses, are almost always remarkable for the incomplete development of their chests, and for sudden derangement of respiration on making any slight exertion, while such individuals very often contract either chronic catarrhs, or deeper seated diseases, as bronchites, which terminate in well marked phthisis. (*Dict. des Sciences Med.* Art. *Masturbation.*) M. Broussais places amongst the causes of phthisis, "erotic spasms," however excited. (*Hist. des Phlegm. Chroniques.*) M. Deslandes relates two melancholy cases of consumption in persons of seventeen and twenty years of age, which were excited by excessive masturbation. *Asthma* is also induced by the same cause, as well as *diseases of the heart* and larger blood-vessels connected with it. It is impossible but that the frequent repetition of an act which renders the motions of the heart so strong, so frequent and so tumultuous, must produce aneurismal dilatations, thickening of the parietes or substance of the affected organ, as well as many other

diseases, both of its structure and of the large blood-vessels connected with it. Thus MM. Fournier and Begin, correctly observe, in the work already cited, that in some cases, palpitations and considerable morbid changes in the heart and large vessels could be ascribed to no other cause than venereal excess of some kind or other. Sir Astley Cooper lately informed me in consultation, on the case of a young gentleman a patient of mine, that he had long since observed the tumultuous action of the heart in those who committed the excesses under notice. I have fully described the symptoms and treatment of all the diseases of the heart in another work, to which I must refer the reader, *The Physicians' Vademecum*, 1837, and cannot notice them further in these pages. I have also cited cases of sudden death during coition from rupture of an aneurism near the heart, and also from apoplexy, or rupture of blood-vessels in the brain. Every well informed medical practitioner knows, that disorder or disease in any part of the body, may derange the whole frame, and induce diseases in every tissue in the human fabric, even in that of bone. But the different organs and tissues are affected in different degrees, in proportion to the size and importance of the nerves which supply them; and to the degree of sympathy which exists between them. It is also a pathological axiom, that an organ or organs which constitute a physiological system, or an apparatus, will suffer most when primarily disordered or diseased; while they will derange, more or less, all the rest of the body. Accordingly we observe, that the genito-urinary organs when over exerted or diseased, suffer in common with all others similarly affected.

Having already briefly noticed the disorders and diseases caused by the latter, in the cerebro-spinal system, the respiratory, circulatory, and digestive, I shall next proceed to describe the diseases of the sexual organs, which also form a physiological system in the human body.

Genito-urinary diseases.—Satyriasis and nymphomania are diseases in which the sufferers evince an irresistible desire for copulation, as well as abuse of the reproductive functions. The first disease attacks the male sex, the second the female. M. Deslandes is of opinion, and I fully agree with him, that there is no real difference between these diseases and unbridled masturbation; and that both ought to be considered species of insanity. They are but varieties of the same morbid affection, the only difference being an inordinate desire for coition, and for masturbation. I could adduce many cases in support of the correctness of this conclusion. Satyriasis and nymphomania are so accurately described in medical works, that I purposely omit any further notice of them in these remarks. At one time I doubted if the latter ever occurred in this country, but I was informed of a most extraordinary case, which happened after parturition, to an unmarried female, who was a patient under the care of my respected friend, Mr. Mason, of Newington Butts.

I am well aware that the records of medicine afford evidence that excessive masturbation has excited onaniac satyriasis and nymphomania, and finally destroyed life, even during infancy, childhood, adolescence, and adult age. M. Deslandes has collected some remarkable instances. In one case, a female infant aged three years, practised excessive self-abuse, and neither caresses, entreaties, menaces, nor punishments, could restrain her. She appeared to lose her sight and hearing after the performance of the act. She continued this deplorable vice until the adult age, when she married. She ultimately died in child-bed. The following singular case is related by M. Duprest-Rony: A young man aged twenty years, of a robust habit, addicted himself from the age of fifteen to eighteen years to solitary vice, which he indulged in so often as fifteen times in one day. His mind and memory

soon became impaired. For the last two years, says the narrator, he observed a rigid continencc, and regained his powers. He was now placed with a merchant, whose wife paid him so much attention, that on each interview he had a seminal emission. Notwithstanding all her seductive attempts, he informed her husband, who caused him to be removed. His delirium soon ceased, but his erections, followed by emissions continued. His digestion was greatly impaired for some time, but by the use of tonics and anti-spasmodics, and his abandoning vice, he was ultimately restored to perfect health. He married, and for six years afterwards, the period since his illness, he enjoyed perfect health. (*Dissertation sur le Satyriasis, Paris.*)

M. Deslandes relates the case of a young woman, who was very much addicted to excessive self-indulgence. She was not cured by marriage, which was only a source of disappointment to her. She was totally insensible to the caresses of her husband, which were often followed by spasms and convulsions. She was a scrofulous hysterical subject. She remained in this condition to the age of twenty-two years.

I could relate the histories of equally remarkable cases of the male sex, some of which finally yielded to moral and medical treatment. Others were affected with priapism, or permanent erection of the penis, with or without venereal desire; some even suffered from pain, and sometimes these states were induced by improper solicitations. There are now under my care two individuals, aged sixty and sixty-one years, who are affected in this manner. Both are public nuisances, for I have observed them by accident several times in the street, insulting every well-looking female who happened to pass by them. One is affected with herpes preputialis, or an eruption behind the glans penis, about which, he said, he had consulted the

most eminent medical practitioners in this country and France, without obtaining any permanent relief. According to his statement, he applied for advice to Mr. Abernethy, Sir Astley Cooper, Mr. Pearson, Sir B. Brodie, Mr. Lawrence, Mr. Wardrop, Mr. Guthrie, Mr. Plumbe, &c., to MM. Dupuytren, Roux, Marjolin, &c. I remarked to him, that it was utterly impossible to expect a cure, while his amours were incessant and indiscriminate,—that were a man with a fractured leg to walk incessantly, union of the bone could not take place whilst he did so. This observation seemed to make a strong impression on him, he ultimately controlled his mind and abandoned his errors, and he soon got well. In other cases, inflammation of the womb or rectum, has been induced by persons labouring under priapism. I have known such instances. This will be more apparent by the following quotation. Cælius Aurelianus describes the case of an old man, who—" In seipsum manu operante, nec quidquam tamen potuisse peragere; tensionem autem fuisse veretri nimiam, cum parvo dolore, ut cornu putaretur, et ita perseverasse multis mensibus; nulli quoque adjutario medicinali cessisse, sed tardo atque longo tempore requievesse." (Lib. iii. c. xviii.)

Such cases are, by no means, of rare occurrence, as the records of medicine very fully attest.

There are few experienced medical practitioners I apprehend, who have not been consulted in cases of dangerous, and often fatal diseases of the womb, induced by worse than brutal violence of man.

Masturbators who indulge to excess, have often temporary or partial erections, which they endeavour to strengthen by artificial means, of which the following cases are instances. The first is related by M. Chopart, in his valuable work on *Diseases of the Urinary Organs*—a book of reference and authority, from which I condense the following extraordinary case; which is also recorded by

Baron Richerand, in his work on *Physiology*, translated by Dr. Copeland :—

" A shepherd of Languedoc, named Gabriel Gallien, indulged in masturbation from the age of fifteen years so often as eight times a day ! At length he persevered for an hour without a seminal emission, and sometimes passed blood, accompanied by convulsions. He employed the hand for eleven years, until the age of twenty-six, which then only induced constant priapism, which he endeavoured to allay by passing a piece of wood, about six inches long, into the urethra. He ejaculated for six years by means of this contrivance ; but the urethra finally became hard, insensible, and callous. The piece of wood at length became useless. A constant erection which nothing could allay, tormented him. He had an insurmountable repugnance to women, which is generally the case with masturbators. In utter despair, all his attempts having failed, he made an incision in the glans penis with his pocket-knife, in the course of the urethra. This so far from being followed by pain, was succeeded by an agreeable sensation, and an abundant seminal emission. Having made this discovery, and being again able to gratify his unnatural desires, he frequently performed the same operation, which was followed by the same result. After having effected this shocking mutilation, and succeeded in his vice, perhaps a thousand times, he at length failed ; and then divided the penis, by a longitudinal incision, into two equal halves, from the orifice of the urethra to the scrotum and symphisis pubis. This extraordinary operation was followed by very copious hæmorrhage, which was restrained by tying the penis firmly with a packthread or whipchord. The corpora cavernosa, or two halves, were capable of erection, but they diverged to the right and to the left. When the division of the penis arrived at the pubis, the knife could be carried no farther, and new priva-

tions and disappointments ensued. The patient now introduced a piece of switch into the remaining part of the urethra, so that the titillation of the very orifices of the seminal ducts was affected, and an ejaculation of semen followed. He continued this plan for ten years, until one day, the piece of switch slipped from his fingers into the bladder. He was now speedily seized with violent pains in the bladder, perineum, followed by retention of urine, discharge of blood from the urethra, hiccup, vomiting, and bloody diarrhœa, for which he was brought to the Hotel Dieu of Narbonne. The head surgeon on examining him, was amazed to see two virile members of nearly the ordinary size. The operation for lithotomy was indicated and performed; and the piece of wood which had remained in the bladder for three days, was removed, covered with calcareous matter on one end. The patient recovered from the shock of the operation; but he died in three months afterwards, of pulmonary consumption, induced by his inordinate excesses." On remembering the anatomical structure of the penis, it is almost impossible to credit that the incisions of the glans, and the accurate division of the organ into two equal halves, were made without the supervention of fatal hæmorrhage. The veins and artery of the penis must, in all probability, have been divided, as well as one or both of the vascular corpora cavernosa, which would be followed, in most cases, by destructive hæmorrhage. I do not believe there is a scientific surgeon in the world, who would venture to perform such incisions in the glans, and much less attempt to divide the penis into two. Yet an ignorant person might succeed, as was the case with an illiterate Irish midwife, named Mary Dunnally, who first performed the cæsarean operation in this empire successfully, with a razor, and even after two qualified medical practitioners had declined to do so, and had left the patient and her infant to perish. (See *A Manual of*

Midwifery, 3d edition.) There are many other cases of genital mutilations, which deserve notice.

A schoolmaster of Saumur, titillated the urethra with an iron rod, seven or eight inches in length, the end of which he bent into a curve to increase his morbid sensation. One day he moved his hand violently, when he felt severe pain, more particularly when he fruitlessly endeavoured to withdraw the piece of iron. He now bent the external portion of the iron rod into a ring, so as to enable him to pull it away more forcibly. He pulled so strongly as to break the ring, but the hooked end of the iron rod remained unmoved. Sooner than die, he at length called in M. Fardeau of Saumur. The penis and scrotum were enormously swollen, hot, and painful. The abdomen became distended; there was suppression of urine; the face was red; the pulse hard, frequent, and contracted. M. Fardeau, made a careful examination, and detected the curve or hook of the iron rod on the internal surface of the tubeosity of the ischium or seat-bone, on which a person sits. He cut down upon it, seized it, and extracted it through the perineum. The patient was finally cured. (*Lancette Franc.* 1831.)Many similar cases are recorded by M.M. Deslandes, Chopart, Deschamps, Lamotte, Tolet, Morgagni, Van Swieten, Morand, Senn, Rigal, Civiale, &c. in which various foreign substances escaped from the urethra into the bladder, which were obliged to be removed by cutting operations. The usual results of such injuries are inflammations, indurations, ulcerations, and contractions of the urethra or strictures, painful diseases of the prostate gland, in persons advanced in life, or who had frequent gonorrhœas, affections of the bladder, kidneys, with catarrah of the bladder, gleet, retention of urine, and various diseases of the testicles, perinæum, and inferior bowel.

It has also happened both in Paris and London, that slight lithotritic instruments for grinding down stone in

the bladder have broken, and been left behind; in one case of which Sir B. Brodie was called on to operate; and there was another case, in which, to my knowledge, was one of the most painful and fatal operations in surgery, namely, lithotomy alleged to be performed to extract the foreign substance in the bladder, which, after all, was not extracted. Venereal insanity or excessive venery leads some individuals to adopt proceedings not less ridiculous than equally dangerous, with those already mentioned. The virile member has been incarcerated in certain foreign substances. Sabatier records the case of a young man who passed the organ into the ring of a key, and placed the latter close to the pubis. Violent inflammation and swelling followed, and after very painful efforts, the parts being oiled, the ring was brought behind the glans, where it was arrested, and could only be freed by scarifications of the part to diminish the swelling. The eschars separated and left deep ulcers, which were followed by cicatrices, which deformed the part, and it became necessary to introduce a sound into the urethra. (*De la Med. Operat.* 1824.)

The same author relates a case nearly similar, in which a young man passed the organ through a copper ring, which was fortunately divided with a strong scissors. Another passed a rough iron ring. The part on which it was passed inflamed and swelled very much under the ring. The latter was filed through with difficulty after a long time, a piece of wood being passed under it; another patient was relieved in the same manner, but the part was strongly threatened with gangrene. (*Op. cit.*) Mr. Liston once removed a curtain ring, which had been imbedded in the penis for years. (See *Edinburgh Med. and Surg. Journ.* 1823, vol. 19.

One of the most distressing cases of this kind, was that of a young man who, while in a bath, introduced the virile

member into the aperture which let off the water. The result was that tumefaction of the glans, rapidly supervened, so that it was impossible for him to withdraw from the aperture. The loud screams of the sufferer at length brought him assistance; and it was with great difficulty that he was extricated from his perilous situation. (*Dict. des Sciences Med.* t. xxxi. p. 107.)

Baron Dupuytren, in his edition of Sabatier's standard work, already quoted, records similar instances. Another was that of a young man, who had passed the socket of a candlestick, before which the glans was enormously swollen. The edge of the socket was cut with a strong nippers; and it was necessary to file the cylindrical portion which surrounded the penis. (*Op. Cit.*, t. iv.)

It would be easy to multiply cases of this kind, which have been recorded in different countries; but enough have been noticed in the preceding paragraphs. I shall barely mention that Baron Dupuytren asserts he was called to relieve persons who had applied ligatures on the penis by means of a fine or strong packthread. Young persons, and even adults, have tied the penis during the access of erotic delirium; and could not open the knot, so that a circular incision was required to be made in the skin, and even through the urethra. In such cases, the cord must be divided with caution, the wound dressed, a gum elastic catheter passed into the bladder to prevent the formation of urethral fistula, or an accidental hypospadias. (*Op. cit.*) A very remarkable instance of this kind fell under my own observation. A gentleman tied the penis very tightly, so as to compress the urethra, and prevent the seminal emission in congressu. He was seized with violent pain during the performance of this function, which obliged him to desist; and he found the glans swollen to three or four times its ordinary size, and of a purple colour. The cord was so deeply imbedded in

the swollen skin, that it could not be cut without wounding the integuments. The swollen glans, or summit of the penis, was compressed between the fore-finger and thumb, so as to force the blood it contained into the spongy tissue of the urethra; and then a cold lotion was assiduously applied. It was with great difficulty that gangrene was prevented, and that the virile organ was preserved entire.

Another species of strangulation, but one less dangerous than those just described, may result from masturbation or coition, in individuals who have the aperture of the prepuce very close, or who have congenital or accidental phymosis. In such cases, when the prepuce is forced behind the glans, it compresses the latter part, like a foreign substance or ligature, causes swelling, redness, pain, and sometimes sloughing; and the disease termed paraphymosis is induced. I have known cases in which the prepuce was torn, and even the chief artery of the organ of which it is the covering, and then the hæmorrhage was so profuse as to require the application of a ligature on the bleeding vessel. The first case of this kind which I saw, was in the Charitable Infirmary, Jervis Street, Dublin, in the practice of the late Professor Dease, to whom I was then clinical assistant, and many of my contemporaries, now living, also observed it. I have since seen several cases of this kind, and shall describe the treatment in another part of this work.

Another disease of the prepuce, which is caused by continual excitation of this part, is an eruption of small vesicles or red spots, termed *herpes preputialis*. This is a trifling complaint, and usually disappears in a few weeks, even without any treatment, except washing the part with mild soap and water. The ointment of the oxide of zinc, acetate or iodate of lead, iodate of mercury, with the solutions of the latter, or of the bichloride (yellow wash), or chloride of mercury (black wash), usually effect a cure,

provided the affected parts are kept free from excitation. When the last precaution is not taken, the disease may continue for thirty or forty years, cases of which have fallen under my own care. (See p. 315.)

Non-contagious urethral discharges.—There is sometimes a thick, or thin mucous discharge from the urethra of persons who commit venereal excesses of whatever kind, which when it dries on the inner garment, resembles white of egg. The lips of the meatus urinarius, or external orifice of the urethra are often glued together in such cases. This disease may be a morbid secretion from the mucous membrane of the urethra, and then is not contagious, though often mistaken for gonorrhœa. Such cases are extremely common; and I have met with many instances. In some the discharge is yellowish, and exactly similar to that of gonorrhœa, although the patient has never been exposed to that disease. I knew a medical student, who consulted many of our most distinguished physicians and surgeons, and who was told by all that he had contracted the disease by impure connexion. I concluded, after a careful examination, that it arose from masturbation, and this he finally acknowledged. A similar case is recorded by Closs, (*De Gonorrhœa Virulenta Tabingin*, 1764). M. Lallemand has well observed, that a similar discharge arises from sexual excesses between healthful persons, and especially when they indulge in the use of inebriating liquors; and it may also occur when the female genitals are too rigid or contracted. (*Observations sur les Maladies des Organes Genito-Urinaires*, 1837).

Obstetric writers notice such cases. Similar discharges are sometimes observed in newly-married persons, and often give rise to groundless suspicions. Experienced physicians have met with these cases, among whom are MM. Cullerier and Ratier. (*Dict. de Med. et Chir. Pratiques*, tom. iv., and obstetric authors). A question

has arisen as to the contagiousness of the discharge. All experienced obstetricians, or accoucheurs, decide in the negative. Mr. Travers entertains the contrary opinion, and considers it infectious. He, almost alone, is of opinion that muco-purulent leucorrhœa, or yellowish vaginal discharges, commonly called "whites," will produce gonorrhœa in the male; but, for my own part, I have been consulted in numerous cases of such discharges, and I never could arrive at a similar conclusion. (*Manual of Midwifery*). It is here to be stated that inflammation of the urethra or vagina, which gives rise to these discharges, may extend to the bladder, ureters, and kidneys, and produce dysury and strangury. Catarrh of the bladder, or a mucous or albuminous discharge with the urine, is sometimes caused by venereal abuses. Professor Lallemand relates a case of an individual who had long indulged in venereal excesses, who was incessantly annoyed by irresistible desires to evacuate the bladder, which was accomplished with much difficulty. (*Vide ante*, p. 284). There was no obstruction in the urethra. He mentions another case, in which the individual took coffee to excess, which, with excessive venery, inflamed the whole genito-urinary apparatus. It must be evident, from the preceding observations, that venereal excesses, of whatever kind, ought to be interdicted in the cases of those affected with acute or chronic genito-urinary diseases. Nothing is more injurious to persons labouring under gonorrhœa, gleet, leucorrhœa (whites), of a chronic or long-continued duration.

Incontinence of urine, or a frequent desire to evacuate the bladder, is a common consequence of excessive masturbation or coition. MM. Sainte-Marie and Lallemand have remarked, that most of the individuals affected with involuntary diurnal, and nocturnal pollutions, suffered, in infancy, from incontinence of urine. (*Opera Citata*).

According to my own experience, this is frequently the case; but in some of the instances about which I have been consulted, it was not so. It is true, that incontinence of urine in infancy indicates either irritation or excitement of the genito-urinary organs, but such morbid states may be improved or cured, in infancy or childhood, by sedatives at bed-time, and by diminishing the quantity of drink in the evening, regulating the diet, &c. (M. Lallemand relies on aromatic baths, on which I place little, or rather, no reliance, (*Op. Cit.*);) and consequently, diurnal or nocturnal pollutions do not, or need not, necessarily follow.

Spermatorrhœa—seminal weakness.—One of the most common consequences of venereal excesses is an involuntary discharge of semen. This disease is termed *spermatorrhœa*, involuntary pollution, and by quacks, "seminal weakness," which may also result from many other causes. But as masturbation, or excessive venery, is the most common cause, I shall consider it specially. M. Lallemand states in his work (*Des Pertes Seminales Involontaires*, 1837) on involuntary seminal discharges, that in the space of thirteen or fourteen years he had been consulted in more than one hundred and fifty such cases, which were ascribed to head, nervous, and hypochondriacal affections.

The only imperfect account of this disease hitherto published is that of Wichman with the commentaries of M. Sainte-Marie, already cited. Such was all we possessed, until the production of the author from whom I am about to quote,—on a disease which degrades man, embitters his best days, and ravages society. The observations of most other authors betray great ignorance on the subject. M. Lallemand has filled up the lacunæ, and fully explained the nature and treatment of this class of diseases.

I have already observed, that involuntary and sponta-

neous discharges of the semen occurring to robust and continent individuals are necessary to relieve the economy from the excitation of its accumulation. These are analogous to profuse perspiration and other excretions (see p. 263): but they become inconvenient and dangerous in proportion to their frequency, abundance, and the constitution of the individual. They are often induced by venereal excesses in consequence of coition or masturbation. The spermatic organs are in a state of irritation after such excesses, and secrete profusely, so that the seminal fluid excites premature emissions when there is incomplete erection, and without the natural venereal impulse, nay, sometimes without any pleasurable sensation. In bad cases, the ejaculatory ducts become so relaxed, that there are emissions without any erection, and during the straining made in the acts of evacuation of the bladder or bowels. M. Lallemand judiciously remarks, that excessive seminal emissions, however caused, are equally injurious to the constitution; and I fully agree with him in opinion. Natural nocturnal pollutions require no remedy; but nocturnal or diurnal, when too frequent, or when constant, are serious diseases, (see p. 264.)

Causes.—The most frequent and powerful causes of spermatorrhœa is inflammation, irritation, or debility of the organs destined for the secretion and excretion of the sperm, and ample proofs are afforded by inspection of the affected parts after death. To accomplish this inspection, it is necessary to remove the muscles at the inferior part of the trunk, and to incise the pubic bones; and to examine the state of the testicles, spermatic cords, deferent canals, and seminal vesicles. This examination requires time, patience, and skill. I have already described the nature of the diseases under notice, (see p. 265.)

I shall now merely observe, that blennorrhagia, or gonorhœa, is the most frequent cause of spermatorrhœa. The

vile habits of masturbation and onanism are also very powerful causes.

I may here however observe, that pollutions of whatever kind, are sometimes caused by diseases of the rectum or lower bowel, as internal piles, costiveness, tumors pressing on the bowel, stricture, scirrhus, or open cancer of this part; ascarides, or by the individual sitting too long, as many girls do, as well as youths and men engaged in sedentary employments. Such persons partially paralyse the nerves of the loins, which supply the genito-urinary organs; and predispose them to disease.

M. Lallemand narrates several cases of affections of the rectum which caused pollutions. The distention of this bowel with hardened fæcal matter presses on the seminal receptacles, and acts purely mechanical. A collection of air or gas will act in the same manner, (see p. 328.) Piles, fissures, fistulæ, eruptions near the anus accompanied by pains, and spasmodic contractions of the sphincter ani will also irritate the seminal vesicles, and cause them to evacuate their contents. In cases of obstinate costiveness, there is generally more or less heat or irritation in the rectum and contiguous parts.

It is also well known, that chronic inflammation of the urinary and genital organs will irritate the rectum, and cause it to expel its contents, and often induce disorganization of this part of the digestive canal.

There are two kinds of involuntary pollutions, the *convulsive* and *non-convulsive*; the first being preceded by more or less erection; the second occurring in the collapsed or tranquil, or ordinary state of the penis. There are intermediate species between these, as cases of spermatorrhœa accompanied by semi-erection or semi-convulsion, and sudden or premature emissions.

Involuntary pollutions are also divided into *diurnal* and *nocturnal*, between which there is a great difference. The

first are produced by venereal excesses of whatever kind; while the second may also arise from the same causes, or from the most rigid continence, (see p. 263.) The first are most debilitating; the second are natural efforts occurring once a week, fortnight, month, &c. according to the habits and temperament of the individual, (see p. 264.)

It is almost universally admitted, that the contractions of the seminal receptacles, as well as of the perineal and bulbo-cavernous muscles, effect the seminal ejaculation.

Convulsive spermatorrhœa or pollution is not a disease, unless it happens too frequently, and then produces all the bad effects of excessive coition or masturbation, (see p. 272); but this rarely occurs unless in those individuals who have been previously guilty of such excesses. Sleep is the most favourable time for such emissions, and they rarely happen during the waking hours, unless from the influence of a morbid imagination.

The warmth of the bed, and lying on the back, which increases the warmth and excitation of the lower part of the spinal marrow, the source of the genital nerves, cause convulsive and involuntary emissions of the semen. The collection of gas or air in the lower bowel towards morning presses on and excites the seminal receptacles, causes amorous ideas, and also gives rise to erection, which is further excited by the presence of the bed-clothes, when the person lies on the back. It is in this position, that nocturnal emissions usually happen; when the sleep is profound, the individual is unconscious of what has occurred, and only discovers it on waking, and learns its bad effects from the debility which he experiences next day. Persons who suffer, too frequently, from seminal emissions at night, have either excited the organs too much, or occupied their minds with immodest objects, and with reflections not only on human, but comparative reproduction. The person dreams of the objects which have excited the

genital organs during the day, and these often cause seminal emissions. These pollutions are often as debilitating as those produced by voluntary means; and the individual feels debility and is indisposed to a greater or less extent, during the following day, and therefore those liable to them, should always go to sleep on either side.

This disease often continues after all sexual incentives either moral, physical, or mechanical, are removed. The secretion of semen may be increased and evacuated suddenly, with or without erection, and also without the usual impulse or feeling. In some cases, the ejaculatory ducts may expel the semen under such circumstances; and this often occurs during defecation or the evacuation of the bowels, or with, or after the expulsion of the urine. There are various species of this miserable disease. In such cases the semen is much thinner than natural, as it is evacuated almost as soon as it is secreted, and is therefore unprolific. In the former cases the semen flows, but is not ejaculated, and the disease is termed *involuntary diurnal* pollution. This disease was described by Hippocrates as common to newly married persons and libertines, especially on the evacuation of the bowels and bladder, (*De Morbis*, lib. ii.) It is unaccompanied by erection, or venereal sensation. Celsus also describes it, lib. iv. Morgagni likewise notices it, and ascribes it, in some instances, to compression of the seminal vesicles by hardened fæcal matters in the lower bowel; and he considered the urethral discharge prostatic in some, and the mucus of the seminal vesicles in others. (*De Sedibus et causis Morb. Epist.* 44.) Wichman was the first, who described it elaborately in 1782, in his work published at Gottingen. (*De Pollutione diurna frequenti*, &c.)

Many of those affected with this disease are very low spirited, nervous, and melancholic, and suffer from indigestion, flatulency, acidity of the stomach, and general

weakness. This form of disease is very common from the age of twenty-five to forty or fifty years; and to those who have committed venereal excesses or repeatedly contracted gonorrhæa.

M. Sainte-Marie ascribes diurnal involuntary pollution to disease of the spinal marrow. Swediaur called it prostatic blenorrhœa; while Cullerier said there was another form, in which a few drops of semen were forced through the urethra during the straining on evacuating the bowels. (*Dict. des Sciences Med.* t. xix.) Boerhaave, Haller, and John Hunter denied the existence of this disease. Lallemand has, however, lately controverted their opinion, and maintains, from the histories of one hundred and fifty cases, that spermatorrhœa is caused by an inflamed or irritated state of the vesiculæ seminales. (*Observations sur les Maladies des Organes Genito-Urinaries,* 1837.) I fully agree with this experienced author, both as to the nature and treatment of this disease.

He has repeatedly discovered by the inspection of the genital organs after death, that urethral discharges arose from many causes besides contagion, such as inflammation of the mucous membrane of some portion of the urethra, neck of the bladder, of the secretory follicles in this membrane, and that those of the prostate gland were considerably enlarged. In such cases, the mucous surface was swollen, red, soft, and easily torn; the mucous cryptæ admitted a probe or sound as large as a crow's quill. Such was the condition of those who suffered from stricture, and of others, who had long laboured under discharges from the urethra: amongst these patients were some who died from chronic diseases of the kidney, bladder, prostate gland, or seminal receptacles; while more died of diseases in other organs in different parts of the body. Hence he concluded, that obstinate urethral discharges which resist all ordinary treatment, arise from an alteration in the

mucous membrane, and secretory follicles. He also found that such discharges continued after the cure of stricture, as the affected tissue or part possessed a kind of new organization; and that it was impossible to expect a complete revolution and permanent change in the capillary congestion which had existed for several years, unless by a direct, energetic and deep impression, which would cause a permanent change, destructive of a depraved sensibility, and modifying the vitality of the affected part. It appeared to him, that the nitrate of silver was the best agent to accomplish such a result. Analogy justified this conclusion, as this remedy was successful, in many external diseases, such as in certain chronic ulcers, certain forms of ophthalmia, leucorrhœa, &c.

M. Lallemand then employed his remedy, and, after having destroyed strictures, he cauterized two inches of the urethra beyond the stricture and towards the neck of the bladder. The first application of the caustic obviously diminished the discharge, and gave the affected organs an unusual vigour. The application was renewed in about two months afterwards, when the discharge rapidly diminished, and the patient regained his natural energy. This practice was generally successful, and was next employed in obstinate cases of blennorrhagia which had resisted all other methods of treatment. The caustic is to be applied to the curvature of the urethra, whose mucous membrane is congested and thickened in consequence of obstinate urethral discharges; and this alteration is increased as it extends towards the neck of the bladder. It is at this part, that the mucous cryptæ are most numerous; and *the prostate gland* is composed of them, is a re-union of these follicles of a peculiar dense tissue. The mucous membrane, which covers the surface of the prostate gland, is pierced through by the numerous orifices of their excretory ducts. If we compress the gland, we readily perceive the

escape of an unctious fluid from a multitude of pores of these ducts. When they become diseased, the size of their excretory or external orifices, is so enlarged, as to admit a common sound which has sometimes made a false passage through the prostate. In other cases, many of the orifices are united into one, in consequence of the destruction of the mucous membrane which separates them—the part appears ulcerated, and if a probe be passed into this part, it will penetrate in different directions, which proves that many follicles terminate in one common opening. In more cases, the follicles may unite in the substance of the gland, the tissue which separates them, having been destroyed by suppuration, so that there will be many orifices opening into one cavity. Thus there may be one, or several cavities of this kind in the prostate, some of which are distinct, while others communicate with each other. In fine, the destruction may go on to such an extent, that the great part of the prostate forms a pouch, covered by mucous membrane, pierced by many openings. The substance of the gland is now destroyed, and there only remains its fibrous covering. M. Lallemand observes, that up to the period at which he wrote, he never found but the inferior portion of the prostate thus disorganized. He has seen its body entirely destroyed, without the lateral parts being affected; and he always found the superior part in a healthful condition.

Such were the disorganizations observed by the justly celebrated Professor after obstinate urethral discharges, some of which were preceded by symptoms of acute inflammation of the prostate gland, followed by those of suppuration. In two cases, he was able to detect the disease through the rectum, while in other instances the malady advanced so slowly, that it was only to be suspected by the state of the urine, and other symptoms, of which this is not the place to give an account. He very

properly admits, that he does expect that caustic, or any other remedies could cure many such cases; but he judiciously remarks, that it is important to determine in what part of the urethra they are situated, so as to know where to apply the caustic, with the view of modifying the state of the affected tissues, when this is advisable.

Symptoms.—Those who labour under disease of the prostate gland, experience uncomfortable or painful sensations in the affected part, or in the space between the scrotum and anus, or near the margin of the latter, which vary in different individuals, according to age, habit, extent of existing disease, &c.; and the symptoms are increased during the evacuation of the urine or contents of the bowels, also after much exertion on foot, on horseback, or by riding in any kind of vehicle. The sufferer experiences a frequent and urgent desire to evacuate the bladder, and this want is felt so suddenly that it is often irresistible; he also feels, at the same moment, more or less heat or pain near the neck of the bladder, and particularly at the commencement and termination of the evacuation of the urine. If we pass a catheter into the urethra, it will cause great pain at the curvature of the canal, which will be increased near the neck of the bladder; and there is often such spasm excited, as to prevent the instrument from advancing. In such cases, the patient cannot bear the instrument longer than a few seconds, on account of the acute pains and spasmodic contractions which it occasions. All these symptoms prove that the irritation is seated in or near the prostatic portion of the urethra; and that this is the part of the canal which ought to be cauterized.

Such cases are extremely common in those, who have abused the sexual function, and have committed excesses of whatever kind. The patients often suffer from stricture or narrowing, or sometimes almost obliteration of the urethra, within an inch or two of the prostate gland;

while many have the prostatic portion in the same conditions. I have had numerous cases of this kind under my care, have sometimes showed patients drawings of genito-urinary diseases, and was often surprised at the accuracy with which they pointed out the seat of their complaints. (See Plates at the end.)

Many patients labouring under urethral discharges, whether mucous, prostatic, or seminal, are often relieved without the use of caustic, by means of copaiba, cubebs, buchu, &c, while others are not. In the latter cases, when all other means had failed, I have employed caustic with decided success, though it is seldom used in this country, notwithstanding the numerous successful cases recorded by MM. Duchamp, Tarvenier, Lallemand, &c. Indeed, patients affected with chronic urethral discharges for several years, generally "go the round of the doctors" without benefit, and no one has as yet informed me that the application of caustic had been proposed, or this remedy employed. I am well aware of the strong objection to, indeed, almost prejudice against, the use of caustic bougies in this country, and am not surprised at it, from the serious evils produced by the crude and unsafe bougies used in this kingdom. I can also bear my testimony in favour of the use of simple bougies in curing most cases of stricture of the urethra; though these instruments often aggravate the condition of the canal which gives rise to discharges. But the objections to the British armed or caustic bougies cannot be urged against the French, especially those of Duchamp, Tarvenier, and Lallemand. The great superiority of these is, that the caustic can be applied to the diseased part of the urethra alone, which cannot be done with the British instruments. It is scarcely necessary to observe, that the diseased portion of the urethra should be ascertained by means of a soft or explorative bougie, before the application of the caustic. It is also

essential that the patient should be in the standing posture when the latter is applied, to prevent a solution of it escaping into the bladder. It is likewise important to state that the bladder should not contain any urine when the caustic is applied, as there would be an urgent desire to evacuate it excited, and it would, while passing, dissolve the nitrate of silver, and convey it to sound parts of the canal, thus not cauterising the affected part, and injuring without necessity other parts of the canal. This is what is done by using the armed or caustic bougies of this country—a practice which is highly reprehensible and dangerous.

There is sometimes acute pain caused by the application of the caustic, though, in most cases, the patient does not distinguish it from catheterism. Mr. Macilwain also attests this fact in his valuable work.

In other cases, the pain ceases on or soon after the removal of the instrument; though it may continue for some hours afterwards. These variations depend on differences of constitution, state of health, condition of diseases, season, climate, &c.

When the prostatic portion of the urethra is cauterized, there is often a sense of pain simultaneously felt in the neck of the bladder, or in the margin of the anus, or in the rectum, and the sphincter is strongly contracted. This sensation is renewed whenever the bladder or rectum is evacuated, and causes confinement of the bowels. When the latter act, the motions are sometimes tinged with blood, and in some cases a few drops of the latter fluid escape from the penis. These symptoms clearly show the intimate sympathy which exists, from nervous connexion between the lower bowel or rectum and the prostatic portion of the urethra, the neck of the bladder, and ducts of the seminal receptacles, and should be kept in mind when

considering the nature and causes of diurnal and nocturnal pollutions.

When the caustic is applied, there is an urgent desire to void the urine, and the sufferer is often compelled to do so in an instant; but this desire gradually subsides in a few hours or days. When the urine is passed, after the use of the caustic, there is a sense of burning heat in the cauterized part, and a contraction, which more or less extends along the whole canal. The last drops of the urine are sometimes tinged with blood. These symptoms diminish in a few hours, and generally cease by the end of the day. They are also less intense on the evacuation of the bladder on the following day, and on the third day they are still slighter. The eschars come away in greyish or brownish shreds on the third or fourth day, and the urine may now be slightly tinged with blood; and there also may again be severe pain on voiding it, for a day or two.

The urethral discharge, of whatever duration, generally disappears during the first three days after the application of the caustic; it returns on the fourth, is increased on the fifth or sixth, and again diminishes or ceases from the tenth to the twentieth day. Thus the secretion is suppressed while the eschars occupy the mucous membrane, it increases when these fall off, and diminishes as the inflammation subsides. It is to be remembered that the inflammation caused by the caustic is acute, and situated on the surface of the mucous membrane; whilst the former was chronic, and principally affected the mucous cryptæ; so that the consecutive discharge is totally different from the former one; it is sometimes more profuse, streaked with blood; but it is less opaque, thick, resembling the white of egg, or a more or less concentrated solution of gum, and finally it becomes watery. In most cases, however long continued, two or three cauterizations,

at the interval of from ten to twenty-five days, are sufficient to effect a cure; but there are some instances in which these are insufficient to afford relief; while there are some cases in which the remedy fails. M. Lallemand has cured the most obstinate urethral discharges by this method in nine cases out of ten, and after all medicines had failed. He candidly states the inconveniences which occasionally result from cauterization. In four cases there was inflammation of the testicle, induced after three or four days. This arose from the action of the caustic on the orifices of the ejaculatory canals, and produced in them, which were predisposed to disease, the same effect as a common bougie or catheter, that is, an irritation which extended to the seminal vesicles, and from these to the deferent canal extending to the testicle; but these inflammations were not more frequent or dangerous than those caused by common bougies in the treatment of stricture; and in the four cases, the disease rapidly yielded to the ordinary antiphlogistic treatment.

It may also happen that the caustic may be introduced into the bladder, when this organ is distended with urine, when the size of the urethra is not accurately ascertained before the use of it, or when the patient is placed in the horizontal position (on the back). But this accident cannot happen if the operator observes the precautions already indicated.

In fine, the effects of all remedies are variable, and so are those of the nitrate of silver, which may depend on the state of the diseased part, whether the instrument contain more or less of the caustic, and whether the cauterization has been made for a longer or shorter time. Thus, the degree of acute inflammation caused by it may be insufficient, or too great, and in the latter case is to be combatted by ordinary means, as leeches and fomentations to

the perineum, hip-bath, general warm bath, mucilaginous drinks to diminish the acridity of the urine, &c.

Chronic purulent urethral discharges.—In some cases there are albuminous or purulent discharges from the urethra, long after the acute state of gonorrhœa has subsided. In such cases, there may be one or more points of ulceration in the urinary canal, which may be readily detected by passing a bougie down to the affected part, when the contraction, or spasm of the urethra, will arrest its progress. The situation being thus ascertained, the sound containing the caustic is passed down to the affected part, and then the caustic is to be pushed forward upon it. In such cases, a small portion of the nitrate of silver, or a slight application will be sufficient; and one or two trials will be enough to effect a rapid cure.

Chronic inflammation of the neck of the bladder.—It is evident from the preceding account of diseases of the prostate gland, that there is a close affinity between diseases of the prostatic portion of the urethra and those of the neck of the bladder; and the symptoms of both are often present, though sometimes distinct. Diseases of both parts are preceded by chronic discharges, resulting from the inflamed state of the urethra in gonorrhœa; and irritation or inflammation of the urinary canal may not only extend along its whole extent, from the external orifice, but to the neck of the bladder, to the prostate gland, the orifices of the seminal ducts, the seminal receptacles, the deferent ducts, testicles, but also along the inner or mucous surface of the bladder, hence along the ureters, and from these to the kidneys. Every well informed physician and surgeon will admit the soundness of this pathology, as the symptoms during life, and the morbid appearances after death, leave no doubt on the subject. There are some superficially informed practitioners, who consider gonor-

rhœa a very trifling disease, but those only estimate its commonest symptoms and inconveniences. When the neck of the bladder is affected, the acute pain in the part, the urgent and frequent necessity of passing urine, and the aggravation of the symptoms on the introduction of an instrument, which will be accompanied by severe and painful spasmodic contraction of the urethra, from its external to its internal orifice, as well as the violent state of agony, when the catheter arrives at the neck of the bladder, leave no room to doubt the seat of the disease. This distressing complaint is very common to those who have committed venereal excesses, is often confounded with stricture of the urethra, and frequently, lays the foundation of many incurable diseases, not only of the genito-urinary organs, but likewise of those in the head, chest, and abdomen.

It is scarcely necessary to mention, that the prostatic portion of the urethra, which passes into the neck of the bladder, is very much excited by venereal excesses, and very much predisposed to contraction, inflammation, ulceration, or induration, in those who commit them. When urethral discharges arise from certain morbid states of the neck of the bladder, similar to those of the prostatic portion of the urethra, already described, the use of nitrate of silver, as in such cases, is equally efficacious.

M. Lallemand has also found this application equally efficient when made on the orifices of the ejaculatory canals in the prostatic portion of urethra, in real cases of spermatorrhœa, or involuntary seminal emissions. It allayed irritation, inflammation, and debility in the above named canals, the seminal receptacles, the deferent canals, and the testicles. It caused natural contraction in the canals, and an increased secretion in the latter organs. It induced a most valuable tonic or restorative effect. The natural vigour of

the genital organs was greatly increased, the general health was much improved; and all local symptoms entirely disappeared.

M. Lallemand gives an account of several cases in his valuable work last cited, some few of which I shall condense.

M. S. suffered from chronic headache, hypochondriasis, diurnal pollutions, and pain in the right kidney. The appearances after death were suppuration of the right kidney, nearly total destruction of the prostate, disease in the ejaculatory ducts, and seminal vesicles: all the other organs were sound.

A man, aged sixty-three years, had repeatedly contracted gonorrhœa, which was finally succeeded by urethral discharge, hypochondriasis, and frequent determination of blood to the head. After much suffering he died. The morbid appearances were, suppuration of the seminal receptacles, ossification of deferent canals, inflammation of the bladder, chronic adhesions of the arachnoid membrane of the brain, and of the pleura, with suppuration of the muscles of the neck and shoulders.

A man, aged forty-one years, had contracted a violent gonorrhœa, which induced inflammation of the testis. These symptoms were subdued, but a slight urethral discharge continued to the fiftieth year, accompanied by pain in the prostatic region and fossa navicularis, with obstinate costiveness. The patient experienced much difficulty in evacuating the bladder, from the age of fifty to sixty years, complicated with derangement of digestion, lowness of spirits, and remarkable diminution in the intellectual faculties. The appearances after death were, abscesses and tubercles in the kidneys, stricture of the urethra, considerable effusion of blood into the left ventricle of the brain, and hypertrophy or enlargement of the heart.

A musician, aged thirty-two years had contracted go-

norrhœa several times, which was succeeded by bad stricture, retention of urine, delirium, and death. On examination of the body after death, the kidneys were injected with blood, there was inflammation of the bladder, pus in the prostate, left seminal vesicle, and left testicle. The tunica vaginalis on the left side was obliterated. (*Stoll. Pars prima Medendi.*) The history of this case clearly proves a fact already mentioned, that gonorrhœa may involve all the genito-urinary organs in destructive inflammation, (see p. 338.)

M. Lallemand has also repeatedly observed, that diseases of the prostate, seminal vesicles, deferent canals, &c. may induce symptoms of cerebral and gastro-enteritic complaints; and that in such affections, the former organs will be found in a morbid state. He relates several cases in illustration of the truth of this statement. He is also of opinion, that though abundant and long-continued loss of semen may induce such diseases; yet that the existence of many inflammations at the same time, between which there is no other connexion than a general disposition of the economy, is a mere coincidence. He further observes, that there is often a great obscurity in the symptoms of acute inflammation of the prostate gland and seminal receptacles. Pus and tuberculous matter have been found in these parts, in the deferent canals, and even in the testicles.

The preceding observations clearly show the manner in which inflammation of the urethra (gonorrhœa) is extended to the prostate, the seminal vesicles, the deferent canals, the testicles, and even to the vaginal tunics, or coverings of these organs.

A man, aged sixty-six years, became dropsical, after a long-continued intermittent fever. The right kidney was enlarged, of a whitish yellow colour, the part which cor-

responded to the loins was thin, hard, elastic, and without any trace of its natural organization; while the other part contained six abscesses. The bladder was thickened and inflamed, the mucous membrane being covered in different parts, with pus. The prostate gland was enlarged to three times its usual size, and was much hardened. The ejaculatory canals were as hard as cartilage and much dilated; the vesiculæ seminales were completely ossified. The urethra was soft and inflamed—the internal pudic artery, as well as others near the perineum were ossified—the testes were sound.

In this case, the inflammation extended from the ureter to the bladder, from the ureter to kidney, as well as to the seminal vesicles, ejaculatory canals; and also produced disease of the prostate. The dilatation of the ejaculatory canals, and the complete ossification of the seminal vesicles, together with the state of the prostate gland, would warrant the inference, that the patient had suffered from habitual seminal discharges.

A man who had laboured under insanity for a long time, and who imagined a change of sex, at length died. The following were the morbid appearances. The arachnoid membrane of the brain was thickened; the prostate was enlarged and projected from before backwards into the bladder, to the extent of two inches; it was converted into a substance like cancer or malignant scirrhus, and contained three abscesses. The ejaculatory ducts were soft and obliterated; while the seminal vesicles, as well as their canals, were much larger than natural.

In many cases we can trace the progressive deterioration of the spermatic organs from the date of the first gonorrhœa to the time of death; and thus we can duly appreciate the always increasing influence of seminal losses on the whole economy, and particularly on the cerebro-spinal

system, (see p. 291), and to all other parts lined by mucous membrane. Let us now attend to the proofs of this statement.

Urethra and prostate gland.—Most of the common urethral discharges are supplied from the mucous follicles of the urethra, but more generally from those of the prostate gland in which they are much more developed: the prostate is almost if not entirely composed of these follicles united by cellular tissue. The structure of this gland is not minutely given by our best national writers. This will be evident by reference to the works of Sir Astley Cooper, Sir B. Brodie, Mr. Guthrie, and other distinguished surgical writers, when compared to those of other countries. All, however, admit, the occasional extension of urethral inflammation to the prostate gland, the seminal vesicles, testes, bladder, ureters, and kidneys.

Spermatic organs.—Urethral inflammation is readily propagated to the secretory organs of the semen, (see p. 325.) Exposure to cold, a contusion, too much walking, dancing, riding on horseback, or in a carriage, when gonorrhœa is present, will readily induce inflammation of the testicle; but the chief cause is the influence exerted by the mucous or lining membrane of the urethra on its continuation which lines the excretory organs or outlets of the semen. I have elsewhere given a minute description of contagious urethritis, (gonorrhœa) and the various diseases which it excites of the genito-urinary organs. (See *Diseases of the genito-urinary organs, London Medical and Surgical Journal,* vol. viii. 1836.) See also (ante, p. 326.) It does not, however, happen, that the testicle is invariably inflamed in gonorrhœa, but when it does, the patient will generally state, that there was a dull pain in one or both groins, extending along the spermatic cord, which often became extremely sensitive, painful, and enlarged, especially that portion of it which forms the epidydimis or

swelling at the superior part of the testicle—a common consequence of gonorrhœa and venereal excesses. In some cases the inflammation extends along the cord to the body of the testicle, and causes most painful swelling of this organ, which may totally destroy its function—the secretion of the spermatic fluid. In such cases, the urethral discharge becomes more or less, or entirely suppressed, in consequence of this inflammation which removes that of the urethra, now in a chronic form. It is also well known, when the testis is relieved, that the discharge may again appear. It seldom happens that both spermatic cords or testes are simultaneously inflamed; but there are occasional instances. When one set of organs is affected, we often find that the inflammation extends to the seminal receptacle and excretory canal of the same side; whilst the other remains unaffected.

It is also worthy of mention, that when one or both testes is inflamed, the disease may extend to one or both vaginal tunics, and to the fibrous coverings, which are intimately united. (Vide ante, p. 341.)

In the same manner, and for the same physiological and pathological reasons, the inflammation of the seminal receptacles, which are lined by mucous membrane, may extend to the corresponding portion of the peritoneum, and to the whole of that extensive membrane which covers the digestive and abdominal organs.

M. Lallemand attests, that general peritonitis, may be readily excited by the diseases under consideration. Chronic and circumscribed adhesions of the peritoneum which covers the fundus of the bladder have been observed. Such alterations of the peritoneum and of the tunica vaginalis, prove that the inflammation is propagated by a contiguity of tissue—a fact first demonstrated by the illustrious Hunter.

Ejaculatory canals.—The orifices of these canals may

be inflamed and greatly enlarged, in consequence of severe urethral inflammation; and we can readily conceive that these orifices which act like sphincters when diseased, will have a great influence on diurnal and nocturnal pollutions. The ejaculatory ducts participate in the disorganization or dilatation of their orifices; and they have been found thickened, indurated, cartilaginous, osseous, (*Op. cit.*), states which greatly predispose to involuntary seminal emissions. These canals having lost their power of contraction, cannot force the semen to reflow into the seminal vesicles, and cannot oppose the contractions or compression of the latter organs. The compression exerted on these canals by the swollen tissue of the prostate, causes their atrophy or emaciation, their obliteration, and a partial or total loss of their function.

Vesiculæ seminales—Seminal reservoirs.—It is to be borne in mind, that the seminal ducts and deferent or excretory canals open so straightly into the seminal receptacles, that when inflamed or contracted, they will not only oppose the evacuation of the semen, but also of pus from the latter organs. In the latter cases, under such circumstances, the retained pus may become thick, concrete, and even like tuberculous matter, as its thinner parts will be absorbed. In some instances, a homogeneous, yellowish, cretaceous matter is found, the origin of which is, as yet, unknown. M. Lallemand has observed the seminal receptacles congested, thickened, cartilaginous, and even ossified. During the progress of these diseases, the receptacles may contract spasmodically, and give rise to diurnal or nocturnal pollutions. In some cases the semen was of a dark green colour.

The deferent or excretory seminal canals.—When pus is secreted in these canals, it is not always readily evacuated. Some portion of the tube may be obliterated, and then the pus will be accumulated behind the obstruction

or in different parts. It often happens in such cases, that the thinner parts of the pus are absorbed, and a concrete or tuberculous-looking matter is left behind.

One of the results of the obliteration in the deferent canals will be the retention of the spermatic fluid in the testicles, and that the reproductive faculty is suspended.

In other cases, an abscess forms in the epidydimis which opens externally, through which the seminal fluid escapes, and this has been termed *spermatic fistula*. If there be openings at both sides, the sufferer will be exposed to the same inconveniences as by involuntary diurnal pollutions. But when rupture of the excretory canal does not occur, the testicle becomes inflamed, painful or distended, and finally, atrophied or wasted to the size of a marble, (see p. 352), like all other glands under similar circumstances. It is in this way that we can account for wasting of the testicle after being inflamed. It is therefore manifest, that when the excretory duct which is destined to convey the semen secreted by the testicle to the corresponding receptacle is obstructed, knotted, or enlarged, atrophy of testis may be induced. I may here observe that such obstructions of the spermatic cord are often speedily relieved by iodated preparations, as I can attest by the results of many cases. In some cases the testes are greatly enlarged, and remain so for weeks or months after gonorrhœa, before they begin to waste away.

In other instances, there is neuralgia or tic douloureux of the testis or penis, which is so excruciating as to require castration. Sir Astley Cooper relates cases of this kind, in his work on Diseases of the Testis. In such cases, the patients had generally laboured under gonorrhœa at some time or other. The too long retention of a bougie in the urethra may not only induce local irritation, but even inflammation of the deferent canals, testicle, and tunica vaginalis, which may be followed by hydrocele. The

intimate nervous connexion between these parts, as well as the rest of the genito-urinary organs, will explain the cause of the increased secretion and expulsion of the semen, and the morbid state of the mucous membrane which covers the orifices of the ejaculatory canals.

Urinary organs.—The same phenomena are presented in the direction of the secretory and excretory organs of the urine; viz., the kidneys, ureters, and bladder, and from the same kind of nervous connexion. We often find the tissues of these parts destroyed by inflammation. There is, therefore, an exact similitude between the lesions of both classes of organs—the seminal and urinary—or more properly, the genito-urinary.

Every observant physician has noticed discharges of gonorrhœa suddenly suppressed by exposure to cold, free use of diluent or inebriating fluids, and that the patients were then suddenly seized with aching pains in the loins, the urine becoming sparing or high coloured, hot, and sometimes mixed with blood. If we now examine into the states of the kidneys as well as the bladder and testicles, we shall often discover incipient inflammation of these organs in blennorrhagia or gonorrhœa, fully as frequent as inflammation of the testicle. In fact, M. Lallemand has observed the former much more common than the latter, which not only arises from gonorrhœa, but from inflammation of the bladder, stone in that organ, bad stricture of the urethra, &c.

I have given a full account of diseases of the kidney, including gravel, diabetes, abscess, enlargement, and other disorganizations in the *London Medical and Surgical Journal,* vol. viii. 1836; and in the *Physician's Vademecum,* 1837, to which I must again refer the reader. There can be no doubt that acute inflammation of the urethra is very readily communicated to the secretory organs of the semen and urine, by their respective excretory canals.

The Bladder.—When the bladder is irritated by whatever cause, the irritation is extended to the kidneys which secrete an increased quantity of urine, the characters of which are changed; and as the fluid is more abundant and watery than usual, and as the nervous excitement is increased, it remains but a short time in its reservoir. The desire to evacuate the bladder now becomes urgent, the fluid is evacuated with more than usual force, and if the patients do not yield to this desire, the sensation becomes so painful, that the bladder contracts so strongly, and it expels the urine in spite of all the efforts of the sufferers to prevent it, and before they can make the necessary preparation. In such cases the urine is passed suddenly; sometimes in small quantities, the jet is short, feeble, and the fluid falls close to the legs. When this state of irritation continues for any length of time, the muscular coat of the bladder becomes thickened, and the capacity of the organ becomes proportionately diminished. I have often been consulted in cases of this kind, by persons who lived freely, were nervous, labouring under indigestion, and were guilty of venereal excesses.

Some practitioners imagine that this limpid urine is more irritating to the bladder than when the fluid is naturally secreted, and for this reason is more rapidly expelled. But the cause is different—the irritation in the kidneys is communicated to the bladder, and *vice-versâ*, and this produces the sudden evacuation, for in reality urine rapidly secreted contains much less salts than that which is formed slowly. Every one knows, that when the sensibility of the bladder is natural, this organ will retain, for a long time, a large quantity of watery or suddenly secreted urine, as is the case daily after each repast.

But when the irritation of the kidneys is long continued, as in those who commit all kinds of excesses, the secreting vessels of the organs become relaxed, they act freely and

cause *diabetes*. In this disease, the urine entirely loses its chemical characters, the urea and aric acid are replaced by a saccharine matter, and one or more gallons of clear limpid urine is passed daily.

A young gentleman, an officer in the army, laboured under this disease, induced by venereal excesses and free living. The late and very talented Dr. Cheyne of Dublin, and myself, were consulted in this case. All our remedies failed; and our patient died. A case precisely similar came under my own care last year, and the disease yielded to vapour-baths, Dover's powder, and the other remedies mentioned in the section of the *Physician's Vademecum* on diseases of the kidney.

The same result followed in the case of a gin-drinker, which also came under my care at the Metropolitan Free Hospital, which was seen this year (1838), by several medical students.

The public, as well as the medical profession, is much indebted to Dr. Osborne of Dublin, for the successful treatment of diabetes, other diseases of the kidney, and dropsies arising from them, as detailed in his truly valuable work on *Dropsies*.

We observe exactly the same phenomena in the spermatic as in the urinary organs, when they are irritated. When the testicles are excited or irritated, they secrete a much greater quantity of semen than in an ordinary condition; and this sperm is more watery and much less elaborated, and remains a shorter time in its receptacles, in which its watery parts are absorbed; while it is much more promptly evacuated, because the seminal receptacles are more sensitive to its excitement, and therefore more readily contract.

It is on this account, that the spasmodic contractions of the seminal receptacles produce sudden ejaculation either during the venereal act, or in consequence of lasci-

vious thoughts, which render coition incomplete or premature, and nocturnal pollutions very frequent. The debility and sensibility increase after a short time, the semen becomes more abundant and still more liquid, the convulsive contractions of the receptacles are more frequent; and at length, the sight of any woman, or even a voluptuous image, or an erotic thought, is sufficient to cause the ejaculation; but the sperm is not projected with force, the erection is never complete, and there is scarcely any sensation of pleasure. I have lately had a gentleman under my care, aged forty years, who was precisely affected in this way, and who could not see one of the different sex without having a seminal emission. I told him that he was perfectly insane about the reproductive function, and that unless he restrained his mind from dwelling on the subject, he never could get well. He followed this advice, and was, to his great surprise, cured in the course of three weeks, though he had suffered for seven years previously, and had consulted some of the most celebrated physicians and surgeons in this metropolis. In other cases, the emission is constant, and M. Lallemand has termed the disease *spermatic diabetes*.

It is evident from the preceding statements, that the kidneys, ureters, bladder, vesiculæ seminales, and testicles are under the influence of the same causes, which produce the same effect.

Strictures of the urethra may also derange, not only the whole of the genito-urinary organs, but also the digestive, respiratory, cerebral, &c. They also cause urethral discharges, which are often misnamed pollutions, though in some cases, the emissions are seminal. These may be complicated with catarrh of the bladder, and the mucus secreted by the prostate.

Those who commit venereal excesses feel a frequent desire to evacuate the bladder, which shows how readily

the urinary organs participate in the excitation of the spermatic. It is also a fact, that irritation of the bladder will rapidly extend to the vesiculæ seminales. It is towards the end of the emission of the urine, that the semen escapes, as at that time, the bladder strongly contracts to expel the last drops of the urine, the seminal receptacles also contract and expel, more or less semen, with the urine. When persons thus affected are exposed to cold or commit excess in drink, the same causes act simultaneously on both classes of organs. Diuretics do much mischief in such cases, though generally administered by advertising quacks, and even by some medical practitioners.

It is also worthy of remark, that infants, who are subject to incontinence of urine, are particularly predisposed to nocturnal pollutions at the age of puberty; and to diurnal, according to M. Lallemand, at a more advanced age. I cannot assent to this conclusion, as I have known many exceptions. In fine, all the mucous surfaces of the genito-urinary organs have the closest analogy to each other, and are continuous, even extending to those of all the outlets and inlets of the human body. Hence diseases in part of the mucous tissue will not only affect the same organs, but those remotely situated. Thus inflammation extends by degrees, from the secretory organs of the sperm to those of the urine. The portion of the mucous membrane which covers the prostate is in intimate connexion with the mucous follicles, with that of the ejaculatory canals, and with that of the bladder. This portion, in the opinion of M. Lallemand, has most influence over the rest. The relation of the prostatic surface, with the ejaculatory canals is most important, in the study of the nature and treatment of seminal losses; as every sensation in the orifice of the excretory canal is readily transmitted to the secreting organ. The seminal vesicles will be affected by the impression transmitted to the testicles,

and these reservoirs are the agents of the spermatic emission, as the bladder is of the expulsion of the urine. It is necessary to remember these facts in the consideration of the pathology and treatment of diurnal pollutions. The ejaculatory canals open on the prostatic mucous membrane, and hence the influence of this organ in seminal and other urethral discharges.

The most common causes of these diseases are excess in venery, gonorrhœa, and the abuse of spirituous liquors. The most certain remedy is the application of nitrate of silver to the mucous surface of the prostate according to M. Lallemand, with tonics, cold-baths, sponging with cold water, mixed with vinegar or table salt, ablution by means of a bidet or sponge, and quieting the affected organs by means of those sedatives which have a direct influence upon them. I have succeeded, in many cases, to effect a cure, without the use of caustic, and there are instances in which this remedy is not effectual.

Diseases of the testicle and spermatic cord, caused by venereal excesses.—Sir B. Brodie has placed two very important cases of this kind on record. The first was that of a young man, aged twenty years, who was admitted into St. George's Hospital, in 1805, on account of pain in the left testicle. The organ was soft, flaccid, and about the third of the size of the opposite one. The patient had not received any injury, nor had he had gonorrhœa; but for five years, he had practised masturbation, generally once a day. The testicle before it wasted, was the seat of very severe pain, and swelling. The patient was sad and melancholic. Various remedies were tried in vain, and the sufferer left the hospital without relief.

The other patient, aged thirty-one years, presented himself to Sir B. Brodie, in 1820, affected with atrophy, or wasting of both testicles, and complete impotence. He stated that he had indulged with woman to excess, since

the age of fourteen years, and that at the age of twenty, he received an injury which inflamed both testicles, and in a short time after his apparent cure, both had wasted. His present state came on during the space of three years. (*Lond. Med. and Phys. Journ., Oct.* 1826.)

Enlargement and neuralgia of the spermatic cord are often induced by excessive masturbation or coition. Several cases of this kind have fallen under my own observation. I have known the cords and testes enlarged to three times their ordinary size; and, in other cases, attacked with severe neuralgia or tic douloureux. Sir Astley Cooper has well described cases of irritable testis, which required the removal of the affected organs. The spermatic cord is also attacked with neuralgia, and after some time becomes hard and knotty, causing sterility. Hallé, Guilbert, and Titley, have given an account of cases of irritable or neuralgic testicle, caused by suppressed gout. Inflammation and enlargement of these parts are often excited by venereal excesses, and sterility induced. In cases of simple enlargement, a cure may be often effected by hydriodate of potass.

Varicocele and hydrocele arise from the same causes, according to Morgagni. We often see venous enlargement of the spermatic cord (varicocele) in masturbators, and also after gonorrhœa or excessive venery. M. Breschet confirms this statement, in a memoir read before the Academy of Sciences in 1834, in which he proves that circocele and varicocele generally occur from the adult to old age from this cause. I may here observe, that two of the most distinguished statesmen in this empire have laboured under hydrocele, induced by the causes already mentioned. According to my own experience, young persons are most frequently affected.

Diseases of the bladder.—The following diseases of the bladder may be caused by venereal excesses and diseases:

—acute and chronic inflammation, catarrh, ulceration, gangrene, fungus, calculus or stone in, suppression and incontinence of urine, and paralysis in old age. The urine may present various sediments.

Diseases of the ureters or ducts from the kidneys to the bladder.—The same causes mentioned in the last paragraph may induce the same diseases in the uriniferous ducts or ureters.

Diseases of the kidneys.—Acute and chronic inflammation, abscesses, various disorganizations, tumours, hydatids, gravel, and stone, increase or suppression of urinary secretion, paralysis, diabetes, and nephralgia or tic douloureux often confounded with lumbago or psoitis, will be induced by the causes above mentioned. Disorganization of the kidney is often followed by incurable dropsy. A remarkable case came under my care, in August 1838, in which I had the advice of Dr. James Johnson, in which no medicine could excite the kidneys to secrete more than a wine-glassful of urine daily. I have elsewhere described the nature and treatment of such cases.—*The Physician's Vademecum.*

Diseases of the testes and scrotum.—Acute and chronic inflammation, enlargement, abscess, cancer, and sloughing of the testes and scrotum from urinary infiltration, are often caused by venereal diseases and abuses.

Diseases of the penis.—Sloughing, gangrene, induration, ossification, phymosis, paraphymosis, and unnatural opening of the urethra superiorly, inferiorly, or laterally, or beneath the scrotum, result from the same causes.

Diseases of the urethra.—Acute and chronic inflammation, induration, stricture, irritable state of some part of the canal, or total obstruction of it, are induced by the same causes.

Hæmorrhoidal and other circum-anal diseases, as well as those of the prostate gland, neck of the bladder, seminal

receptacles, vagina, and womb, parts supplied by the same blood-vessels and nerves, as well as fistulæ, urinary abscess in the perineum, or part between the genital organs and anus, are excited by the causes under consideration.

The symptoms and treatment of all the diseases enumerated in the preceding paragraphs, and in these pages, I have described in works already quoted.

Diseases of the external and internal organs peculiar to women.—The numerous and formidable diseases of women, I have fully described in another work, and can only notice the most common in these pages.

The female organs are liable to contusion, laceration, inflammation, abscess, ulceration, cancer, induration, great increase in size from diseased action, and are much more frequently affected than those of the other sex. These complaints are so numerous that large volumes have been written on their pathology and treatment. The most common diseases are contusions, lacerations, hæmorrhages, leucorrhœa, derangements of menstruation, inflammation of the vagina, womb, tubes, and ovaries, which may be followed by abscess, ulceration, gangrene, induration, cancer, enlargement, and a great variety of disorganizations which induce sterility. The most frequent disease caused by excesses is leucorrhœa.

This disease arises from more or less inflammation of the mucous membrane of the vagina. It is sooner or later, accompanied by deranged digestion, flatulency, lowness of spirits, nervousness, hysteria, pallidity of the countenance with more or less pain, aching, or other unpleasant sensation in the small of the back and inferior extremities. Vaginal discharges though not seminal, cause great debility. Swediaur describes the case of a young woman aged eighteen, who suffered so much from nocturnal vaginal discharges, that she had all the symptoms of tabes dorsalis, which were finally cured. Sauvages

relates a similar case, in which the evacuations occurred even at the knees of a decrepid and disgusting confessor. Such cases may even occur at the age of puberty. Indeed all obstetric writers have attested this fact. Inflammation of the neck or body of the womb is sometimes induced by the cause already noticed. Every experienced medical practitioner has met with cases of this kind. The patient experiences pain instead of pleasure, during intercourse, and the pain extends to the lower part of the abdomen, loins, and lower extremities, and finally becomes so severe that a separation becomes indispensably necessary. If the exciting cause be continued, a fatal inflammation, or an incurable sterility may be the consequence.

Scirrhus and *cancer* are also occasional results. Cullerier, Richerand, Bayle and Cayol, Sir C. Clarke, Professor Dewees, and many others have related numerous instances, (vide ante, p. 69.)

Uterine hæmorrhage is also caused by venereal excesses of whatever kind. I have been frequently consulted in such cases.

Tissot relates the case of a woman, aged twenty-three years, who, in 1746, sustained the attacks of six Spanish dragoons in one night, at Montpellier. Next morning she was dying, and expired bathed in her own blood.

Virey relates a still more extraordinary instance: an improper woman, abandoned herself one night to twenty soldiers. She could not state the exact number she admitted. The following morning she was seized with profuse hæmorrhage from the uterus, and died. (*Dict. des Sciences Med.* t. xiv.), (vide ante, p. 68.)

There are also cases of partial effusion of blood from the vagina in young persons, and even during childhood, in consequence of mechanical irritation of the affected organs.

Repeated irritation of the vagina and uterus is a frequent cause of sterility. M. Marc has acertained, and Parent

Duchatelet has confirmed the fact, that two hundred improper women do not bear three infants annually, (vide ante, p. 65.) M. Benon de Chanes has also ascertained by statistical researches, that there are fewest conceptions in the first months of marriage, during which the intercourse of the sexes is more frequent, and cause most irritation. (*Annalés d'hygiene Publiq. Jan.* 1831.) M. Villermé has confirmed this statement as regards the first days or weeks of unions, and has authenticated the physiological opinion that fecundity is in the inverse ratio of the frequency of unions. I have considered this point fully in the *Philosophy of Marriage.* I have also proved in that work, that the offspring is deteriorated by premature marriages, and by parents who are injured by excesses. M. Marc has likewise observed, that the infants of prostitutes rarely enjoy health or strength, and that the mortality of them is double that of infants born in wedlock, (vide ante, pp. 66. 174.)

The records of medicine contain numerous cases, in which, foreign bodies were passed into the vagina and bladder. Such cases are described by Morgagni as frequent in Italy, while Deslandes, Depuytren, and others, have met with similar examples in France, and they sometimes, though rarely, occur in this country.

CHAPTER VIII.

CAUSES OF VENEREAL EXCESSES.

General and remote causes of Venereal Excesses.—The causes of genital abuses consist in certain innate or acquired dispositions of the organization, in virtue of which the venereal sense or appetite presents more or less intensity; and in different influences, as education, aliments, climate, mode of life, &c., which act on the sensibility in general, and on the genital apparatus in particular.

There are certain individuals, who naturally become victims of venereal excess; whilst there are others, in whom the genital sense is slowly or imperfectly developed, and there are some in whom it does not exist at all. The causes of these differences deserve to be noticed.

Gall and other phrenologists place the seat of sexual desire in the cerebellum, and adduced many alleged facts in support of their opinions. It is, however, beyond all doubt, that certain animals deprived of the cerebellum, copulate with ardour, so that the phrenological doctrine must be confined to mammiferous animals. In support of this theory it is asserted, that the human cerebellum is not fully developed until the age of eighteen or nineteen years; that it is in the proportion of one to five at puberty, whilst it is a seventh part in infancy.

It is also the opinion of Gall and Spurzheim, that the genital sense is greater in man than in woman, (vide ante, p. 162); and they state the cerebellum is smaller in the latter. It has been likewise observed, that castration not only prevents sexual desire, but also cerebellic development and that this is exemplified by the large neck of the

bull compared to that of the ox. It is further asserted, that if castration be not performed until the cerebellum is fully developed, the genital sense will continue after the operation; that in certain cases the testes may reduce the organ to a state of atrophy, and that the removal of one organ will be followed by atrophy of the opposite lobe of the cerebellum. In fine, it is added that disease of the cerebellum will atrophize the testicle of the opposite side. I cannot agree to the correctness of these conclusions.

In my opinion long since recorded, the minute details of phrenology and animal magnatism, are equally untenable, unphysiological, and preposterous.

Baron Larrey describes the case of a soldier, whose antipathy to women degenerated into mania. The sight of a woman excited in him, very violent convulsions, and sometimes rendered him furious. Spurzheim saw a similar case in this country, and in both, the cerebellum was said to be imperfectly developed.

Gall asserted, that the portraits of Newton, Charles XII. and Kant, showed a smallness of the neck, which confirmed the historical fact, that these illustrious men showed slight inclination for sexual pleasure. But who knows whether the portraits were accurate? He also relates the case of a religious woman, who was so incessantly tormented by lascivious thoughts, that her life was miserable. Her neck was large and prominent. He was also struck with surprise at the large size of the back of the neck of a boy aged ten years, who was a prisoner at Leipsic for having violated a young girl. He likewise saw a mulatto boy at Paris, aged less than three years, equally developed, who not only attacked female children, but even women, with an audacity and determination to satisfy his desires. The sexual organs were not remarkably developed, but he had prolonged erections. As he was always surrounded by girls ready to satisfy his desires, he died of consump-

tion, before the end of the fourth year. His cerebellum was extraordinarily developed. In these cases the sexual organs and the cerebellum were not proportionably developed, though they should have been, according to the phrenological position already cited.

Gall, Chauffard, and Deslandes relate cases, in which the size of the cerebellum corresponded with the intensity of the sexual desire; but there are many exceptions, as will appear hereafter.

M. Voison, a distinguished disciple of Gall's, explored the heads of three hundred and fifty prisoners at Toulon, who were confined for robbery, homicides, and other crimes; twenty-two of whom were committed for female violation. He selected twenty-two prisoners, only thirteen of whom had been committed for rape, whilst the remaining nine were confined for other crimes. Nine of those he had selected, had committed the crime while intoxicated, and their libertinage was accidental and not organic. (*Lecture faite à la Societe Phrenologique—Août*, 1834.)

A few experiments have been cited in support of the opinions of Gall on the cerebellum.

M. Serres observed, that in oxen struck on the neck before being slaughtered, the penis presented an oscillatory motion when the cerebellum was injured. He also remarked an erection in a young horse which was killed by forcing a knife into the cerebellum. M. Segalas saw the same result in guinea-pigs, on introducing a stylet into the same organ. (Serres, *Anat. Comp. du Cerveau.*) M. Cruvielhier disputes the accuracy of this explication. He maintains, that the erection is caused by the stasis of the venous blood. Respiration, he says, is retarded by the compression of the spinal bulb, and there results, a demi-asphyxia favourable to erection. It is well known that priapism, with or without seminal emission, and also menstruation sometimes occur during hanging. The phreno-

logists also assert, that the same conditions will be caused by blisters, setons, or issues applied to the neck. Some of them hold a different opinion, for I have known the back of the head shaved and irritating poultices applied, for the cure of gonorrhœa in several cases, without the slightest benefit, a result which every experienced practitioner would have expected. Bischoff states, that wounds and blows on the neck had been often followed by inflammation of the genital organs. (*Exposition de la doctrine de Gall trad. de l'Allemand,* &c.) Baron Larrey arrives at an opposite conclusion, as he knew an officer who received a severe wound on the occiput, who lost the generative faculty. (*Op. jam cit.*) There is no doubt, however, that excitement of the genital organs, sometimes coincides with disease of the cerebellum. I have already recorded cases in which the abuse of venery caused fatal disease of the cerebellum, (see p. 294); and I shall now prove that genital excitement may be caused by cerebellic disease. It has been already observed, that cerebellic apoplexy has been followed by erection of the penis, with or without pollution, (see p. 293.) M. Serres describes the case of a man, aged forty-five years, who died suddenly after an attack of apoplexy of the cerebellum, during which there were erection and emission, with swelling of all the genital organs. (*Op. cit.*) M. Fabret gives an account of a man who was attacked with apoplexy and complete paralysis, of the left side of the body. This person, though in great agony, made amorous proposals to his nurse, and presenteda demi-erection of the penis. It is a remarkable fact, that neither M. Andral, nor M. Cruveilhier have observed similar phenomena in such cases, and the latter states, that priapism was only temporary.

Gall and Chauffard inform us, that young persons, up to the age of puberty, affected with hydrocephalus, evince

a strong desire for venereal enjoyment, and particularly for masturbation.

It is now very generally admitted, that acute or chronic diseases of the cerebellum or its membranes, induce venereal excitement, (vide ante, pp. 294-5.) Many cases might be cited, but a few shall suffice. A dead body was brought into one of the Parisian hospitals (Bicêtre), which presented considerable tumefaction of the penis and scrotum. The whole cerebellum was inflamed. (*Serres.*) M. Chauffard relates the following very singular case. A man, aged fifty-three years, of mild and amiable disposition, struck his neck forcibly against the post of his bed. He was suddenly seized with violent satyriasis, or excessive desire for venery. He incessantly annoyed his wife, daughter, and every woman who approached him. He was hitherto religious and modest, but now suffered from a violent erotic delirium, and committed the most indecent acts. He remained in this state for three months, during which time his mental powers were steadily enfeebled. In fine, he became in a violent passion one day on the refusal of his wife *lassata viro et satiata*, to gratify his desires, and was seized with convulsions; after which, the pain in the back of his head removed to the upper part of the crown, near the forehead. He was now seized with paralysis of the left side of the body, and the satyriasis was succeeded by a religious delirium and incessant praying, which continued for eight days, when the patient died. According to M. Chauffard, the cerebellic disease was transferred to the organ of the osophie (veneration), which corresponds to the middle posterior and superior part of the crown of the head. Such metastases or changes of the disease from one part of the organ to another, or from one organ to another, are by no means rare, as appears by the frequent change of gout, rheumatism, and other diseases, to different parts.

M. Sainte-Marie relates the following singular case. A merchant at Lyons had suffered severely from syphilis, for which he used a great deal of mercury. He supposed himself cured, but he still complained of pains in the back of the head and neck, and frequent erections. He was seized in 1812, after some domestic annoyances, with furious delirium, which continued three days, and terminated by a priapism, during which he had fourteen seminal emissions in a few hours. A perfect restoration of reason was the result of this crisis, and his feebleness was removed by tonics and analeptics. In two years and a half after, he was again attacked, and the disease terminated in the same manner. He was again seized at the end of two years more, but the erections were slight, and there was no seminal emission.

Such are the cases which lead many authors to conclude, that satyriasis and nymphomania, depend on an innate or accidental condition of the cerebellum. (*Gall, Voisin*, &c.)

Many eminent observers, however, contest this conclusion, as MM. Flourens and Bouillaud, who contend that the special functions of this organ presides over locomotion. Gall alleged, that the presence of semen, and the irritation to which it gives rise, does not cause physical love and erections. This is contrary to the feeling of all healthful adults, whose physical love is extinguished by repeated connexions, though the brain and cerebellum are little impaired. Nevertheless many authors, as Chauffard, Voisin, Londe, and others, have proposed direct applications to the back of the head for the suppression of excessive salacity. M. Sainte-Marie cured a patient of long-continued nocturnal pollutions, by applying ice to the occiput at bed-time, and allowing it to remain until dissolved. Professor Lallemand was consulted by a man, aged thirty years, who had three or four emissions every

night. The ejaculatory canals were cauterized in vain. M. Gensoult applied leeches and ice to the neck, and the disease was arrested, as if by enchantment. M. Serres has allayed erections during cerebellous apoplexy, by leeches and emollient poultices to the neck. (*Op. cit.*) Sponging the head every morning with cold water, or using the shower-bath, are also beneficial in some cases. M. Deslandes suggests the use of narcotics, as belladonna, opium, morphia, by the endermic method; and is also of opinion, that blisters, antimonial ointment, and such remedies ought to be used with caution in cases of masturbators. I have found most benefit from a full dose of morphia or opium at bed-time, attending at the same time to the preservation of the general health. The muriated tincture of iron combined with the liquor opii, completely cured a patient, aged forty-two years, who had frequent diurnal and nocturnal pollutions. The disease had continued for seven years, and was cured in three weeks, though the sufferer had despaired of relief. Pills composed of camphor, conium, and extract of hyoscyamus have produced an equally successful cure in different cases which have fallen under my care.

It appears from the preceding cases, that diseases of the cerebellum very often excite the sexual organs, and we shall also find that diseases of the spinal marrow produce the same effects.

Willis, long before the time of Gall, localised sexual desire in the nervous centres, but especially in the spinal marrow. Later observers have attested this fact. M. Segalas caused erection in guinea-pigs, by passing a stylet into the cerebellum, and ejaculation by pushing the instrument along the spine to the lumbar region. M. Serres repeated the experiments with the same results, and arrived at the conclusion, that the inferior part of the spinal marrow acts upon the secretory and excretory

apparatus of the sperm, as the cerebellum does on the venereal sense or desire. This opinion is too absolute, because lesions of the spinal marrow produce a marked effect on erection of the penis, and on the sexual sense. Professor Lenhosseik relates a case of compression and atrophy of the spinal marrow which arrested the development of the sexual organs. The patient was aged twenty-four years, and was not larger than a youth of twelve years old. His countenance and genital organs were less marked than at puberty. He died suddenly, and there was a vice of conformation of the first and second cervical vertebræ, and the occipital foramen was reduced to one-half its usual size. The spinal marrow was so compressed, that the body could not be developed. (*Journ. de Progrès*, 1827, t. ii.) It is very probable, that a similar compression but to a less extent, existed in the soldier described by Baron Larrey, whose testicles wasted, whose power of erection was lost, and whose venereal desire had ceased. The inferior extremities were emaciated, the power of locomotion diminished, the face pale, the digestion and intellectual faculties deranged. (*Op. cit.*)

Dupuytren, Ollivier, and other experienced authors have attested the fact, that priapism is often caused by lesion of the spinal marrow. Many cases are recorded which show, that injuries of all parts of the spinal marrow, but especially of the cervical portion, produce erection of the penis, (vide ante, p. 304.) MM. Polain, Renauldin, and Hedelhofer, have related analogous cases. The last writer saw a man who fell on the sacrum, and instantly had an emission. M. Fages knew a military officer, who had paralysis caused by a fall from his horse, and this was accompanied by such intense priapism, as to cause retention of urine. (*Ephem. Med. Fev.* 1827.) There was concussion of the spine in this case.

I have, however, repeatedly treated cases in which the

power of erection was destroyed by falls, and blows on, or by strains of the muscles of the loins. Some of these cases had persisted for three and five years before a cure was effected. I have already noticed the opinion of Sainte-Marie, that involuntary pollutions may be the cause or result of affections of the spinal marrow, (see p. 330.)

It is not generally known, that an uneven step, an effort to save the body from falling, the effort made in drawing on a tight boot, or cork from the neck of a bottle, or a fall on any part of the body, may seriously injure the brain or spinal marrow, and sooner or later induce a formidable or incurable disease. It is also probable that a certain original or accidental condition of the spinal marrow may be the indirect cause of venereal excesses and abuses. Every adult has remarked the influence of lying on the back in producing voluptuous reveries, and even seminal emissions. The cause has been already explained, (see p. 328.) We can also understand the advantages derived from pouring cold water, or applying ice along the spine, loins, and sacrum, in involuntary pollutions, priapism, satyriasis, and nymphomania, (vide ante, p. 363.) M. Sainte-Marie has succeeded in curing spasms of the genital organs by frictions on the sacrum or lowest part of the back, and by the application of bladders filled with ice to the same region. (*Op. cit.*) Certain cases of masturbation may be relieved in the same manner, and by the use of narcotic frictions or plasters to the lower part of the loins and back, and also by using narcotics by inoculation or the endermic method, (vide ante, p. 364.) When there is reason to suspect congestion or inflammation in any part of the spinal marrow or its coverings, leeching or cupping should precede the application of cold or narcotics. It too often unfortunately happens, that all remedies fail in severe cases of this disease. (See *Physician's Vademecum.*)

It is now generally considered, that the sexual sense does

not exclusively depend in either the brain, cerebellum, or spinal marrow, but exists in all parts of the generative organs themselves. It is well known, that mechanical excitement of any portion of the genital apparatus, will induce and increase the venereal appetite.

It is also to be remembered, that a considerable portion of the apparatus is composed of erectile tissue, which swells, hardens, and becomes erected. The summit and body of the penis is formed of this tissue, as well as the spongy substance of the urethra, the clitoris, nipples, vulva, and vagina, while the womb is highly vascular. The part which this tissue takes in the work of reproduction indicates, that it has great influence on the production of lascivious ideas, and that this state, whether innate or acquired, excites a great influence on the sexual sense, as will appear by the following facts.

Certain species of monkies and baboons possess an enormous mass of erectile tissue, not only about the sexual organs, but about the adjacent parts. It is difficult to form an idea of their salacity. On seeing their own females, or even women, they make the most extraordinary gestures, and by looks and voice, solicit them. Their jealousy on seeing a man is unbounded. They commit incredible excesses in copulation with their females, and if deprived of them, masturbate themselves with fury. Their cerebellum and spinal marrow are not different from those in other animals, and the enormous quantity of erectile tissue can alone account for their salacity.—(*M. Desmoulins, Dict. des Sciences Naturelles*, t. v.)

It may also be urged against the phrenologists, that the erectile tissue in the penis, clitoris, vulva, vagina, and nipple, is larger in those persons remarkable for their amorous propensities than in others. It is likewise evident, that their erection is the most constant sign of the activity of the venereal sense. In fine, it is in the glans penis and

clitoris, that sensation is most intense during copulation, though there are exceptions, especially as regards the uterine orifice on the application of the semen, when it is prolific.

We may however refer, in some cases, to the erectile tissue for the principle of masturbation, and apply means to control its influence. Cold lotions, applications, and hip-baths are therefore useful in subduing genital excitement. Sainte-Marie advised a person subject to frequent pollutions, to apply a bladder containing ice, to the generative organs twice a-day. He preferred this plan, to sponging, or pouring salt and water on the parts. Lavements of tepid water are beneficial to both sexes, while cold vaginal injections may be used unless the hymen closes the vulva, which is rarely the case.

I have known a great number of cases, which were remarkably improved by the use of cold-water with a portion of table salt or ice, applied to the external genitals; and this application is more convenient than the above-mentioned, which would often be discovered in families. The organs ought to be kept cool, by wearing the under dress loosely. Leeches to the perineum are often beneficial.

There is another mode of controlling the influence of the erectile tissues, which is very seldom resorted to in Europe, though commonly practised in Eastern nations; and that is, their ablation or excision. Female circumcision is common in Egypt, Ethiopia, and Africa, and a considerable portion of the erectile tissue is removed. I have described this operation in my *Manual of Midwifery*, and cannot notice it further in this place.

The operation is never performed in temperate climates, unless for the cure of excessive masturbation or nymphomania. The exquisite sensibility of the clitoris, the size it acquires in a few lascivious women, and by masturbation,

have led many to consider it the chief seat of voluptuous desires, and that these would be suppressed by its removal. The clitoris is not, however, the exclusive seat of such desires, and its ablation will not suppress them, though it will generally cure masturbation. It would be more correct to state, that the clitoris is the most sensitive of the external genitals, and the commonest seat of natural or artificial excitement, but not the exclusive seat of sexual enjoyment.

Levret was the first who conceived the idea of curing nymphomania by excision of the clitoris. The operation was since performed by M. Ant. Dubois on a girl reduced to a state of marasmus by masturbation. Moral and physical means could not control this patient. Even tying her hands was vain; she supplied the use of them, by moving herself against some part of her bed. Her lower limbs were also tied without benefit, for their motion on each other, with the shaking of the loins and pelvis, produced abundant pollutions. Her parents consulted M. Dubois, who proposed amputation of the clitoris, to which they and the patient consented. The operation was performed, and a complete cure effected.

Graefe, of Berlin, relates a similar case in 1825, which fell under his observation in 1822. This was an idiot, aged fourteen years, who was addicted to excessive masturbation. She incessantly practised it day and night, by shaking herself on her chair, and by moving one lower extremity towards the other, and it was considered that this habit impeded the development of the intellectual faculties. A great number of remedies were used in vain. The clitoris was removed in 1822, when all inclination to masturbation ceased, as if by enchantment. The intelligence began to develope, her education commenced, health returned, and in three years she could speak, read, and write.

These cases prove, that the sexual sense is in the genitals, and not in the cerebellum, as blisters, cold applications, and irritants had been applied to the back of the head without any benfit. Arnauld de Villenauve advised long since, caustics to the thighs, cupping-glasses, and scarifications, to appease excessive venereal desires. Leeches or cupping on the sacrum, the former to the groins, external labia, and perinæum are often beneficial. I have also found anodyne and stimulating liniments, ointments, and plasters often productive of relief.

M. Biett excised the clitoris of a woman, aged thirty-five years, who suffered from nymphomania, in consequence of the long absence of her husband. She was completely cured. He also operated on a girl, aged ten years, who had practised self-abuse since her second year. She was initiated by her nurse, who remarked that she appeased the infant's cries by rubbing the clitoris. All means were tried in vain. Mechanical contrivances did not restrain the patient. The clitoris was also amputated by M. Jobert, in June 1834, with complete success.

Influence of the genito-urinary mucous membrane on the venereal sense.—The influence of the cerebellum, spinal marrow, and erectile tissue, also affects all parts of the genital apparatus. There is, in fact, no irritation which may not be a direct cause of venereal excitement, and consequently an indirect one of venereal excesses. No one doubts that irritation of the mucous membrane, which lines the genito-urinary passages, may produce this effect. It is also well known, that acute inflammation of any part of this lining may excite painful erections, chordee or curvature of the penis, as in cases of blenorrhagia (gonorrhœa). The presence of stone in the bladder causes itching and pain in the extremity of the penis. It is well known that many persons, after intemperance at table, often commit sexual excesses, so that wine and ine-

briating liquors are powerful causes in some cases of stimulation of the genital and other mucous membranes. The stimulus of cantharides and other medicines often induce priapism and satyriasis for the same reason, which may end in inflammation and death.

The genital mucous membrane is much more extensive in women than in the other sex, and hence we more frequently observe the phenomena just named in them. Different eruptions appear on this membrane from the edges of the external genital fissure, which cause intolerable itching, termed pruritus or prurigo, and sometimes nymphomania. Several obstetric authors have described such cases, and have considered such diseases as causes of masturbation. I have repeatedly met with instances of this description.

Ascarides in the rectum often cause violent iching in the vulva and vagina, and induce venereal excitement; and even nymphomania. Beck describes a case of this disease in a woman, aged seventy years. Bitter and saline injections dislodged the worms, and a cure was effected. (*Cruveilhier, Dict. de Med. et Chirur. Pratique,* Article *Entozoaire.*)

Worms in the rectum have also caused nocturnal and diurnal pollutions. The irritation of hæmorrhoides (piles) often excite erection, venereal desire, and even seminal ejaculations. Wichmann records the histories of such cases. It is also a fact, that drastic enemata, especially of gratiola, have excited nymphomania in some subjects. (*Dict. Cit.,* Art. *Gratiole.*)

I have been informed of the case of a lady, who, desirous of offspring, applied to a medical practitioner for advice, and he prescribed terebinthinate injections into the vagina and uterus, which caused inflammation and death in a few hours. The same injection was used by a

midwife to induce abortion, which it failed to do, but rapidly killed the patient.

Various cutaneous eruptions on different parts of the body, and especially near the sexual organs, occasion salacity. The same result may be induced by inflammation of mucous membrane in any part of the body, as in the throat, air passages, digestive organs, &c. M. Desportes relates eight cases, in which violent genital excitement preceded different catarrhal affections, (vide ante, p. 342.) Some of his patients had priapism, and others relieved themselves, though religious, by masturbation. He also saw a case of genital excitement which occurred during the convalescence of a pleuro-pneumonia, which was succeeded by irritation in the mucous membrane of the mouth and digestive organs. A most extraordinary case occurred very lately at a public exhibition, which cannot be further noticed. It is evident in these instances, that there was a metastasis, or translation of the irritation, from one portion of the mucous membrane to the other. I have repeatedly observed irritations of remote portions of mucous membrane sympathetically affect that lining the genital organs, causing redness, heat, pain, and venereal excitement. This is common in children during dentition, or when suffering from worms.

I have now under my care several gentlemen suffering from irritatable urethra, caused by indigestion; and also many females suffering from vaginal and uterine irritation, arising from the same cause. It is manifest, from the preceding observations, that irritation in any part of the mucous membrane may excite the urethral portion, and it is equally certain the reverse may be the case.

When the mucous membrane of the genito-urinary organs is irritated or inflamed, the following remedies will generally prove beneficial. The application of cold to the

affected organs will generally afford much relief. Excesses at the table, and all foods and drinks which render the urine irritating, aught to be avoided, such as wine, ardent spirits, coffee, tea, spices, beer, porter, stout, ale, particularly when too much hopped. The removal of worms, prurigo, and other irritating diseases, by appropriate remedies, which I have described in my work on *Obstetricy*, and in the *Physician's Vademecum*. I shall only observe at present, that M. Ozanam communicated the history of a case of nymphomania to the Academy of Medicine in 1828, which resisted antispasmodics, narcotics, cold-baths, &c., but yielded in a few days, to the application of a solution of four grains of nitrate of silver in an ounce of distilled water, to the nymphæ and the clitoris. M. Deslandes treated a case in 1833, of a woman, aged thirty-five years, who was subject to nervous disorders. She experienced, in the vulva and vagina, continual sensations which resembled those excited by a desire of coition, which caused an insurmountable irritation. Lotions and injections of distilled water with cherry-laurel water were tried in vain. The introduction of pieces of lint wetted with a solution of the extract of belladonna (a grain to the ounce) produced the best results, and caused the venereal irritation to disappear. Pieces of ice were also introduced into the vagina. She experienced so much relief that she incessantly used these remedies. A complete cure was finally effected.

In corroboration of this case, it may be stated, that the most intolerable *itching of the vagina* may arise from small white specks or small ulcers, which often occur at the adult age, either during or in the absence of pregnancy, and also after parturition. Such cases are best treated with solutions of the nitrate of silver, and anodyne applications.

When nymphomania proves fatal, the vagina or neck

of the uterus is often found highly inflamed, of a violet colour, and sometimes grangrenous. (Fred. Cuvier, Helwich, Calmiel, &c.) These states are necessarily preceded by a determination of blood to the parts, caused by natural or other excitement. It is well known that there is a determination of blood to the uterus for a few days before each menstruation, and this accounts for the increased sensibility which is often experienced before the occurrence of this function. The same state may also be induced by sexual intercourse, and increases the venereal orgasm during the act of reproduction.

The *ovaries* are likewise congested under the same circumstances. Their development corresponds with that of the venereal sense. This fact, as well as that these organs contain the germs of the future beings, have led to the spaying of certain domestic animals. The same operation was first performed by a sow-gelder on his own daughter on account of her salacity. Diseases of these organs are of frequent occurrence, causing sterility; and they are also found in the bodies of those who die of nymphomania or excessive venery.

When the ovaries are diseased, and when removed in consequence, the breasts emaciate and all venereal desire ceases. The same result follows disease or removal of the testicles, though this does not always happen. Thus Frank relates four cases of castration, the subjects of which were so indecently immoral, that the police had to interfere.

It is generally concluded by physiologists, that the accumulation of the spermatic fluid in its receptacles for a few days is the most powerful cause of venereal excitement. Few adults can doubt this conclusion, as their feelings after excesses must convince them, (vide ante, p. 257.) It is however to be recollected, that the reproductive function is involved in mystery to a great extent, and will perhaps ever remain so. Thus all birds, and

many cold-blooded mammiferous animals have no seminal receptacles, and in them the seed cannot be accumulated before copulation. It is however the general belief of physiologists, that the human sperm must be secreted for some days to be prolific. This is also the case with many of the more perfect of the mammiferæ, as stallions, bulls, &c. Agriculturists are well aware of the correctness of this statement, (vide *De la Generation.* Par M. Ch. Girou de Buzareingues, Paris, 1828.)

There are individuals, in whom the *testicles do not descend as usual, from the abdomen into the scrotum* about the seventh month of fœtal life, and always remain in their primitive situation, or at all events, in the abdomen. Some authors, as Monro secundus and John Hunter, considered such persons more vigorous than those whose organs are in the scrotum. There is however as yet but one well authenticated case on record, as far as I know, it was that of a man thus formed, aged twenty-seven years, who was seen at Brest in 1812, by M. Poliniere, and committed the greatest venereal excesses, contrary to all advice, which premature death alone terminated. (*Dict. des Sciences Med.*, art. *Puberté.*)

When the testicles are retained in the abdomen they develope as usual, and being subjected to a higher temperature than in the scrotum, may be more sensitive, and perhaps more productive of the sexual sense. I have been consulted in cases of this kind, in which one or both organs had not descended into the scrotum, as to the propriety of marriage, and have always advised it, and the procreation of offspring proved the correctness of the advice. I have also advised well developed individuals, in whom there was but one testicle in the ordinary situation, to marry, and informed them that the other was in the abdomen, and was as well, if not better developed, and such persons have had children.

Sir Astley Cooper relates a case of this kind, which led the individual to commit suicide; and a paper was found on his table, on which was written, "I am impotent." Others thus circumstanced as to the situation of the organs in the abdomen, had offspring contrary to the expectation of their paramours. (*See Manual of Medical Jurisprudence*, 1836.)

It would appear, at a first view, to follow from the preceding remarks, that *castration* would extinguish all venereal desire, but this is not invariably the case, as eunuchs retain the power of infertile copulation. It has however happened, that individuals have sacrificed their seminal organs with a view of relieving themselves of a salacity which embittered their existence. A man who removed his testicles on this account, was admitted a few years since into the London Hospital, and there was only a slight hæmorrhage.

The reason he assigned for committing this rash act was, that the organs were always getting him into trouble. He finally got well of his wound, but hung himself soon afterwards. I have the facts of this case from an old pupil who attended my lectures some years since, and who was called to attend the individual. The loss of one testicle by excision or disease, causes great melancholy, which sometimes leads to suicide

I knew a fine looking young gentleman, whose mind was greatly impaired by masturbation, who suddenly quitted a room where a young lady of much personal attraction was playing the piano, repaired to his own apartment and removed the virile member with a razor. The mutilation was not discovered for three days after its commission, when the excised organ was found. Even persons partially mutilated, may beget offspring.—(See works on *Midwifery, Medicat Jurisprudence and Marriage*, already quoted.)

There is often a strong desire in masturbators, not only to mutilate their organs, but even to commit suicide, when greatly depressed by their excesses.

Baldassar relates the case of a man, who intreated him to perform the operation of castration, to deprive him of the means of self-abuse. Persons in despair have made a similar request, and even operated upon themselves. A similar application has been made to myself.

"Novimus quosdam audaciores," says Ætius, "qui sibi ipsis testes ferro resecarunt." A surgeon at Bernstad amputated the testicles of a man, aged sixty-three years, on account of excessive sensibility and immoderate desires; but the operation failed to produce the expected result. This was an unjustifiable operation in my opinion. Castration is, therefore, not an infallible remedy. It only destroys the power of becoming a father, but causes a profound deterioration of the physical and moral states. The removal of one testis does not prevent procreation, or offspring of both sexes.

A man may become a father after complete castration, provided the seminal receptacles contain a sufficient collection of semen at the time of the operation; but when this is ejaculated in one or more sexual connexions, incurable sterility will be the result. The reader will find proofs of this statement in the Manual of Medical Jurisprudence.

M. Simeon (de Metz) has advised the comprehension of, or ligature on, the seminal tubes (vasa deferentia), and on the spermatic arteries in obstinate spermatorrhœa, as in his opinion, it would be much better that the patient should become a eunuch, than to inevitably perish.—(*Hygiene de la Jeunesse.*) Such operations would not be warranted, unless all other remedies had failed, which is rarely the case, and even then spermatorrhœa very rarely proves fatal at the present period (vide ante p. 334).

Diseases in different parts, which sympathise with the

genital organs, and all parts sympathise with each other in a higher or lower degree, may excite the sexual sense, and cause venereal excesses. Thus genital excitement may precede an attack of gout or rheumatism, as these diseases are often consequent on irritation in the mucous membranes, especially the former. Phthisical persons are generally very salacious, as if nature determined upon the continuance of the species; and this probably depends upon the sympathy existing between the pulmonary and genito-urinary portions of mucous membrane. Pathological anatomy does not, as yet, explain this question.

M. Louis carefully examined the bodies of forty consumptive subjects, and in three only were the prostate gland, seminal receptacles, or deferent vessels affected. There was tuberculous matter in the prostate; and in one case, it was found in the seminal vesicules and deferent canals. M. Louis does not allude to the venereal desire of the patients. (*Recherches Anat. Path. sur la Phthisie*, 1825.)

I know a gentleman, aged fifty years, whose reproductive function is much excited before, and during, his attacks of gout. M. Moreau de la Sarthe relates a case somewhat similar, of an aged man, who consulted him in consequence of pollutions, accompanied by erotic reveries. These debilitated him very much, and constantly returned during a chronic rheumatism, which extended to the fibrous coat of the testicles. (*Dict. des Sciences Med.*, Art. *Reve.*)

Irritation of the genital mucous membrane is often caused by certain *cutaneous diseases*, as elephantiasis, tuberculous lepra, &c. (see p. 372), and excites the most excessive salacity, which is sometimes gratified on highways, according to Sonini, Niebuhr, Vidal, Joannis, and other travellers. It is now proved that the mucous membranes are affected with tubercles, ulcerations, and other

degenerations in elephantiasis. Such changes would extinguish lasciviousness, and arrest the development of the sexual organs, if the disease occurred before puberty. The late Baron Alibert observed disease of the genital organs in tuberculous leprosy, a fact also attested by MM. Cazenave and Schledel. Many other cutaneous diseases cause excessive itching, and may induce venereal excitement and excesses (vide pp. 372. 382).

A singular case occurred at the Hôtel-Dieu of Paris, in 1833, in the wards of M. Bouillaud. It was that of an hysterical woman, aged thirty years, whose hand after acute rheumatism was attacked with a sensibility of such a nature, that friction on the part induced all the sensations of coition. (*M. Donne., Rev. Med., Juin* 1833.)

M. Mirambeau relates an analogous case of a child, who produced pollutions by slight friction on the navel, though there was no erection.

It has been long observed that idiots, lunatics, maniacs, and cretins, if left to themselves, become masturbators, nymphomaniacs, hypochondriacs, or hysterics, after the age of puberty. The ganglionic system of nerves is hypertrophied in many of them. (Schiffner, Cayre, Andral, &c.)

It is also well known to observant physicians, that individuals who indulge in venereal excesses, often become stupid, insensible, melancholic, lunatic, idiotic, or maniacal. (Vide ante, p. 229.)

As a general proposition it may be maintained, that all things capable of exciting the general sensibility, will increase that of the reproductive organs. I have given a full account of the causes which increase and diminish fecundity, in my work on *Marriage,* and shall now but briefly enumerate the chief of them. The principal causes of genital excitement, are the seasons, climates, aliments, drinks, pursuits, trades, manufactures, immoral and physi-

cal incentives, &c. Spring was considered the season of reproduction since the remotest antiquity, but it was only of late years that this opinion was based upon a sure foundation, by the statistical labours of M. Villermé in France, and M. M. Quetelet and Smits in Belgium.

M. Villermé has ascertained beyond all doubt, that certain seasons of the year are remarkable for most conceptions; and the following is the order in which he ranges the different months: May, June, April, July, February, March and December, January, August, November, September, October. According to this table, the quarter in which there are most conceptions, is April, May and June; and that in which there are least, is September, October and November. Thus in spring, the season in which vegetation is reproduced, and most animals couple, we find most human pregnancies; whilst in autumn, the season of decrepitude of the animal and vegetable life, is also the time in which the human species does least for its reproduction. These statistical writers also inform us, that on referring to criminal proceedings, there are more persons accused of female violation in spring than in autumn, and that most marriages take place in the former. This last fact is likewise proved by the marriages among the lower classes in Ireland and other Catholic countries, which are generally contracted at shrovetide, or the commencement of spring. This is the season in which mankind commit most venereal excesses and abuses. (*Wichmann and others.*)

Villermé has further ascertained that there are, comparatively speaking, more conceptions in the country than in large cities. It has, however, been determined, that most conceptions occur in winter, December, and January, in cold countries, as Sweden, Finland and St. Petersburgh; and this deviation is ascribed to the increased clothing and heat required at this season, which may be compared

to the forcing of plants in hot-houses. The premature exercise of the reproductive function, is well known to be common in warm climates, and illicit pregnancies are extremely frequent in manufactories whose temperature is high, and in which a number of youth of both sexes is employed. I cannot here repeat my former observations, but must refer the reader to the work last quoted, for farther information on this subject. Certain odours and perfumes excite the passion of love; and it is on record, that certain voluptuous women used a variety of perfumes and cosmetics for this purpose, and particularly musk. The use of this medicine caused nocturnal pollutions. (*Schræ Kius Hist. Moschi.*) It has been deemed prudent by some medical authors, to caution young persons against the abuse of cosmetics—yet they are generally employed.

Friction and irritation of the skin, especially near the reproductive system, excites the genital organs. Meibomius composed a work, entitled De flagorum usu in re Venerea. Lug Bat. 1643, which he dedicated to the Counsellor of the Bishop of Lubeck, with this epigraph :—

Delicias pariunt veneri crudelia flagra
Dum nocet, illa juvat; dum juvat, ecce nocet.

This method has been known since the time of Nero and Petronious. Enothea, a priestess of Priapus, promised Eucolpius to render him *fascinum tam rigidum ut cornu*, by this proceeding. Impotent libertines resort to this process, and suffer its tortures until the blood flows freely. Mr. Talbot assured me that he saw a most extraordinary machine for this purpose, in a certain brothel suppressed by the London Society for the Suppression of Juvenile Prostitution.

Rousseau states in his Confessions, that having been flogged by a young governess, somewhat older than himself, she at once desisted when she perceived that he became a man. This effect is now so well known, that

scourging children is entirely abandoned in all well-regulated schools and families. It is also well known that this method was employed to extinguish, and not excite the desires of the flesh. Many a holy man employed it to suppress concupiscence, but was astonished at his disappointment, as it produced the opposite effect. Flagellation and denudation are inseparable, and often excite erection even in children. Many such cases are recorded by Pic de la Mirandole, Rhodingius, Serrurier, and others. It is now totally interdicted in all respectable schools and colleges, and ought also to cease in all families. Medical practitioners should explain the bad effects of this mischievous practice on modesty and on the senses. Urtication is seldom employed at present.

Certain articles of clothing excite the skin, and have the same effect as flagellation. Camlet, hair cloth, and articles of wool or hair, with which certain pious individuals have clothed themselves, have often contributed, with certain discipline, to induce incontinence. The best means of combating venereal excitement, induced by these and other causes, will be the use of cold lotions and baths, which will be more fully described hereafter. Drinks and aliments have great power in modifying venereal appetite. Nutritious aliments and stimulating drinks are universally known to produce this result. Certain foods and drink excite sexual desire in different persons; and it is important to ascertain the kind when examining patients.

It is well established that there are more births in years of plenty than in years of famine. M. Villermé has proved by many tables, that when the imposts were taken off wine, salt, &c., the lower classes in France indulged more in fêtes and repasts, and the number of births very remarkably increased. He has also shown, that when the people lived low, there were much fewer conceptions. He

likewise found that there were fewer births after the bad year of 1816, from November to September, 1817, and especially during the months of April, May, June and July, than in other years. (*Annales d' Hygiene Publiq. Jan.* 1831.) The same observation even applies to the inferior animals: this is the reason why fasting is prescribed by the Roman Catholic Church, as a means of mortifying the desires of the flesh. M. Villermé has ascertained beyond doubt, that in all Catholic countries, where Lent is strictly observed, it has an unfavourable influence on procreation. (*Op. cit.*) It is also well known, that amorous desires are often developed after a repast, more particularly when stimulating food and drink have been taken. This fact must not be forgotten when we prescribe for those affected with pollutions and nocturnal emissions. A habitual and abundant use of animal food, meat, game, ragouts, spices stimulating wines, ardent spirits, liquors, coffee, &c., may be considered as remote and indirect causes of venereal excesses, unless the individual takes active exercise, and exerts both mind and body, almost fatague.

Vegetable food is less exciting, but is sometimes the cause of salacity and fecundity. Thus the Irish peasants, who chiefly live on potatoes and milk, are proverbially prolific; and another striking example is afforded by the inhabitants of la Landais de la Gironde, who live upon the most meagre diet which can be imagined, and who, though attenuated, are remarkable for precocious and ardent love. It has been long observed, that certain aliments excite the reproductive organs more than others. These have been termed spermatopia; but Cullen and others denied that there are any articles of food, or even medicines, which possess such qualities. Modern observation has proved the inaccuracy of this conclusion, and few can deny that certain articles of diet and drink, and certain medicines, possess this property. (*Vide ante, p.* 10.) Thus the use

of fish has increased fecundity; but some ascribe the result to the condiments and spices taken with this food. It has, however, been long since determined by Fourcroy and Vauquelin, that the flesh of fishes, and especially the melt, contains phosphorus, which is a powerful excitant of the sexual organs, though a most poisonous substance, if used injudiciously.

M. Bènoiston de Chateneauf, adduces statistical facts to prove, that the inhabitants of maritime districts are not more prolific than those living elsewhere. (*Notice sur le Fécondité en Europe au commencement du dix neuvième Siècle Bulletin de M. Ferrusac, Janv.* 1827); and M. Villermé remarks, that the women of Greenland who live upon fish, have seldom more than two or three children. Notwithstanding the objections of these writers, it is generally observed, that the inhabitants of maritime districts are very prolific. M. Deslandes also urges that Lent, during which fish is much used, is unfavourable to births; but it is to be remembered, that the use of this food is only for a few weeks, that it is generally salted, and that persons taking it for a short time, cannot be affected by it in the same manner as those, who almost entirely live upon it in a fresh state.

There are many other aliments regarded as aphrodisiac besides fishes, as turtle, ray, cockles, oysters, crabs, lobsters, &c., several kinds of reptiles, a bird named *torcol*, and many insects, which it is useless to enumerate eggs, truffles, artichokes, mushrooms, celery, cocoa, garlic, onions, different condiments as ginger, pepper, &c.; and lastly, certain fruits, as strawberries, apricots, peaches, &c. Saraisin or buck-wheat, which has a remarkable effect on birds, is included in this category.

Many of these aliments possess no specific powers, and sometimes produce opposite effects, such as the anti-aphrodiac substances. Milk is exciting in some cases, and de-

pressing in others. Fresh leguminous substances, such as parsley, lettuce, endive, cucumber, melon, &c.; the flesh of young animals, as chicken, lamb, and veal; as also refrigerating vegetable drinks, as orgeat, gooseberry-water, and lemonade, &c., are considered depressants or anti-aphrodisiacs.

The regimen best suited to appease genital excitement, chiefly consists in the use of white animal food, and low diet, which are digested with the least excitement in the stomach.

Various medicines have been recommended as anti-aphrodisiac, such as infusions of mallows, violets, barley, houndstooth, as also iced-water, ices taken internally, and nitre alone, or combined with camphor. The sedative effect of camphor, in large doses, on the generative organs, as in painful erections in gonorrhœa, proves it to be an efficient remedy.

Primrose and St. Basil strongly advise hemlock to appease venereal excitement; while others have combined it with cantharides for the cure of impotence. In my own practice I have repeatedly observed, that camphor combined with extract of hemlock or henbane, has the power of allaying painful erections in gonorrhœa. The different preparations of opium have also been advised for the same purpose, and according to John Hunter and many others, with the best effects. I have repeatedly found morphia and the sedative preparations of opium taken at bed-time, prevent nocturnal and diurnal pollutions, although common opium is used in large doses for an opposite purpose by eastern nations. This apparent contradiction is easily explained. A moderate dose of opium acts in general on the brain as a sedative, and induces sleep, thus diminishing or suppressing during its influence, that train of thought, which favors emissions, or causing a temporary suspension of the mental impression, which harrasses those who

are subject to them. To effect this desirable object, the sedative preparations of opium, such as morphia, the sedative solution, &c., which are totally different from the tincture or laudanum, or common opium, is to be preferred for this purpose. Solid opium and its tincture are decided stimulants in repeated doses; and on this account opposite effects of the different preparations are perfectly explicable.

Belladonna has also been found useful in some cases, in allaying venereal excitement. The late Dr. Powel of St. Bartholomew's Hospital, mentions the case of a young girl, aged seventeen years, who for two or three years was subject twice a month, and even oftener, to violent libidinous hysteria, and she was cured by belladonna urged until it dilated the pupils. This medicine is also highly useful in satyriasis and nymphomania, and all degrees of genital excitement. Libidinous hysteria is often observed in young girls from the age of fifteen to twenty years, and in young women who are married to men old enough to be their fathers, or grand fathers. I once treated a most remarkable case of the former kind at the hospital without effect, but the disease was rapidly cured by pregnancy. In January, 1838, I had another case under my care which defied all remedies. The girl left the Metropolitan Free Hospital uncured, was seduced soon afterwards, when her fits ceased. M. Esquirol relates similar cases, (*Dict. des Sciences Med.* art. *Continence.*) It has been long known, that marriage is the best remedy for the different species of hysteria. The reader will find ample proofs of the truth of this opinion in my works on *Midwifery, Medical Jurisprudence, and Marriage.* There are many other sedatives lauded for appeasing genital excitement, as thridace or extract of lettuce, (M. Angelot,) cherry, laurel water, (Lœyer Villermay,) boracic acid or the sedative salt of Homberg, nitrate of potass, or sal prunella, are amongst the remedies. M. Baldasar cured

a man who applied to him for the removal of the testicles, with nitrate of potass. Dr. Prevatius also asserts that this medicine will produce impotence.

In former times, agnus castus and nenuphar were highly lauded for the same purpose; but they have completely fallen into disuse. M. Montegre asserts on the authority of Dopsonville, that there is a tree in the East Indies, named Mairkousie, the leaves of which produce impotence. I have been informed by a military officer of rank, a patient of mine, who has long resided in India, that the native Indians exhibit some medicine which has the power of delaying the period of emission according to the wish of the individual. This statement does not accord with physiology, as no two individuals are alike in constitution. Since I arranged this page, my respected informant has confidently re-assured me of the truth of the precedir.g statement. Nevertheless I remain a sceptic, for the reason already assigned.

It has been long observed, that the labouring classes are more free from hysteria, and hypochondriasis than the affluent. There are, however, many exceptions. Habitual fatigue of the body diminishes the force of the passions. A man who labours daily, and lives moderately, thinks less of the sexual indulgence than one who is indolent and idle, and lives freely. Thus Helvetius attributes the lascivious tastes of the Asiatics to idleness; and the indifference of the Canadians to love, on account of the fatigues of the chase, and their other laborious pursuits. M. Villermé also states that there are less conceptions among the blacks than among the whites in St. Domingo, (*Op. cit.*)

Many authors of distinction likewise contend, that gymnastic exercises should be practised in classes and schools, both by boys and girls, to preserve health, and to prevent sexual excitement. These, or similar modes of exercise are

now adopted in most countries in Europe, as well as in many parts of America.

M. Simon (de Metz) assures us that masturbation which was so destructive in the Orphan Asylum at Berne, has been totally suppressed by different kinds of exercise. The same result has been observed in other countries.

The chase is also a powerful means of suppressing venereal excesses, partly from the fatigue, and partly from the concussion of the spine, and contusion of the sexual organs during equitation, and hunting. Some equestrians are, however, seized with erections succeeded by emissions in consequence of the rapid motions of the body during hunting, and the same thing happens in certain kinds of carriages.

The sitting posture also causes congestion of the organs in the pelvis, determines blood to the lower part of the body, and necessarily to the reproductive organs. Thus it exposes young men to genital excitation, enlargement of the spermatic cord, piles, to which all sedentary persons are more or less liable. Scholars, and those who sit for several hours are very liable to this excitement, which often causes voluntary or involuntary pollutions. Particular kinds of seats modify and prevent these causes and effects. Hard warm seats are improper in schools, chambers, public offices, and counting houses, while interlaced cane bottom chairs or seats are much preferable.

Excessive intellectual exertion has analogous effects on the sexual function. Persons in general, whose minds are occupied with abstruse studies, have but very little inclination to sensuality; but I have known many extraordinary examples, when such persons live well, and are of a sanguine temperament. I have been consulted by a literary character of imperishable fame, the greater part of whose time has been passed in study, and whose venereal excesses were seldom equalled. He indulged in this way

from the age of fourteen, to the age of forty years, but he always lived well and paid his devotions to Bacchus and Ceres, as well as to Venus. Nevertheless, there are much more numerous examples, in which partial or complete impotence has been prematurely or ultimately caused by intense study—vide causes of fecundity—*Philosophy of Marriage.* Several cases of this kind have fallen under my care, and some of the subjects were distinguished students at the universities.

When the notions of love occur frequently, they cause a vague sentiment in the mind, which soon becomes a strong passion. Thus the perusal of old romances, amorous tales, and obscene works are highly improper for young persons, and even excite the passions in most adults. Gestures, words, balls, theatres, and paintings, influence the youthful mind, and irritate it. The dancing, and other exhibitions at our public theatres are strong incentives to vice, nor do the large number of depraved women, who are not only allowed to attend, but to mix with the most respectable and virtuous in the boxes, saloons, and green-rooms, tend to diminish the evil. The disgusting and indecent attitudes and gestures on the stage, and the assignations made in the hearing of the virtuous, with the shameful conduct of libertines and prostitutes, are a disgrace to the enlightened age and country in which we live. I need scarcely observe that the separation of the different sexes in schools and colleges cannot be too much insisted upon, and is now very generally enforced, in all well regulated establishments. It is extremely difficult to preserve young persons from contamination by servants and acquaintances; and in crowded cities they hear remarks and make observations which generally lead to premature, and unfortunate discoveries. The obscene language of the lower orders in town and country before youth is most demoralizing, and it is almost impossible to preserve one's

sons or daughters from more or less contamination. No one can pass through the streets of this or any other metropolis or large town, without hearing language of the worst description, and no respectable woman can pass through the streets, unless in company with a male protector, who is not accosted and insulted, by some impertinent and lascivious fellow. Yet all this happens before the eyes of our legislators and magistrates, and it openly proceeds unnoticed and unpunished! It cannot then be expected, that the youth of the rising generation, can escape corruption and vice, which are sure to induce some of the fatal diseases which I have already described. (See p. 157, &c.)

The habit of masturbation has three origins, it may be spontaneous, it may be taught by others; and it is practised by those, who do not, or cannot indulge in legitimate union; and it is often practised by those who can.

I have already observed that irritation of the gastro-urinary mucous membrane will give rise to itching of the sexual organs, and lead to the application of the hand to those parts. New sensations arise, and masturbation is accidentally discovered. It is therefore essential to preserve the organs of children and young persons from all means of excitement by dress, exercise, &c. When infants apply their hands to these organs, they suffer from some excitement, and the parts will be found irritated or inflamed. In such cases cold lotions and other appropriate remedies ought to be employed. It is also indispensably necessary to caution children against applying their hands to certain organs, and to make it an object of shame. Ablution, or washing, should not be done with the hand, but with a sponge, flannel, or napkin, nor should children of different sexes be ever washed in the presence of each other. Boys should not be allowed to keep their hands in their trowsers pockets, nor should they be suffered to remain

alone, or in company with others, unless under the eye of an adult.

As a general rule, children ought to be sleepy before being put to bed, and should rise as soon as they awake in the morning and can sleep no more. It is also advisable to take them up at night to evacuate the bladder, for the desire to do so, often causes them to press the thighs closely together, and excites erections in boys which may lead to touches aud pollutions. Female children who suffer from genital irritation and discharges, a common disease, are often led to apply the hand to obtain relief, and sometimes discover another source of pleasure. Children are generally initiated into bad habits by nurses and servants, with a view of distracting their attention, appeasing their cries, or gaining influence over them. Male servants are particularly vicious in this respect, as well as tutors and governesses. The claustration of scholars too often leads junior instructors to destroy that innocence, which they are morally bound to preserve. The initiation into vicious habits, is generally effected by companions and acquaintances in schools. The celibacy of adults is, in many cases, the cause of masturbation. This revolting practice is also unjustly attributed to monastic orders, (see p. 264,) but justly to the inmates of prisons, barracks, ships, lunatic asylums, schools, and colleges.

When youth arrive at the age of eighteen or twenty years, they usually abandon this vice, more especially after sexual commerce. They too often find however, their general health deranged, and their virility more or less impaired. They fear to make matrimonial alliances, though it rarely happens that such fears are well grounded, as perfect restoration to health may be anticipated in a vast majority of cases—(vide ante, p. 10). Marriage is most assuredly the best remedy for the removal of solitary vices, and these very rarely, upon the whole, induce either

incurable impotence or sterility. They are almost universal in all nations according to the opinion of Hunter, Copeland, and a host of authors, but do not materially diminish the increase of population in any country.

The fear of the Deity, and the injunctions of the ministers of religion against the immorality of violating the divine precepts, as well as the advice of physicians against injuring the health, have the most powerful influence in restraining unlawful passions. Satyriasis and nymphomania, have been suppressed by the power of religion over the senses. M. Deslandes states, that to his own knowledge the fear of aural confession, has often produced the same result in young subjects. He also observes that confession is not free from danger, as it is unfortunately too true, that confessors, have, more than once, by asking imprudent and indiscreet questions, sown fatal seeds in innocent bosoms. However this may be, it must be manifest, that a religion which inculcates that thoughts and words are as sinful as actions, must have great influence in controlling the mind and senses. There are few enlightened individuals who can deny that thoughts precede words, and words actions, or that improper thoughts are always followed by improper words or actions. Hence the Roman Catholic Church holds it sinful to entertain thoughts, desires, wishes, delights, words, songs, consents, and actions, contrary to modesty and chastity—to attend balls, theatres, or other assemblies which expose to the offence of the Deity; to dress in an immodest manner, to dance indecently, to inspect dishonest drawings, prints, or statues, to possess, or to read immodest works, to be guilty of excess in drink, which leads to those of a licentious description, as immodest kisses, touches, impure thoughts, deliberate desire, consent, wilful delight, complacency, as all these expose to fornication, adultery, effeminancy, and abominable offences. Matt. v. 27, 28;

1 Cor. vii. 37, 38; 1 Tim. v. 5; Col. vi. 5; 1 Cor. vi. 9; Gen. ii. 22. 24; Matt. xix. 6; Ephes. v. 31, 32; Col. iii. 18, 19; Ephes. iv. 22, 23; 1 Cor. vii. 3, 4; (vide ante, p. 266.)

The next fears which restrain persons from committing venereal excesses are those of disease and death. The work of Tissot has had a most powerful effect in exciting such fears. Its perusal has deterred many, and thrown others into absolute despair, while some considered it wholly fictitious. Hallé, Montegre, Friedlander and others considered it too frightful. It has, however, done a vast deal of good in a variety of cases, and deterred many persons from indulging in vicious habits. It is, perhaps, in some degree, an exaggerated production, upon the whole, as the author should have emphatically stated, that the majority of masturbators, whose vices are not excessive, are not affected with the numerous diseases described by him. It is a fact, that there are scarcely two individuals affected exactly alike, and most persons are perfectly cured in three or four months after they have renounced their fatal errors. The terror inspired on this head by advertising and rapacious empirics makes a host of dupes, whose purses are speedily emptied by unprincipled knaves who profess to effect cures—(vide ante, p. 8.) Every well informed medical practitioner, is in most cases, according to my experience, justified in assuring his patient, that there is a certainty of disease if he continues to commit vice, and of cure, if he avoids it. This opinion applies to most persons from the age of fifteen to the age of forty years; but there are many exceptions; as the perusal of the preceding pages fully proves. The masturbator should break off his habit at once, and avoid all things likely to revive it. Distraction by business, travelling, abstruse study in moderation, and having the care of an establish-

ment, and all pursuits which give the mind a new direction, will fulfill this indication.

In fine, there is no medicine which possesses the power of restoring all persons to health, and no medical practitioner of education, or of experience, can assert the contrary. It is advertising quacks, who style themselves surgeons, who commit this gross fraud upon the public. Every one will admit, on reflection, that there are different constitutions, different degrees of diseases, and different remedies; mille mali species, mille salutis erant. As the most common predisposing causes of masturbation are idleness and isolation, or being left alone, the best correctives are activity and attention to business. If the person be liable every instant to be detected in an unmanly vice, exposed to shame, or to correction, he must abstain. Young persons suspected of this vice, should be watched when taking off their clothes, as on going to bed, to a bath, or to the water-closet. Separate dormitories and cells, in schools and colleges, lead to the commission of the vice under consideration. In all well regulated institutions of this kind, there are dormitories, lighted by a lamp sufficient to permit surveillance, but not to prevent sleep. The masters, or ushers, should make silent visits during the night. The most perfect silence ought to be enforced, for talking, or whatever prevents sleep, favours the commission of masturbation. In fine, young persons should not remain in bed, unless when asleep. "Iniquity is often meditated and practised in one's bed, Ps. xxxv." In many of the colleges, prisons, &c., the water-closets and privies are overlooked from the top, so that an inspector may see what is passing in them.

Various mechanical contrivances, as bandages, waistcoats, drawers, &c., &c., are employed occasionally to restrain persons from committing self-abuse, and these are some-

times useful, when the intellect and mind are impaired, as in cases of children and insane persons, as well as when all impure thoughts are suppressed. But they are perfectly useless in cases of adults, unless the mind be restrained from thinking on amourous subjects. Remarkable cases have fallen under my own observation; and I shall give only one.

A gentleman aged forty years allowed his whole thoughts to dwell on the function of generation. He could not look on one of the other sex, without having a seminal emission, and this occurred eight and ten times a day. He had consulted many of the most eminent surgeons of this metropolis, all of whom advised him to marry. He also requested my advice and opinion, and that I would inform him, where he might procure some of the mechanical contrivances above alluded to. My reply was, that he was perfectly insane on the function of generation, and that unless he controlled and restrained his thoughts on the subject, there was no remedy for him but marriage. My letter made a deep impression on him, he used the remedies prescribed to allay the sensibility of the sexual organs; and in three weeks he was completely restored to health. He had been ten years affected.

TREATMENT OF DISEASES INDUCED BY VENEREAL EXCESSES.

The indications of treatment of diseases caused by venereal excesses, are to improve and restore the general health, and to arrest or remove the local affection.

The best remedies for the restoration of health are aperients, tonics, chalybeates, strychnia, quina, bitters, &c.

Many narcotic, or sedative substances are absolutely necessary to allay unpleasant spasmodic, and painful sensations; as opium, belladonna, hyoscyamus, morphia,

&c. These are highly serviceable, either combined with some of the above remedies, or exhibited occasionally, or at bed time by themselves. This class of medicines judiciously employed, will generally prevent certain kinds of nocturnal emissions, but as they confine the bowels, mild aperients will be necessary during their employment. John Hunter found tincture of opium exhibited every night at bed time, the best remedy for impotence depending on mental fear, and also to prevent nocturnal emissions. I prefer morphia, or the sedative solution of opium, which has a more purely anodyne effect, and is much more successful. But as the continued use of sedatives for days or weeks impairs digestion, and confines the bowels, tonics and aperients must be administered with them. Thus we prescribe the latter three or four times in the course of the day, and the former at bed time, every night, every second night, and so on, according to the state of the case. I have fully described the best means of improving digestion, and consequently the general health, in another work--(*The Physicians' Vademecum*), to which I must refer the reader, as also for the treatment of hypochondriasis, hysteria, epilepsy, melancholy, mania, and various other disorders and diseases induced by venereal abuses, and already mentioned in these pages—(see chap. vii., p. 291.)

To fulfill the second indication, or to alleviate or remove local complaints, a great variety of remedies must be employed, according to the seat and nature of the affection. Thus amaurosis, deafness, loss of taste, smell, or touch, partial or general convulsions, palsy, spasms, &c., will require different and opposite remedies, which are fully described in the work to which I have just referred. I again repeat that no single nostrum or medicine can remove them. Many medicines have a direct influence on the genital organs, as phosphoric acid, extract of nux vomica,

strychnia, copaiba, cubebs, buchu, the turpentines, cantharidis, pariera, ergota, &c., but these must be administered with the proper caution, and only by qualified practitioners. It often happens, that, some of them not only do more harm than good, but excite diseases which may destroy the genital function, and even life itself.

It is to be remembered, that diurnal and nocturnal pollutions, whether voluntary or involuntary, as well as sudden and premature emissions, arise from an irritation or inflammation of the seminal vesicles, and chiefly from the latter according to the observations of M. Lallemand of Montpellier, and M. Davilla of Madrid. According to these authors, and I fully agree with them, in certain cases, involuntary spermatorrhæa, or pollution in a chronic catarrh of the mucous lining of the seminal receptacles. According to this conclusion, cold applications to the sexual organs and small of the back are indicated, and afford much relief. Cold water, cold lotions, ice, or ice water, are applied with a sponge or pieces of linen, or ice is inclosed in a bladder. Care must be taken, especially in aged and broken down constitutions, not to apply cold or freezing lotions or ice too long, as gangrene might be produced. Washing or affusion every morning with half a pint of cold or tepid water, and a table spoonful of table salt, or wine glassfull of vinegar, of the genitals is a valuable remedy. Hip baths of common or salt water are also highly beneficial. Injections of cold or tepid water into the lower bowel are strongly advised by Lallemand and Davilla; and they are often productive of benefit as I can attest from numerous cases, on account of the contiguity of the seminal receptacles, on the inferior surface of the bladder to the rectum or lower bowel. In addition to these means, an opiate, or a belladonna, hemlock, or henbane plaster, ought to be applied to the loins.

When the general and local remedies now enumerated

fail to afford relief, recource must be had to simple or caustic bougies, which ought to be applied to the urethra, near the neck of the bladder, and orifices of the seminal ducts. M. Lallemand has also had patients, who after the passage of needles into the perineum, or space between the scrotum and anus, had no pollutions for three or four months. I have observed much benefit from the use of the ointment liniment, or plaster of belladonna, opium, hemlock, &c., to the same part; and in some obstinate cases, a blister dressed with savin cerate, effected a cure. I have already stated, that phrenological practitioners apply their remedies near the cerebellum, and to the spine —(see p. 358). I have also tried this plan, with little, and generally without any benefit.

When all means fail, recourse is had to mechanical contrivances. Wender, Serrurier, and others have compressed the penis and urethra by mechanical means, but these cannot effect a cure, though they may awake the patient as soon as erection occurs, and thus enable him to exert his mind against amorous ideas. I have known such contrivances succeed in different cases. Leeches, and cold applications applied to the lumbar spine, followed by counter irritation with antimonial ointment or plaster, or mustard cataplasms are often beneficial; when, in addition to the local symptoms, there are unpleasant sensations, spasms, or paralysis of one or both inferior extremities, strychnia in the smallest doses, will sometimes excite universal spasms in such cases; and its effects may continue for several days. Galvanism and electricity are useful in some cases.

The diet and regimen for persons enfeebled by venereal abuses, are the same as under other circumstances. As a general rule, every aliment difficult of digestion ought to be avoided. Those aliments which afford most nourishment, and produce less excitement, are to be preferred.

Thus spiced or seasoned foods are excitant without being nutricious, and are therefore improper. Beef, mutton, fowl, lamb, veal, roast or broiled, are preferable to boiled; milk, eggs, fresh fish, white meats, wild fowl, are advisable. Soups should only be taken with solid food. Bread, potatoe, and leguminous vegetables are proper articles of diet, but red or black pepper should be taken with the latter, when there is much air or gas secreted in the stomach or bowels.

The patient should take food, "little and often, at a time," and masticate or chew it well. Coffee, cocoa, or chocolate, is better than tea when there is much nervousness; and an egg or some meat should be taken with any of them at breakfast.

A glass of port, or sherry, or madeira, with a buiscuit, will be necessary in the middle of the day, unless the patient dines at an early hour; and he may take two or three glasses of whatever wine best agrees with him, during and after dinner, though the less the better. His drink may be toast and water, or a small quantity of cold brandy or sherry and water, home-brewed ale, or stout diluted with water. It will be advisable to remain quiet for an hour or two after dinner, until digestion is completed.

An early tea with some solid food may be taken, at least two or three hours before bed time.

Suppers are generally injurious to persons labouring under the different degrees of indigestion, lowness of spirits, melancholy, or enfeebled health.

A dose of some tonic medicine should be taken, an hour or half an hour before each repast.

Seven or eight hours sleep will be necessary in most cases, and the individual should repose on the right side, so as to facilitate the passage of the contents of the stomach. Exercise on foot, in a carriage, and sometimes on horse-

back, unless genital irritation is produced, will be necessary. The use of the flesh brush, sponging the body with tepid or cold water, or mixed with vinegar, the shower bath, tepid or cold, the common or salt water, or artificial saline baths are valuable adjuvants. Residence in a fine dry air, and in the country, or near the sea coast, or at some suitable watering place, has a beneficial influence on the general health, as well as on digestion, and all the functions.

CHAPTER IX.

SPECIAL VENEREAL DISEASES—SYPHILOGRAPHY—HISTORY OF THE SYMPTOMS OF THE VENEREAL DISEASE.

THE destructive effects of the venereal disease are now so generally known, that it would be unnecessary to describe them minutely, were it not that many persons, even as yet, do not duly estimate the full extent of their direful consequences on health, reproduction, and longevity. An extensive observation in different institutions, established for the cure of venereal diseases, as well as considerable private practice, has enabled me to study the various forms of these formidable maladies, during the last twenty years. It is, however, foreign to my present purpose to give a minute account of all the ravages of these disgusting and malignant complaints; and I only propose to confine myself to a few general remarks on their primary and constitutional effects on the human body, at the different periods of life.

Primary symptoms.—The first appearance of syphilis is a small vesicle on the glans, prepuce, or other part of the penis of the male, or on the labia, vagina, or uterus, of the female, and this is termed a chancre, Plate 10. It arises from the application of the syphilitic virus, on a delicate surface, from which it is speedily absorbed in the same manner as the virus of a rabid animal, the virus of small-pox, or of vaccination, is conveyed into the body. The whole system becomes sooner or later infected, and a vast number of diseases are developed. Amongst these are buboes or venereal swellings of the glands of the groin, ulceration of the throat, a vast number of cutaneous eruptions,

which at first are generally of a copper colour, though they may assume the appearances of ordinary skin diseases. These symptoms are accompanied or succeeded by pains of the shin and other long bones, as the arms, and even the bones of the head, which are greatly aggravated at night, prevent sleep, destroy the appetite, injure the general health, and are often followed by inflammation and swelling of some portion of the periosteum, most commonly on the tibia or shin, instep or back of the hand, and this is termed a node.

In many cases there is partial or total destruction by ulceration or sloughing of the virile member (Plate 10, fig. 4.), and of the female genitals, of the soft palate, of the cartilages of the nose, there are warts on the glans penis, or labia pudendi, various abscesses, pustules, and fissures, in different parts of the body; there are nervous, neuralgic, and rheumatic pains, falling off of the hair, phthisis or general breaking up of the constitution, and very frequently death closes the scene. Vision is often destroyed by the form of ophthalmia, called iritis; there are severe pains in the bones, enlargement, termed exostosis, and sometimes caries or mortification, and at other times brittleness of the bones, which cause them to fracture on the slightest exertion.

In gonorrhœa or blenorrhagia, or more properly contagious urethritis, there is a yellow purulent discharge from the genitals (Plate 9, fig. 2), followed by sympathetic buboes, destructive gonorrhœal ophthalmia, severe rheumatism, and often ulcerations of the genitals, stricture of the urethra, diseases of the bladder, ureters, and kidneys, which are often misnamed gravel or lumbago (see Plate 7.)

The ravages of syphilis are often hideous and destructive, and frequently incurable. In other cases, supposed to be cured, the disease remains latent in the constitution, for ten or twenty years, and is transmitted to the offspring,

or destroys the fœtus in the womb. In some individuals it causes impotency and sterility.

How often do we observe sloughing of the affected organs in both sexes, inducing infecundity, and very frequently death itself. In some cases there is ulceration or sloughing of the parts between the bladder and vagina, and between the latter and the rectum, so that the urine or fæces, and sometimes both, are evacuated through the vagina, forming a most loathsome and painful disease, which renders cohabitation impracticable, and often leads to infidelity and domestic misery. I have described several cases of this kind in my other works, and was the first in this country to cure them without any cutting operation, (see Manual of Midwifery, 1831). They are most common in abandoned women, though we frequently meet them in other classes of society.

When the venereal contamination of either parent is very considerable, though not apparent, the infant will be born dead, between the seventh and eighth month, in a state of decomposition and putrefaction. I have described several cases of this kind which fell under my care, in my Lectures on the Physical Education and Diseases of Infants and Children, already quoted.

It often happens that women have six or eight infants in rapid succession, which are born dead and decomposed, between the seventh and eighth month, in consequence of ill-cured syphilis in the father. I was once consulted on a distressing case of this kind, with an eminent physician of Dublin, about which the greatest domestic misunderstanding existed on account of the want of living offspring. I proposed that the parties should live separately for six or eight weeks after the lady's next confinement, during which period she and her husband were put under the influence of mercury and sarsaparilla. They again lived

together, a living infant was born in due time, and they have now a large family.

According to my experience, there is no use in prescribing remedies for either husband or wife, when the latter is pregnant, as in such case the infant will be born, as on former occasions, dead and decomposed, between the seventh and eighth month. I feel convinced that the fœtus is contaminated at the moment of conception, not at the sixth month, as Mr. Abernethy inculcated, (Lectures in the Lancet), and I know, by repeated observations, that the ordinary remedies will fail when pregnancy has occurred. Mercury, sarsaparilla, and iodate of potass should be used by both husband and wife for six weeks after her delivery, during which time the parties should live separately.

It is also important to state that a man who has no external sign of syphilis, who has been declared cured by his medical attendant, and who is advised to marry, may contaminate his wife and offspring in different degrees, so that his infant may be born feeble, or covered about the genitals or mouth with a red or dark copper coloured eruption, or this may appear soon after birth, or the infant may be born dead and decomposed, as already stated.

Again, the infant may contract syphilis in passing into the world, by coming in contact with a venereal sore, which may cause a chancre on the lip, angle of the eye, &c., and the sore on the lip will infect the nipple of a healthy woman, and this, again, may infect every infant that touches it. In fine, an infant may contract gonorrhœal ophthalmia during its nativity, and have its sight destroyed in a few days, unless proper treatment be employed.

I might quote several cases of this kind, which fell

under my own observation, caused by these methods of infection. When a pregnant woman is infected with gonorrhœa, the disease ought to be cured before the time of parturition, or otherwise the infant will contract gonorrhœal ophthalmia, which may destroy its vision. I have known this occur in numerous instances, although the woman supposed herself cured for some weeks before the time of her delivery.

It is also a fact that a man who has been cured of gonorrhœa for twelve or fourteen months, and has only a slight gleet, or thin watery discharge from the urethra, will infect a healthful woman; and such persons ought not to marry while the slightest discharge continues. I have been often consulted in cases of this kind, and have observed that whenever my advice was not followed disease was communicated to the woman. In one case a gentleman affected with gleet determined to marry, as he expected a large fortune, I advised him to the contrary, but he carried his intention into effect, and diseased his bride. Another laboured under the same complaint twelve months after a supposed cure of gonorrhœa, and he also infected his wife. I might mention many other cases of this kind, which led to serious conjugal differences, and were highly injurious to public morals.

The frequency of venereal complaints is much greater than the public imagines. It is a fact which cannot be disputed, that in large cities there is not, perhaps, one in ten male individuals, from the age of twenty to thirty years, who has not been affected once or twice (see pp. 175, 198, 199). I have been often shocked at seeing even boys and girls, before and at the age of puberty, presenting themselves with syphilis or gonorrhœa at the hospitals at which I attend. Here we daily observe every form of venereal infection, and the most frightful inroads upon health.

But it is almost as common in private practice, and

leads to the most distressing results. It is often concealed from the family medical attendant, and the sufferer applies for advice to advertising empirics, who generally allow the disease to destroy or poison the constitution. Proper advice should be had as soon as possible, and medicine taken on the first appearance of disease.

Transmission of the Venereal Virus.—The venereal virus is transmitted by absorption or inoculation, which occurs more or less rapidly in different persons; in some, in a few hours, in others, not for some days. Hence ablution or washing the parts, as soon after exposure to the poison as possible, will often prevent infection. But the disease may be communicated by impure kisses, suckling, infected parents, absorption in the skin, excesses in sexual enjoyment, and the consummation of marriage. The direct application of a chancre, or a primary venereal sore, to any part of the body, to a mucous surface, such as the lip, the eye, the nostril, or any of the outlets of the body, to the nipple, or to any part where the skin is tender or broken, will communicate the disease. Excoriations of the glans penis, prepuce, and labia, are easily distinguished from chancres, and are merely local affections which cannot contaminate the constitution. This class of diseases may also be contracted in water-closets and privies.

Prevention of Syphilitic Infection.—The best mode of preventing infection is ablution with water, or a weak solution of the disinfecting agents, such as the chloride of lime or soda. But when a pimple or sore is formed, absorption or inoculation has taken place to some extent, and the disease cannot be removed by ablution.

There are certain means used on the continent of Europe which prevent venereal infection and procreation, which are little known in this country, though I regret to state have lately been described in a modern medical periodical, and in most infamous works in circulation.

As soon as a pimple or little blister has formed, after an impure connexion, on any part of the genitals, it ought to be carefully touched with nitrate of silver, the diseased part destroyed, the remaining ulcer dressed with mercurial ointment, and washed with the mercurial lotion, called "black wash," to insure a successful and certain cure. The patient should also take mercury until the teeth become painful on pressing them against each other, and until the gums become tender. Sarsaparilla properly prepared, nitric acid, and hydriodate of potass, ought likewise to be exhibited at the same time.

Secondary Symptoms.—When venereal ulcers or eruptions appear, after a primary sore or chancre, on any part of the body, as the face, throat, chest, back, thighs, &c. the constitution is infected, and a judicious use of mercury, sarsaparilla, nitric acid, hydriodate of potass, and other appropriate means is indispensably necessary, until all symptoms have disappeared.

It is very important to distinguish pseudo-syphilitic from real disease, which is easily done by studying the description of Abernethy and others. There can be no difficulty in diagnosticating imaginary venereal affections of nervous or timid persons, and of those about the age of puberty.

Syphilitic neuralgia, or severe pains in the head, face, or other parts of the body, as well as rheumatism, require the use of mercury and the other remedies already mentioned, with strong anodyne embrocations, and the internal use of the sedative preparations of opium, morphia, or the extract of hyoscyamus and conium, colchicum, veratria, &c.

A gentleman, aged thirty-six years, of scrofulous habit, requested my advice under the following circumstances. He stated that he had not slept for six weeks, in consequence of severe pain in the bones of his head, arms, and insteps, which became intense in the evening, and occa-

sionally at different hours of the day. There were several blotches on his face, which greatly disfigured it, and a copper coloured eruption on his chest and trunk. There was a painful swelling on the back of the left hand and right instep. He stated that he had been under the care of two of our most distinguished surgeons, who never could cause mercury to affect him, and who advised him to take sarsaparilla, which he continued until he had expended a large sum in the purchase of it. The appetite was bad, the spirits greatly dejected, and the general health very much injured. His condition was rendered still more distressing as he had lately married, having previously supposed himself cured of his disease.

I ordered him scruple doses of calomel, combined with camphor and morphia, the hydriodate of potass, and an ointment of the latter, with morphia, to be applied to the painful tumours on the hand and instep, with a full dose of morphia at bed time. The painful parts were also rubbed with camphorated oil and morphia, twice a day. He felt greatly relieved from his neuralgic pains the first night, his mouth was affected with the mercury on the ninth day, after which all his symptoms rapidly disappeared, and in six weeks he looked much better than he had done for many years previously.

Many practitioners are fearful of such doses of mercury, but those who have practised in tropical climates, more particularly Dr. James Johnson, assure us of their perfect safety. I have now employed them for some years past, without the slightest bad result, when combined as above advised, and after ordinary doses had failed. For a further account, see my edition of The Physician's Vademecum, 1837, and my other works.

A merchant, aged fifty, who had been improperly treated for syphilis seven years before his application to me, complained of severe periodical pain in the middle of the left

shin bone, which became so excruciating at times as to deprive him of sleep for several successive nights. There was no redness or swelling of the painful part. He had been salivated ten times by one of our most eminent surgeons, without relief; and who finally, as first suggested by Mr. Crampton, Surgeon-General for Ireland, proposed to lay the part open, to which the patient would not consent. I ordered him the hydriodate of potass in combination with the acetate of morphia, and an ointment of the ioduret of lead, with morphia, to be applied night and morning to the affected part. He continued this plan for a fortnight, when he was free from pain, and in a month he considered himself cured. It is now one year and nine months since his recovery, and he has had no return of his disease. His sufferings were so great at one time, that fears were entertained by his relations that he might commit suicide.

Both these patients had nodes, as well as most severe neuralgia; and I may confidently state the treatment employed will often afford relief even in venereal exostosis or enlargement of the different bones.

Venereal Eruptions.—Every form of eruption of the skin may be simulated by venereal diseases, as first graphically described by Mr. Carmichael, of Dublin, and subsequently, most accurately delineated by M. Rayer, in his splendid work on Diseases of the Skin. Some of these produce the greatest deformity of the face, nose, and even destroy the soft parts, as the palate, genital organs, &c., and different parts of the body; they require the use of mercury, sarsaparilla, iodate of potass, &c.

Alopecia or Baldness, is sometimes caused by syphilis, and is an incurable disease.

Osteocope, or intense pain in the bones, is also induced by venereal disease; and it is often accompanied by severe headache. The treatment is the same as in the last form of the disease.

Excrescences and Ulcerations of the genitals, about the anus and adjacent parts, and even sloughing, must be included in the effects of this horrible complaint.

It would occupy a large volume to describe the different forms of syphilis, and far exceed the limits of a work of this description. Those who wish for the fullest information on this subject, will find it in the excellent work of Mr. Carmichael, and the smaller one of Mr. Wallace, both recently published. Enough has been stated, in the bare enumeration of the effects and ravages of this horrible disease, to caution all persons capable of reflection against exposing themselves to its dangerous and most distressing consequences. I shall merely add the conclusions of Mr. Carmichael on these diseases.

Mr. Carmichael was appointed surgeon to the Westmoreland Lock Hospital of Dublin in 1810; about which time, Mr. Abernethy's work on Pseudo-Syphilitic Diseases appeared, which made the strongest impression on his mind. He did not agree with Mr. A., that the symptoms being the same, the diseases could be different. He therefore determined to ascertain, by careful observation, on the extensive opportunities afforded him. He treated all without mercury, which did not correspond with Hunter's description, and the result exceeded his warmest expectations. It proved that venereal disease would not proceed until it destroyed the patient, unless mercury was given; but that the majority of cases could be cured in a much shorter period than is usually effected by mercury. He delivered these conclusions to a large number of students and practitioners, in a course of lectures, which commenced on the 29th of March, 1813; and proposed the same doctrines in the first edition of his work on Venereal Diseases, published in 1814. This work was dedicated to Sir James M'Gregor, Bart., who recommended it to all army surgeons in every part of the Globe. Mr.

Carmichael is therefore entitled to the great merit of being the first who set practitioners right as to the use or non-use of mercury in venereal complaints.

Mr. Carmichael rejects mercury in all forms and stages of venereal complaints, except true syphilis, characterised by the Hunterian chancre, and the scaly eruption from the commencement, as indicating the secondary or constitutional affection. He does not use it for excoriations or spurious chancres, followed by papular eruption, rupia, tubercles, &c., which are nine-tenths of the cases now observed, which most readily and speedily yield to the use of the iodate of potass, and the decoction of sarsaparilla, made with lime-water and combined opium. Mercury is also bad in phagadena, which is best arrested by the application of the muriate of antimony, a saturated solution of the bichloride of mercury in alcohol, or of nitrate of silver in distilled water.—*See Dublin Journ. of Medical Science*, No. xxxvii.; March 1838; vol. 13.

It is very remarkable, that Dr. Colles, who is one of our most experienced and justly celebrated surgeons, should, in his recent work on the Venereal Disease (1837), advocate the old system of practice, notwithstanding the more generally received conclusions of Mr. Carmichael. I must, however, agree in opinion with the latter distinguished surgeon; and also observe, that syphilis is now much less formidable in its results than it was twenty years since; but nevertheless, that it should be eradicated in all cases, if possible, by some plan of treatment or another.

CHAPTER X.

URETHRITIS—BLENORRHAGIA—GONORRHŒA.

This disease is an inflammation of the urethra, in either sex, characterised by heat, redness, burning pain on evacuating the urine, and slight swelling of the affected part, with a discharge of a yellowish matter, which stains the linen yellow, or of a greenish-yellow colour. The difference in the structure of the organs adjacent to the inflamed part, and the difference of the length of the urethra, in both sexes, give rise to various symptoms, which it is necessary to study (See Plates 1—8).

Urethritis in Man.—A longer or shorter time after an impure connexion, as three, six, ten, or fifteen days, the patient experiences a sense of heat or itching in the orifice of the urethra, which at first is more agreeable than painful, but which, in a day or two, becomes intolerable, and especially on voiding the urine. There is redness at the orifice of the canal, which may extend along the whole of the tube to the bladder, so that the inflammation may be partial or general. The stream of urine is now observed to be changed in appearance, it is diminished in size, bifurcated or forked, or the urine is passed in small quantities, and sometimes even in drops. A slight whitish or greenish discharge is now perceived to issue from the urethra, and there are strong painful erections of the penis at night, soon after the patient becomes warm in bed. About the third, fourth, or fifth day from the commencement of the disease, all the symptoms become aggravated, there may be pains in the groins, along the spermatic cords, in the testis, scrotum, and under this part, which

are increased on evacuating the bladder or bowels. The discharge now becomes abundant, the linen is deeply stained, there is a frequent desire to pass the urine, accompanied by severe burning pain, the stream of urine is more or less altered, the glans penis becomes swollen, the testicles are painful, there is pain and sense of weight in the perineum, which prevents the sufferer from walking, and often renders him very grotesque. The erections of the penis are now constant, especially at night, and so painful, that the organ may be curved from above downwards, constituting a *chordee*. The pain extends to the testicles, which become so sensitive, as to require to be supported with a suspensory bandage, or that the sufferer should repose on his back, and support them with a handkerchief (See Plate 1. fig. 1; Plate 9).

In some nervous and aged subjects, the whole of the genito-urinary organs sympathise with the inflamed urethra, there are pains at the neck of the bladder; this last organ becomes irritable, or inflamed, as well as the urethra and kidneys, forming a dangerous, and sometimes, a fatal complication of diseases (See Plate 7).

When the symptoms are intense, the pain is transferred from the urethra to one or both testicles, which become extremely painful, swollen, and inflamed; and, in such cases, the urethral discharge generally ceases, or is very much diminished. When the testicles are inflamed, they may suppurate or become disorganised, and then lose their function of secreting, when incurable sterility may be the result. (See Plate 8.) Sir Astley Cooper has ably described diseases of the testicle, in an original work, and greatly improved this part of pathology. The diseases now mentioned, are of frequent occurrence, and demand great attention.

In the greatest number of cases, the inflammatory symptoms begin to lose their intensity from the twelfth

to the twentieth day after the commencement of the disease. The scalding, in passing urine, diminishes, the painful erections occur more rarely, and without curvature of the penis, the discharge becomes thicker, less abundant, and entirely ceases about the thirtieth or fortieth day, or a small quantity of thin mucus is evacuated in the morning on waking, or on emptying the bladder, for some weeks after the cure. The disease offers great variety in the intensity of its symptoms, according to the habit of the patient, and to the mode of complication and treatment. It is most severe, and extremely painful, when it occurs for the first time, though there are cases in which the pain is trifling, and particularly after former attacks of the disease.

When the mucous covering of the glans penis and inner surface of the prepuce become inflamed, the disease is termed *balanitis*, or spurious gonorrhœa. It may be slight or severe, and induce phymosis, or paraphymosis, and these, if neglected or mismanaged, may be followed by sloughing of a part or the whole of the penis. (See Plate 10. fig. 2—4.) There may be a sense of heat or soreness in some part of the urethra, about the neck of the bladder, or in one or both kidneys, for weeks or months after the acute symptoms have disappeared, when the patient thinks himself cured.

Urethritis—Gonorrhœa in Women.—The urethra is much shorter and more capacious in females than in the other sex, and hence, the inflammatory symptoms are less violent, although the disease is of longer duration, extends to the external genitals and the vagina, thus affecting a much greater surface than in man. When these parts are acutely inflamed, sexual intercourse is performed with pain and difficulty, and sometimes becomes intolerable; but when the disease is chronic, there is little or no inconvenience.

The discharge is very abundant, and sometimes comes in contact with the extremity of the rectum, which it inflames, and the mucous membrane of this part affords a whitish or purulent secretion. When the mucous lining of the rectum is inflamed, there will be heat and pain in the part, which are greatly aggravated on evacuating the bowels, and the stools will be mixed with mucus or yellow matter, and sometimes with blood.

When the mucous membrane of the vagina is irritated by other causes, it secretes abundantly, there will be a whitish or yellowish discharge, termed "whites," or leucorrhœa; and the worst form of this disease may communicate a slight discharge to the male, which is not contagious urethritis, as lately maintained by Mr. Travers. In such cases, there is only a slight urethral discharge in the male, unaccompanied by pain or the other symptoms of blenorrhagia or gonorrhœa, which generally disappears in a few days without any treatment.

The purulent form of leucorrhœa, may cause purulent ophthalmia, by coming in contact with the eyes of an infant, in passing into the world; but this will be much milder than the disease caused by contagious urethritis, or gonorrhœa. These facts point out the necessity of curing both these diseases, during pregnancy, and before the time of parturition.

I might narrate the histories of numerous cases in which the sight of the new-born infants was destroyed by opacities of the cornea or pearls, as they are popularly designated, induced by leucorrhœal or gonorrhœal discharge of the parent. It is, however, fortunate that many such cases admit of cure.

The urethra and vaginal discharge is so acrid in some cases as to excoriate the labia, and to give rise to excrescences or vegetations, which may be succeeded by ulceration or sloughing of the affected part

Sympathetic buboes or enlargements of the glands, in one or both groins, are common consequences of severe urethritis; but they are easily removed by confinement to bed or sofa, cold lotions, leeches, and when they become chronic, by iodine. They are of little consequence in either sex, when there is no chancre, ulcer, or excoriation, on the genitals; but when there is, the buboes are venereal, and require the use of mercury and other remedies for their cure. Buboes are often very obstinate in scrofulous subjects, and may require weeks or months for their removal. They prevent the patient from walking or taking exercise, while they seriously injure the general health, and excite latent diseases in the lungs, liver, or any part already predisposed to them. They are generally removed by cold lotions and iodine; but should they become red and inflamed, leeches, cold lotions, fomentations, poultices, and the usual antiphlogistic measures will be necessary.

I found great advantage from pressure, caused by bandages, in several cases, in the hospital of the 65th Regiment of Infantry, when I had the care of it, and on many subsequent occasions.

Phymosis and Paraphymosis.—When the prepuce is inflamed and swollen and cannot be drawn behind the glans penis, the disease is termed phymosis (see Plate 9. fig. 3); and when this part has been drawn or forced above and behind the glans, and cannot be drawn over it, the disease is called paraphymosis (See Plate 9. fig. 1, 2, 3, 4). In either disease there is danger of inflammation, sloughing, and more or less destruction of the penis.

In cases of phymosis, when the glans cannot be uncovered, the internal membrane of the prepuce becomes inflamed from the accumulation of the natural secretion, or from the acrid matter of chancres, or urethritis, and an artificial opening may be caused by ulceration (See Plate 10. fig. 2).

In such cases it is necessary to subdue inflammation, and divide the prepuce by incision, in the peculiar manner which I have proposed, and which is described in Mr. Cooper's Dictionary of Surgery.

This operation is also necessary in natural or congenital phymosis, when the flow of urine is impeded; and also in cases of adults, on account of the compression of the glans during erection, and the prevention of sexual commerce; and in old persons, when the contraction of the prepuce is so small, as to obstruct the evacuation of urine after it has escaped from the urethra, the effect of which on the glans, would be irritation, inflammation, or sloughing (See Plate 10. fig. 8). Cases of rapid sloughing, in aged persons, have repeatedly fallen under my care, and the penis was destroyed, to a greater or less extent, in a very few days.

A gentleman, aged twenty-five years, was attacked with paraphymosis, accompanied by considerable swelling of the glans penis, which was three times larger than the natural size, and the prepuce was also very much swollen. He applied to an advertising empiric, who employed such long continued and severe pressure as to cause fainting; but without reducing the parts to their natural situation. Intense inflammation supervened in the course of the afternoon, and though the usual means for its removal were resorted to, sloughing set in, and destroyed two inches of the penis within thirty-four hours from the time of the harsh treatment.

Such cases of sloughing are by no means of rare occurrence, and are observed in hospitals and private practice. They are of daily occurrence in venereal hospitals.

The disease may be acute or chronic. In the acute form, the prepuce, which is distended with serum, ought to be punctured with a lancet, or acupunture needle, to reduce its size; the penis should be then extended, pres-

sure made on the swollen glans, between the thumb and fingers, so as to force the blood into the spongy tissue of the urethra, which supplies it; and when the glans is reduced to its ordinary size, or nearly so, the prepuce may be easily drawn over it. But when this cannot be done, the edge of the prepuce ought to be incised. No practitioner who knows the anatomy of the affected parts, will forcibly and rudely attempt to draw down the swollen prepuce over the enlarged glans, which is a fruitless, although most painful operation.

In the chronic form of paraphymosis, the mode of reduction will be the same as for the acute, and will be much less painful. I have seen the glans and prepuce three or four times the ordinary size in children, young persons at the age of puberty, in adults, as well as persons advanced in life. In one case, a young gentleman was improperly treated, the enlargement became permanent, and he was prevented from marrying, on account of his impotence, although he might have obtained a large fortune.

Hernia Humoralis—Orchitis—Inflammation of the Testicle.—This painful disease is often suddenly induced by gonorrhœa or injuries (See Plate 8. fig. 3, 4). The best mode of treatment consists in confinement to bed, or a sofa, cold lotions, repeated leeching, fomentation, and other antiphlogistic remedies. A suspensory bandage or a handkerchief, so applied as to support the affected organ, and prevent its weight from stretching the nerves that supply it, will afford great relief. When the acute stage is over, every effort should be made to reduce the organ to its natural size, by mercurial and iodated ointments, and other appropriate remedies. Chronic enlargement of this organ may injure its secretory power, and induce sterility. (See Plate 8. fig. 2).

The testicle is liable to many diseases which destroy its

function, and which are minutely described in Sir Astley Cooper's splendid work on Diseases of the Testis, to which I must refer the reader. I shall only add here, that there may be atrophy or wasting of the testicle, induced by gonorrhœa, or external injury (See Plate 8. fig. 1).

Enlargement of the Epididymis and Spermatic Cord.—This disease often follows inflammation of the testicle, and may impede the transmission of the semen to its proper receptacles (See Plate 8. fig. 2, *b*. fig. 1, *b*). In the acute form, leeching, cold lotions, &c. are to be employed; and absolute repose, mechanical support, iodated mercurial inunction, and proper compression, will generally effect a cure in the chronic form of the malady. I have lately reduced two obstinate cases by this method. The subject of one was a military officer of rank; that of the other, a country gentleman. This disease is sometimes a cause of sterility.

Blenorrhœa—Gleet.—When urethritis or gonorrhœa has nearly disappeared, there is often a thin, watery discharge from the urethra, which is termed *gleet*. It is important to state that this is infectious, and will communicate gonorrhœa to healthful subjects. Persons affected with gleet ought not to marry until the disease is cured, or has entirely disappeared for some weeks. The disease may continue for weeks, or several months, in despite of all remedies.

It may also be caused by stricture of the urethra, or disease of the prostate gland, which is situated round the neck of the bladder, but usually arises from slight inflammation of one or more of the numerous lacunæ or folds of the urethra.

It is generally cured by medicines which have a direct influence on mucous membranes, as the balsams, cubebs, ergota in small doses (see my Medico-Chirurgical Pharmacopœa, 1838); metallic urethral injections, bougies,

cold sea-bathing, local bathing of the genitals with salt and water, blisters, &c.

Strictures of the Urethra.—Strictures of the urethra are caused by inflammation of some part of the mucous membrane which lines this canal, which is most frequently induced by gonorrhœa, stimulant injections, or masturbation. The urinary passage is obstructed to a greater or less extent; and in bad cases, there is most excruciating suffering when the patient attempts to evacuate the bladder; and it often happens that he can only be relieved by an operation. The disease comes on so gradually, that most persons are not aware of its existence for a long time. The different situations of stricture are illustrated in Plate 3. fig. 1. 2. 3. 4; Plate 4. fig. 1. 2; Plate 5. fig. 1. 2.

Symptoms.—The first symptom is some remarkable change in the stream of urine, which becomes smaller than natural, twisted like a corkscrew, flattened, or divided into two streams. The patient usually observes that he is obliged to make strong expulsive efforts in evacuating the bladder, and when he supposes he had accomplished this, finds on returning his penis into his trousers, that a few drops of urine wet his linen. He may suffer but few other inconveniences for months or years, but he finds his symptoms gradually increase, that there is often a gleety discharge from the urethra, that the stream of urine becomes smaller, that a longer time and more straining are required to evacuate the bladder, and, at length, that the urine only escapes drop by drop, accompanied by the most excruciating agony. In such cases, the urethra often bursts, the urine escapes into the cellular tissue of the perineum, excites inflammation, suppuration, and fistulous openings under the scrotum, through which the urine and semen are evacuated (See Plate 6. fig. 2).

Bad stricture disqualifies for marriage, as it more or

less prevents the seminal emission, which is often forced backwards into the bladder, and renders the individual sterile, while the stricture is allowed to continue. I have been consulted in many cases of this kind, as to the propriety of the parties entering into matrimonial engagements, and I have known examples, in which the most robust and well developed individuals abandoned the sex altogether, on account of stricture obstructing the seminal ejaculation; and some of these persons became intemperate, and died in the prime of life. Persons thus affected become despondent, refuse to form conjugal engagements, are not aware of the cause of their defects, which are easily removed in the majority of cases, and too often abandon themselves to dissipation and ruin.

When the urethra bursts below the scrotum, the urine becomes infiltrated in the perineum, the part swells to a great degree, inflames, suppurates, or mortifies, and often destroys the patient, though a cure may be effected, even in such cases (See Plate 6. fig. *b*).

A gentleman, aged fifty-six, consulted me on account of his general health, which for some time had been declining. I discovered that he had two bad strictures, and that these had existed for eight or ten years. I proposed to use bougies, to which he objected; and I then explained to him the danger which attended his complaint, which might sooner or later cause rupture of the urethra, abscess, or sloughing of the perineum and scrotum, and perhaps, destroy him. He promised in some months to submit to proper treatment, and I lost sight of him. About four months from the time he first consulted me, I was requested to visit him, as it was supposed he was dying. I learned that he had been to Leeds on business, and being a great admirer of architecture, he passed some hours in admiring the interior of some of the public buildings in that town. He stood on stone floors for several hours,

and found, on attempting to evacuate the bladder, that he could not do so. His pain was excessive, the urethra burst, the perineum and scrotum inflamed, and were swollen to a great size, and of a dark colour.

He remained in this state for eight days, until he arrived in town, when I saw him. He was very despondent at my having described his condition so long before; his appetite was gone, and his pulse very feeble. In a few days the scrotum sloughed, and the testicle was partially exposed. It was necessary to make an opening in the perineum, and notwithstanding his unfavourable symptoms and great debility, he gradually recovered, and in due time allowed the use of bougies; I dilated his urethra, so as to remove all his unpleasant symptoms, and to prolong his life for some years.

I have already remarked, that strictures are often induced by unnatural excitement, and many such cases have fallen under my observation. This fact is not so generally known as it should be, and this cause is usually overlooked.

The usual effects of stricture are, more or less impediment to the passage of the urine and semen; and in bad cases, the latter is often retained behind the obstructed part; these symptoms will vary according to the diminution and sensibility of the urethra. Excess at table, prolonged equitation, or riding on horseback, or in a carriage, immoderate venery, exposure to cold and damp, and many other causes may induce complete retention of urine, which, if unrelieved, may be followed by rupture of the urethra or bladder, urinary infiltration of the scrotum and perineum, abscess, sloughing and death (see Plate 6, fig. 2. *b*.)

In chronic and bad cases, the prostate gland, neck of the bladder, ureters, and kidneys become inflamed, ulcerated or gangrened (see Plate 7, gravel and stone

may occur, and the remainder of life be almost intollerable. (Plate 7. Plate 5, fig. 1, 2.)

The constant straining in attempting to pass urine, in bad cases of stricture, impedes the respiration, causes determination of blood to the lungs and brain, which may be eventually followed by apoplexy, blindness, deafness, pulmonary consumption, asthma, and numerous other diseases (see accounts of these diseases.)

In bad stricture, the prostate gland becomes irritated and enlarged, impedes the evacuation of the lower bowel, causes a sense of weight and pain about the verge of the anus, and frequent illusory desires to evacuate the bowels (see Plate 5, fig. 2 *a*. Plate 6, fig. 1 *a*), the urine becomes turbid, thick and glary, or muddy like the grounds of beer, depositing long glutinous filaments, sometimes resembling jelly, and so tenaceous as to be quite adherent to the bottom of the vessel. These may be several inches in length, and are principally observed when the last portion of the urine is evacuated, or after the fluid has cooled, They are generally secreted by the prostate, and according to some, by the mucous surface of the bladder.

According as the obstruction to the flow of urine, or in other words, the stricture increases, the parts behind it dilate, and the neck of the bladder offers but a feeble resistance to the urine (see Plate 6, fig. 2); in fine, the urine is only retained by the stricture, which performs the function of the bladder, and allows the fluid to escape, drop by drop. It is easy to conceive in such a case, that the continual contact of the urine with the mucous lining of the urethra, will cause irritation, inflammation, ulceration, fungosities, and that the urine will be turbid, glary, mixed with matter and sometimes with blood, more especially after the use of bougies or catheters (see Plate 6, fig. 2).

In other cases there is suppuration or total destruction

of the prostate gland; the urine is purulent and bloody, and only a small portion of the gland can be felt through the rectum. In all cases where the disease has continued for a long time, and when the urine is purulent and passed in drops, or with great difficulty and straining, and when the prostate cannot be felt through the rectum, there is reason to conclude that it has suppurated, and is completely destroyed. In such cases there will be great danger of making a false passage on introducing a catheter into the bladder, and the patient will be a truly miserable sufferer.

Professor Lallemand, of Montpellier, whom I have already quoted very freely, has thrown much light on this part of the subject. He states that the evil results of prostatic disease on the secretion and excretion of the sperm have not been properly examined until the present period (vide ante, pp, 330, 331, 332, 351). It has long been observed that in certain cases of bad stricture, the urethra becomes so impervious during erection, that the sperm cannot be ejaculated, and escapes with the urine when the penis is flaccid.

It is easy to conceive, says M. Lallemand, that the irritation of the mucous membrane of the prostatic portion extends to the ejaculatory ducts and seminal vesicles, and the proof is, the frequent engorgements of the testicle as a consequence of strictures. The result of irritation of the ejaculatory ducts and reservoirs of the semen is, that the act of coition is speedily followed by ejaculation, that the patients have frequent nocturnal pollutions, and that in either case the voluptuous sensation is followed by more or less acute pain. At a later period, when the irritation is increased, the seminal emission occurs in a state of semi-erection, and sometimes without any kind of sensation, which may induce habitual discharge when the patient contracts the bladder or muscles of the perineum to expel the last drops of urine, and in the efforts to evacuate the

bowels (see Spermatorrhœa). In such cases there is loss of appetite, the digestion is deranged and feeble, accompanied by flatulency, the spirits are greatly dejected, the body becomes thin, and the moral and physical states are greatly enfeebled. This complication is very common, according to M. Lallemand, for in thirteen cases treated by him, four were in this condition; and he has related several others in his valuable works already noticed. In such cases the nocturnal pollutions continue with the alteration of the tissue, and the diseases cannot be completely cured by the destruction of the latter. For the mode of cure, see p. 334.

The affection of the prostatic portion of the urethra, the ejaculatory canals and seminal receptacles very well explains the influence of strictures on the testicles (see Plate 5, fig. 2; Plate 6, fig. 1). Every experienced medical practitioner well knows that the prolonged use of a catheter or bougie in the bladder, inflames these glands. The sympathy between all parts of the genital organs accounts for the suddenness with which excitation at the orifice of the excretory canals extends to the testicle, as we observe in the salivary, lachrymal and biliary ducts. It is, therefore, not surprising that persons affected with stricture are frequently exposed to engorgements of the testicles, to hydrocele, and even disease of the kidneys (see p. 354). It is this sympathy between all parts of the genito-urinary organs which explains the rapidity of swelling of the testicle and of the spermatic cord in acute gonorrhœa; diseases which often leave incurable enlargements behind them (see Plate 8, fig. 2, 3; see pp. 344. 352).

When stricture is of long standing, and is gradually increasing in size it infringes on the calibre of the urethra, and causes, finally, complete retention of urine (see Plate 3, fig. 3; Plate 6, fig. 2). The portion of the canal behind the obstruction becomes dilated and thinner, it sooner or

later ruptures, and a tumour forms in the perineum, and the urine becomes infiltrated in the cellular tissue of the perineum, scrotum, and penis. In such case inflammation and suppuration follow, and the abscess requires to be speedily opened. Urinary fistula usually supervenes and becomes extremely annoying to the patient, rendering his condition extremely disagreeable to himself and others (see Plate 6, fig. 2. *b.*)

The constant straining of the muscular coat of the bladder increases the developement of the fibres (see Plate 6, fig. 2, *c. c.*), and as these do not form a continued plane, the mucous membrane which lines them, is partially forced between them at certain parts, forming a hernia (Plate 6, fig. 3.) The long retention of urine in the bladder allows its watery parts to be absorbed, leaving the rest more concentrated, and its action on the mucous membrane more powerful. Hence arises a habitual irritation which gives rise, and increases, the mucosities in the urine, and causes various painful diseases of the bladder. When these mucosities are copious they render the urine turbid, glary, and often extremely fœtid and lodge in the bladder, or in fine, become purulent. Whatever may be the appearance of this mucosity, it is easily distinguished from the glary, filamentary matter, like the white of egg, which is elastic and very adherent, and furnished by the irritated or inflamed prostate gland (see Plate 6, fig. 1. *b. b. b.*; and Plate 5, fig. 2, *c.*) As these diseases advance, the ureters which convey the urine from the kidneys to the bladder, participate in the irritation of the bladder, and become diseased (see Plate 7, *b. f.*) In such cases the corresponding kidney is often diseased or in a state of suppuration, though the other may be healthful, or very slightly affected (see Plate 7, *a. d.*) Lastly, the kidneys may become diseased by strictures of the urethra, or by the morbid states of the prostate gland and ureters. They gradually increase in

size, and their tissue becomes soft, pale grey and spongy (see Plate 7, fig. *d*). These changes are indicated by pains in the loins, often mistaken for lumbago or rheumatism, but these are dull, continued and aggravated by the retention of urine. One or both may be affected, and there is constant, fixed, dull, or acute pain or uneasiness along the ureter, testicle, and lower limb on the affected side, which is often severe during sexual union. These symptoms may also be experienced on the sudden stoppage of gonorrhœal discharge, but when long continued, may terminate in destructive suppuration of the affected organ (see Plate 7).

Chronic diseases of the kidneys may continue for several years without any urgent symptoms, more especially if the patient live temperately and perspire freely. It it popularly termed gravel or lumbago (see Plate 7).

I have, however, known many cases in which suppuration and death took place in a few days, especially in cold weather. I have been frequently called in consultation on cases of stone in the bladder, which terminated in this manner in a few days (see Plate 6, fig. 2, 3). When the pain is constant in the region of the kidney, and is dull, tensive, burning or darting, and increased by the pressure of the fingers, or by lying on the abdomen, or on the opposite side, and extending to the testicle, hip, penis, and lower extremity, there is disease of the kidney (see Plate 7). In such cases there is a necessity to empty the bladder several times in the course of twenty-four hours, the urine is high coloured and coagulates by heat or nitric acid, and there is also nausea, vomiting, defect or loss of appetite, and great mental dejection. When these symptoms are succeeded by cold shiverings, suppuration is about to take place.

The anatomical characters are, intense redness of the substance of the kidney, one or several abscesses or ulcerations, and when mortification occurs, a livid red colour,

one or more black spots, a great friability, and the odour of gangrene. There may be abscess, stone, tumours, atrophy, enlargement, and other disorganizations, not only in the kidney, but different diseases in the ureters, bladder, and prostate (see Plate 7).

When there are flocculent bodies suspended in the urine, without falling to the bottom of the vessel, we may suspect diurnal pollutions; and when there is a thick, mucous, puriform sediment on the bottom of the vessel, there is catarrhal inflammation of the bladder (see Plate 6, fig. 1); and if the sediment be glary, thready, or elastic, like the white of egg, adherent to the bottom of the chamber-utensil, the prostate is diseased (Plate 5, fig. 2. *a*), the excretory canals and mucous follicles are dilated (see Plate 2), and if the sediment be purulent, the prostate small, soft, flattened, and difficulty detected, we may conclude that the gland has suppurated; or if this gland be sound, it is probable that the purulent matter comes from the kidney. According to M. Lallemand, with whom I fully agree in opinion, the stricture which causes these diseases should be always removed as soon as possible, for this will lead to the cure or diminution of the concomitant affections, and render the existence of the patient supportable. Even in formidable diseases, as enormous engorgement (see Plate 6, fig. 1), or complete destruction of the prostate, with purulent matter in the urine, diurnal pollutions, and constant dull pains in the kidneys, with continued fever, a cure may be still accomplished.

Affections of the bladder and prostate often induce hœmorrhoids. This is readily understood, when we consider that the same trunks furnish arteries and nerves to these parts, as well as the rectum; piles, may therefore be caused by stricture of the urethra.

Again, the violent efforts made by patients to evacuate

the bladder and bowels often cause an involuntary discharge of the fæces, descent or prolapsus of the rectum, and different kinds of hernia, or rupture.

Lastly, in bad cases of stricture, complicated with disease of the prostate (see Plate 3, fig. 2), bladder, kidneys, or rectum, there may be continued or intermittent fever, which will readily be cured on the removal of the stricture. I was once called to a patient who was supposed to have laboured under ague for ten years;—his disease was stricture.

On examining the urethra after death, we observe that the mucous membrane of this canal presents, in one or many points of its surface, longitudinal, oblique, or circular folds or prominences, of greater or less extent, which diminish the size of the canal (see Plate 3, fig. 2, 3, 4). The membrane is whitish, more dense than usual in the prominent parts, it is sometimes friable, less elastic, and intimately united with the subjacent parts. In other cases the membrane is sound, but there are indurations and nodosities in the body of the penis, which press on and diminish the urethra; or there may be bands in the interior of the urethra, which may divide it into many parts, or completely obliterate it, or the catheter may form false passages in such cases. The urethra may be affected with stricture or narrowing along its whole course or in any part of it, to the neck of the bladder (see Plate 3, fig. 2, 3, 4; Plate 4, fig. 1, 2).

I have now a patient, the external orifice of whose urethra has been gradually closing for the last twenty years, and it is at present nearly impervious. He suffers excruciating agony on evacuating the bladder, and his screams are loud and long. The smallest instrument in use could not be passed, until the orifice was enlarged by incision. His life has been made comfortable, and his sufferings removed in three weeks.

There is another patient of mine, whose urethra is so contracted that the finest cathether is passed with difficulty. He has refused to submit to proper treatment during the last ten years, and has been three times at the jaws of death, from inflammation and sloughing of the scrotum; he leads a most miserable life, and still declines to submit to a proper use of instruments.

A gentleman, aged fifty-six years, a widower, had long suffered from difficulty in passing urine. After a debauch, he indulged in an impure connexion, soon after which he could not evacuate the bladder. This was followed by retention of urine, accompanied by most excruciating suffering. On attempting to pass the smallest catheter into the bladder, his agony was much increased, and it was found that he had a very bad stricture near the neck of the bladder, which nearly obliterated the canal of the urethra. Plate 6. fig. 2. represents the abscess in such a case. Venesection, warm baths, fomentations, leeches, and attempted catheterism were tried in vain. The urethra burst behind the stricture, the scrotum became inflamed, black, and gangrenous, the bladder was punctured, and a pint and a half of dark-coloured, fœtid urine evacuated; and, in despite of all means, he died on the sixth day.

On examining the urethra, it was found quite impervious, by the inflamed stricture. There was also inflammation of the mucous coat of the bladder, with disease of the left kidney. The general appearance of the body otherwise indicated, good general health.

A country gentleman, aged sixty-three years, who always lived very freely in every respect, was seized with complete retention of urine. On passing a catheter, a stricture was discovered about six inches from the orifice of the urethra, behind which was a calculus. The urethra burst, the scrotum inflamed and sloughed, and I removed

the stone by incision. The patient now experienced great relief, on passing about two pints of urine, almost as black as ink. In two days afterwards, another stone became impacted in the urethra, and the medical attendant did not succeed in removing it. Symptoms of collapse set in rapidly, and death took place on the following day. On inspecting the organs after death, there was found stricture of the urethra, enlargement of the prostate gland (see Plate 6), gangrene of the bladder, six small stones in the last organ, enlargement of both ureters, and disorganization of both kidneys. (See Plate 6. fig. 1. 2. 3.; Plate 7). The subject in this case hunted a great deal, indulged to excess in wine and with women, for forty years, and thus induced the disease which destroyed him.

Strictures induced by unnatural indulgence are often cured in a few weeks.

A merchant, aged twenty-six, applied to me in consequence of having read an account of the symptoms of stricture from which he suffered. He never had gonorrhœa, and ascribed his disease to a bad habit acquired at school: he was extremely nervous and low spirited. On passing a bougie, No. 2, I discovered a stricture three inches from the orifice of the urethra, another four and a half, and the last at the neck of the bladder.

The common wax bougie, No. 2, passed with difficulty, but in three weeks I could use No. 10; and he considered the stream of urine as large as ever. The instrument was steadily enlarged for a month longer, until No. 12 was passed with the greatest ease.

A solicitor, aged thirty-six, suffered from irritable stricture, induced by improper treatment of gonorrhœa. He had been affected for six months. His digestion and general health were much impaired; the appetite was bad, bowels confined, and spirits dejected; there was listless-

ness, with aversion to motion, sense of fullness after taking food, occasional head-ache, and impaired vision.

The usual remedies were employed for the improvement of the general health, and a frequent use of bougies, smeared with a diluted cerate of extract of belladonna, effected a cure in seven weeks.

A music master, aged fifty-six years, laboured under obstinate stricture, about five inches from the orifice of the urethra. He also had four urinary fistulæ below the scrotum. He experienced the greatest pain in passing urine, and his screams frequently aroused his whole family from sleep. A surgeon of eminence had unfortunately made a false passage in the urethra. The general health was bad, the countenance sallow and dejected, the appetite much impaired, and the spirits so low, as to warrant the suspicion that the sufferer might commit suicide.

The repeated use of the caustic bougies, described by MM. Ducamp, Tarvenier, and Lallemand, dilated the urethra, so as to admit the passage of a gum elastic one of No. 5, which rendered life comfortable. In three months the fistulæ had completely healed, and the patient enjoyed better health than he had done for years previously.

A Major, aged sixty years, of colossal stature, athletic, and of a sanguine temperament, had been affected with gonorrhœa twenty-six times; he now complains of strictures in the urethra, frequent desire to empty the bladder, which he accomplishes with great difficulty, accompanied by burning pain in the rectum, immediately before the evacuation of the bowels. His urine is high-coloured, and often mixed with a glary mucus, which is sometimes streaked with blood. On one occasion, he suffered from complete retention of urine, and there were numerous attempts made to pass the catheter, before the operation was accomplished. This was followed by profuse

bleeding, according to his statement, although the instrument was used by one of the most experienced and distinguished surgeons in this Metropolis. There are now six strictures in the course of the urethra; and the prostate gland is four times its natural size.

This case required the use of the caustic bougie, no less than five times during six months, before a catheter No. 5, could be passed into the bladder. The patient felt satisfied with his condition, as his health was so much better than for the preceding twenty years.

I might easily introduce several cases which fell under my own care, in exemplification of the statements made in the preceding volume; but I could not do so, without, in some instances, giving pain to many of my patients now living. Enough, I think, has been written, to convince the most unthinking individual who may peruse these pages, of the evils and miseries induced by venereal abuses, excesses, and diseases. I have endeavoured to give an outline of the history of moral depravity, both at home and abroad, as well as its almost innumerable and direful consequences; and I have purposely quoted a vast number of distinguished medical authors in support of my statements, occasionally adding the result of my own observation and experience. My strenuous endeavour, and most anxious wish have been to diminish immorality, and crime, as well as disease, in this and every other country; and I am perfectly regardless of the dishonest, partial, unjust, and venal criticisms of many of the medical reviewers, or ignorant critics of this kingdom, all of whom I have repeatedly castigated whilst a rival critic. They are now armed, and cowardly attack one unarmed, who formerly gave them blow for blow, when similarly circumstanced to themselves. These persons can never forget or forgive my just strictures upon their paltry productions and dishonest periodicals. Hence the causes of their incessant,

vituperative attacks, however unmerited. Their unjust censures have not, however, prevented repeated editions of the several standard works of mine, which they so loudly, unsparingly, and unjustly abused and condemned.

I can aver, after long observation, that a more unprincipled, ignorant, and impotent set of medical critics, with a few honourable exceptions, do not exist than in this country. They generally allow private feeling, party prejudice, *self-interest*, and a variety of other bad motives, to influence them in their reviews, criticisms, and notices of works. They pass over or abuse the most valuable works, while they, at the same time, praise and bespatter miserable productions, which speedily find their way to the butterman, and trunk-maker, "*quos legunt cacantes.*" How often had I, while a medical editor, justly praised really valuable works, which were at the same time censured, in the severest terms, by most of my contemporaries; and how often had I as justly censured useless productions, which they lauded "to the fifth heavens." In fact, the majority of our medical critics want the talent, erudition, candour, and impartiality of their contemporaries in France, Germany, Italy, and other European nations, as well as in America and India; while the most able medical authors and critics belong to this country, though they are, unfortunately, fewest in number. I enter into these particulars to prepare the reader for the attacks of the critics on this work. He must know, that every volume I produce, however useful or successful, is unsparingly assailed; although the profession and the public induce me to continue my feeble and humble exertions for the promotion of the interests of science and humanity.

Fig. 1. Pl. 1.

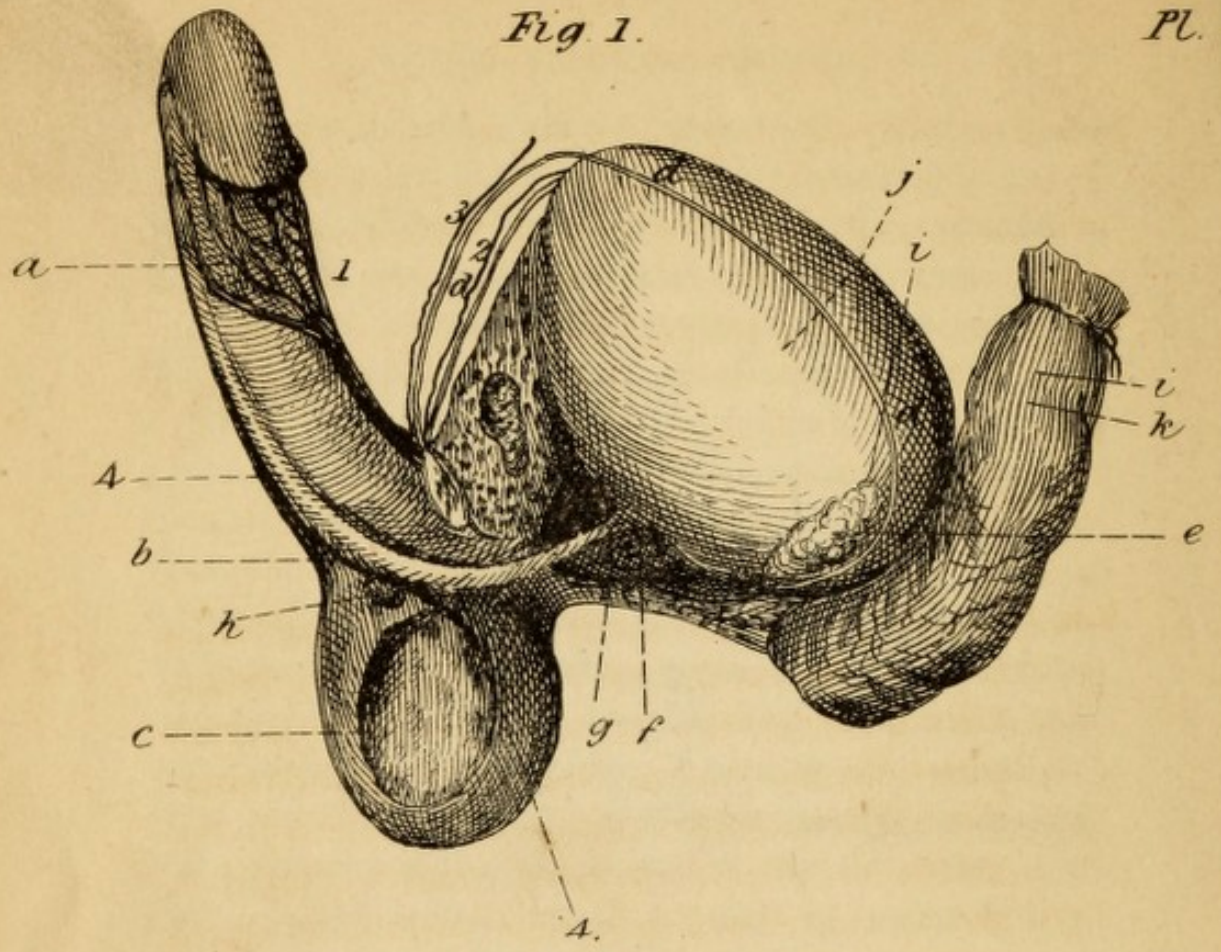
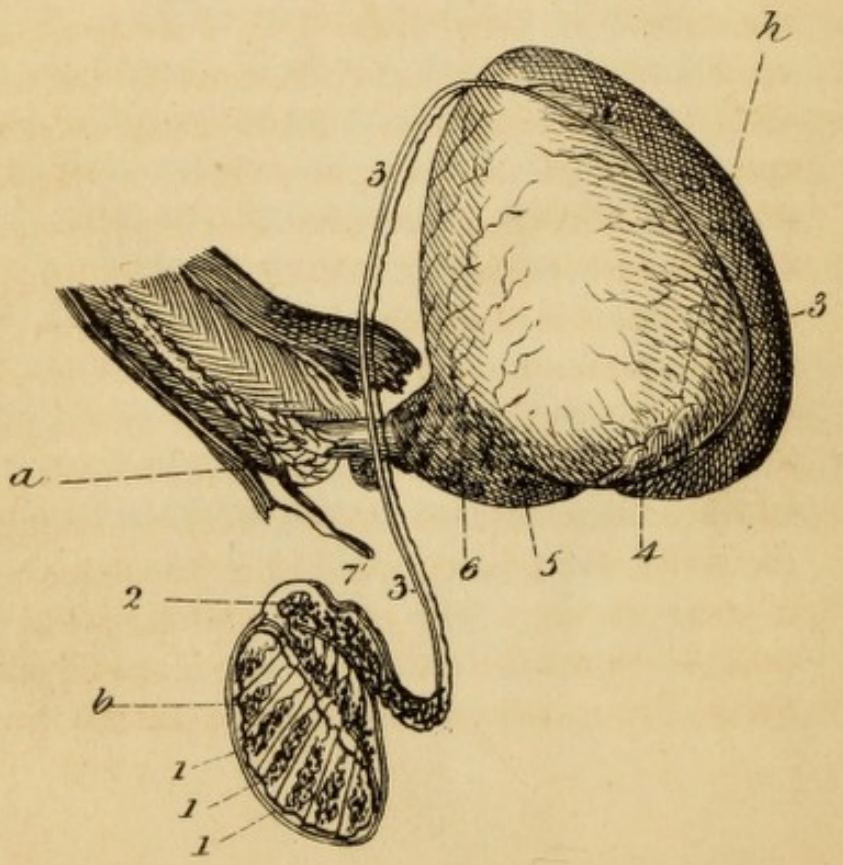


Fig. 2.



J. Swinford, lith.

TEXT TO PLATES.

PLATE I.

FIG. 1.—*a*. The Penis, composed of two cylindrical bodies (corpora cavernosa), the principal seat of erection, and a spongy substance (corpus spongiosum), which surrounds the urethra, destined for the transmission of the semen and urine, with blood-vessels and nerves, all these parts being connected together, and surrounded by a dense, sinewy substance, termed superficial fascia, and the common integuments.

The corpora cavernosa, are oblong bodies, from seven to nine inches in length, united to each other in the mesial line, forming the body of the penis, and contain several arteries derived from the pudic, as well as numerous veins. Each corpus cavernosum, or half of the penis, commences at the abdominal extremity called crus, which is the smallest part, and is attached to the rami or branches of the bones, named ischium and pubis. Both corpora or halves unite at the symphysis or joint of the pubis, forming the greatest portion of the body of the penis, and terminate in an obtuse point, to which is intimately attached the glans or summit of the penis, which is connected with the spongy body of the urethra. The corpora contain numerous cells, which are distended with blood during erection.—For an account of diseases of the penis,

see p. 354; the articles Syphilis, Gonorrhœa, Stricture, &c.

The urethra, or urinary passage, is a membraneous canal, extending from the glans penis to the neck of the bladder. and varying in length and width according to the erect or collapsed state of the penis. In the former state, it is generally from seven to nine inches long, and its calibre about three or four lines. Its width is very much diminished in cases of stricture.—See Plates 3, 4, 5, 6. The urethra is lined by mucous membrane; and is divided into, 1st, the prostatic portion, which is from an inch and a quarter to an inch and a half in length; 2nd, the membraneous portion, which is about half an inch long; 3d, the bulbous portion *b*, which is about half an inch long; and 4th, the spongy portion, which occupies the remainder of the length of the canal.—For account of diseases, see pp. 338. 352. 354.

c.—The Testicles.—These are of an oval form, enveloped by proper tunics.—For description of their structure, see fig. 2.

d. d.—The deferent canals, or seminal excretory ducts, which convey the seminal fluid secreted by the testicles, to the seminal vesicles or reservoirs, *e*.

f.—The ejaculatory duct of the seminal vesicle, opening into the prostatic portion of the urethra, through which the seminal fluid passes into the urethra, during its emission.—For an account of the diseases of these canals, see pp. 344. 341.

g.—The Prostate Gland, composed of numerous follicles (see p. 332), with minute ducts, which unite to form larger tubes, the mouths of which, ten or twelve in number, open on the under surface of the urethra, on either side of the central prominence.

termed veru-montanum.—See Plate 2. *c c*. This gland secretes profusely, its fluid is mixed with the semen, when discharged into this portion of the urethra; and when it is supplied very abundantly, escapes from the urethra, and is often mistaken for spermatorrhœa or seminal weakness.—See pp. 332—351.

h.—Cowper's Glands, are two small oblong, round bodies, situated anterior to the prostate, and hence termed anti-prostatic, by some anatomists. The duct of each gland is about an inch in length, and opens into the urethra a little anterior to its bulb. The secretion of these glands, as well as that of the mucous membrane of the urethra, is also mixed with the seminal fluid during its emission, Pl. 2, *b b*.

i.—The ureters or ducts, which convey the urine secreted by the kidneys into the bladder.—For an account of the diseases of the ureters, see p. 354.

j.—The Urinary Bladder.—For an account of its diseases, see pp. 348—352.

k.—The large intestine, called rectum or lower bowel, closely situated to the bladder, seminal vesicles, and prostate gland; and often becomes sympathetically deranged by the diseases of these parts, and *vice versa*.—See pp. 327. 355.

1. 2. 3. 4.—The blood-vessels of the penis.

Fig. 2.—*a*. The Bulb of the urethra, with the blood-vessels dividing, to form a tissue which assists in the erection of the penis.

b.—The Testicle.—This organ weighs about an ounce, and is the size of a pigeon's egg; it consists of a number of capillary tubes, named seminiferous ducts (tubuli seminiferæ, *i i i*). They are very long and tortuous, are arranged in conical bundles, which are separated from each other by fibrous

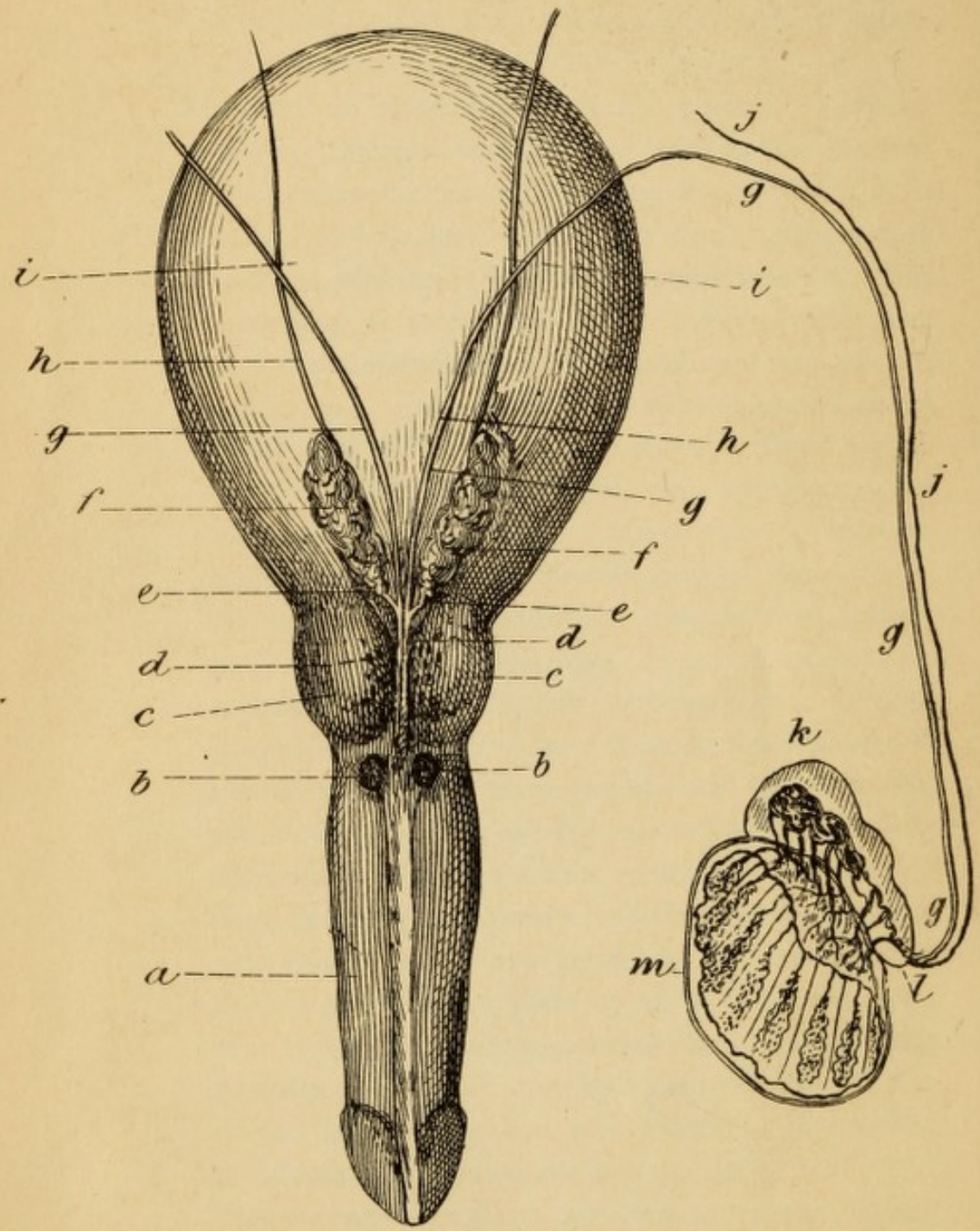
bands. The union of these tubes forms another set, called tubuli recti, which are sixteen or twenty in number, and ultimately form five or six, the vasa efferentia, which arrive at the head of the epedidymis, and form the vasa deferens, or excretory seminal duct.

The terminal blood-vessels ramify upon all the former tubes; through the coats of which, the seminal fluid transudes into the tubes, from which it is conveyed to a bundle of tubes forming the upper part of the testicle, called epididymis, 2. But according to some anatomists, the vasa efferentia and vas deferens form the head and tail of the epididymis, which is a single tube, situated at the upper part of the body of the testicle. The deferent canal having thus formed the epididymis by numerous convolutions of itself ascends 3, with the spermatic vessels, and passes through the groins, the external abdominal rings the inguinal canals, and the internal abdominal rings, when it now separates from the spermatic vessels, and is conducted round the bladder 3. 3. 3. by the false lateral ligaments of the latter organ, and deposits the semen in the duct of the corresponding vesicula semnalis. It enlarges as it advances.—Plate 2.

4.—Here the tube approaches its fellow on the opposite side, and both are also joined by the two ducts of the seminal vesicles, their union forming the common ejaculatory ducts, which run through the prostate gland, and open into the prostatic portion of the urethra, 5.—See also Plate 2, *a. b. c.*—For the diseases of these parts, see pp. 345. 349.

4.—The vesiculæ seminales are two convoluted tubes, about an inch and a half or two inches long, placed at the under surface of the bladder, each terminating

Fig. 1. *Pl. 2.*



inferiorly by a small duct, which joins the deferent canal, and then forms the ejaculatory ducts.—See Plate 2. The superior part of each seminal receptacle is a cuesac, anterior to which the ureter enters the bladder.—For the diseases of these parts, see pp. 345. 351. The seminal vesicles or receptacles are generally supposed to contain the semen after its secretion until the time of its emission. They also secrete a mucus which dilutes it.

PLATE II.

a.—The penis and urethra.

b.—Cowper's glands with their ducts opening into the urethra.

c.—The prostate gland, with the mouths of its ducts.

d.—The two ejaculatory seminal ducts, formed by those of the seminal receptacles and deferent canals, *e e.*

e. e.—The union of the deferent canals, and ducts of the seminal receptacles, to form the ejaculatory seminal ducts, *d d.*

f. f.—The vesiculæ seminales, or seminal vesicles, for the reception of the semen from the deferent canals, and its retention until the time of emission.

g. g. g. g.—The deferent canals commencing at the summit of the epididymis, ascending with the spermatic vessels and nerves into the abdominal rings, and proceeding to join the inferior part of the vescula seminalis to form the ejaculatory canal on each side, *e e.*

h. h.—The ureters or urinary canals from the kidneys which enter the bladder under the summit, or on the inner side of the vesiculæ seminales. The use of these tubes is to convey the urine, when secreted by the kidneys, into the bladder.

i. i.—The triangular portion of the bladder between the

lower portions of the deferent canals, which is the most sensitive part of the organ, and the seat of acute pain when a stone lodges on it, more especially after the evacuation of the urine.

j.j.j.—The spermatic artery which supplies the testicle with blood for its nutrition and secretion.

k.—The head of the epididymis.

l.—The tail of the epididymis.

m.—The testicle.—For description of these last parts, see Plate 1, fig. 2; Plate 8, and the diseases.—See pp. 338. 352.

The testicle secretes the semen which is conveyed through the epididymis and deferent canal, to the ducts of the seminal vesicles, and retained in these receptacles, in which it must remain for some hours or days until its thinner parts are absorbed, and it becomes elaborated before it is prolific. When emitted daily it is mostly unprolific, and its effusion highly injurious to health.—See Masturbation, p. 256.

PLATE III.

The object in Plates 3, 4, 5 and 6, containing eleven figures, is to show the natural state of the urethra, and that every part of it, from the external orifice to the neck of the bladder, may be the seat of stricture or obstruction (see account of Stricture), which may ultimately cause disease of the prostate gland, neck of the bladder, ureters and kidneys. —See pp. 341. 343. 350.

FIG. 1.—*a.* The natural calibre of the urethra.

b.—The follicles which supply the discharge at first in gonorrhœa.—See p. 343.

FIG. 2.—*a.* A bad case of stricture, with several obstructions.

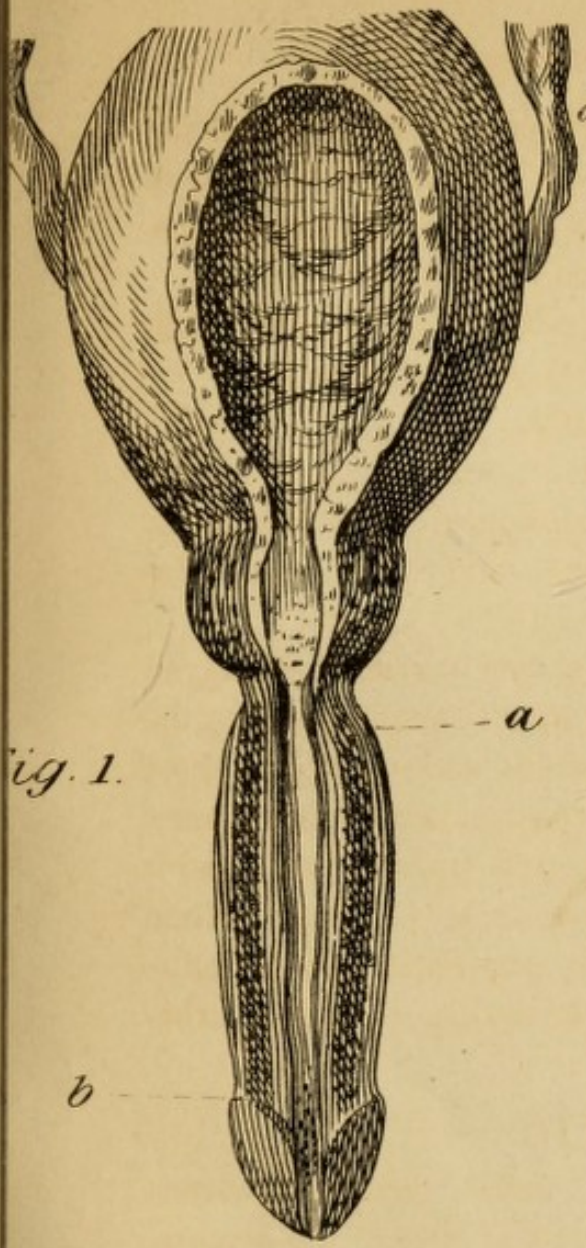


Fig. 1.

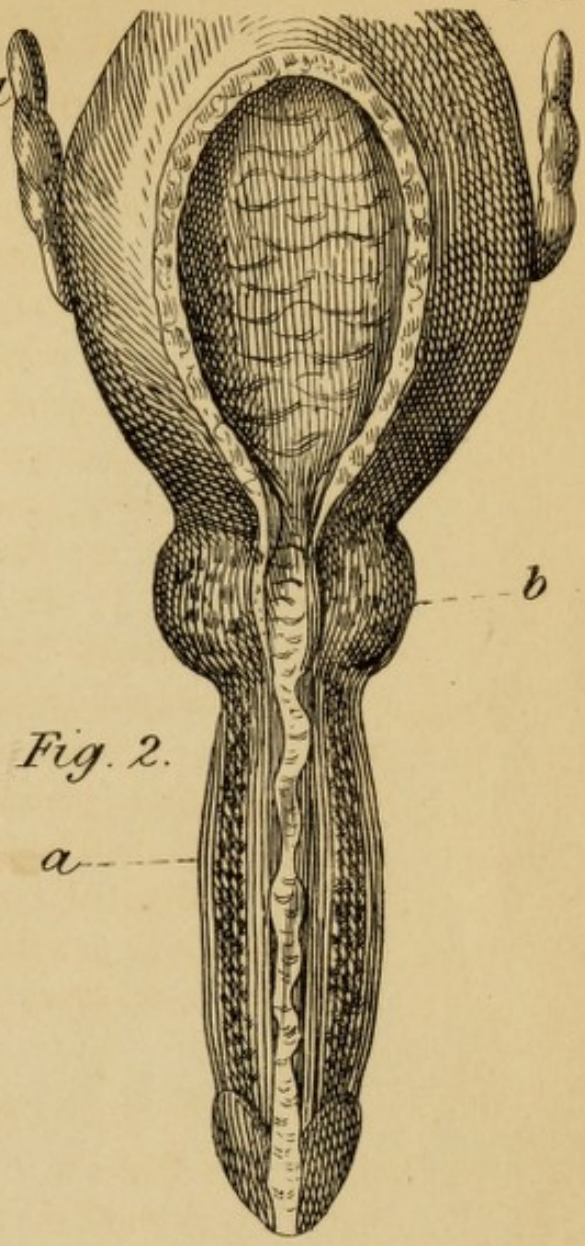


Fig. 2.

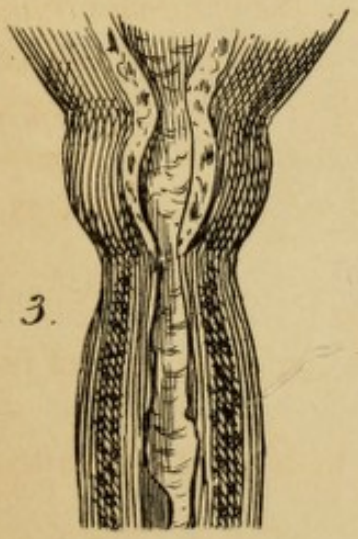


Fig. 3.

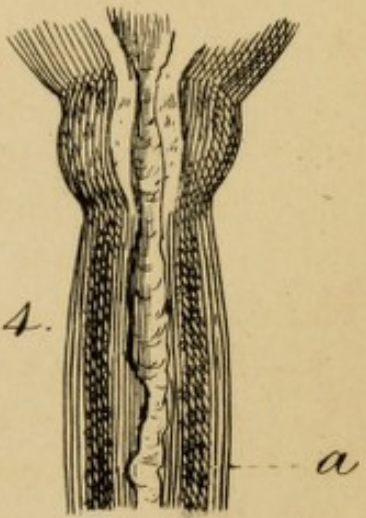


Fig. 4.

Fig. 1.

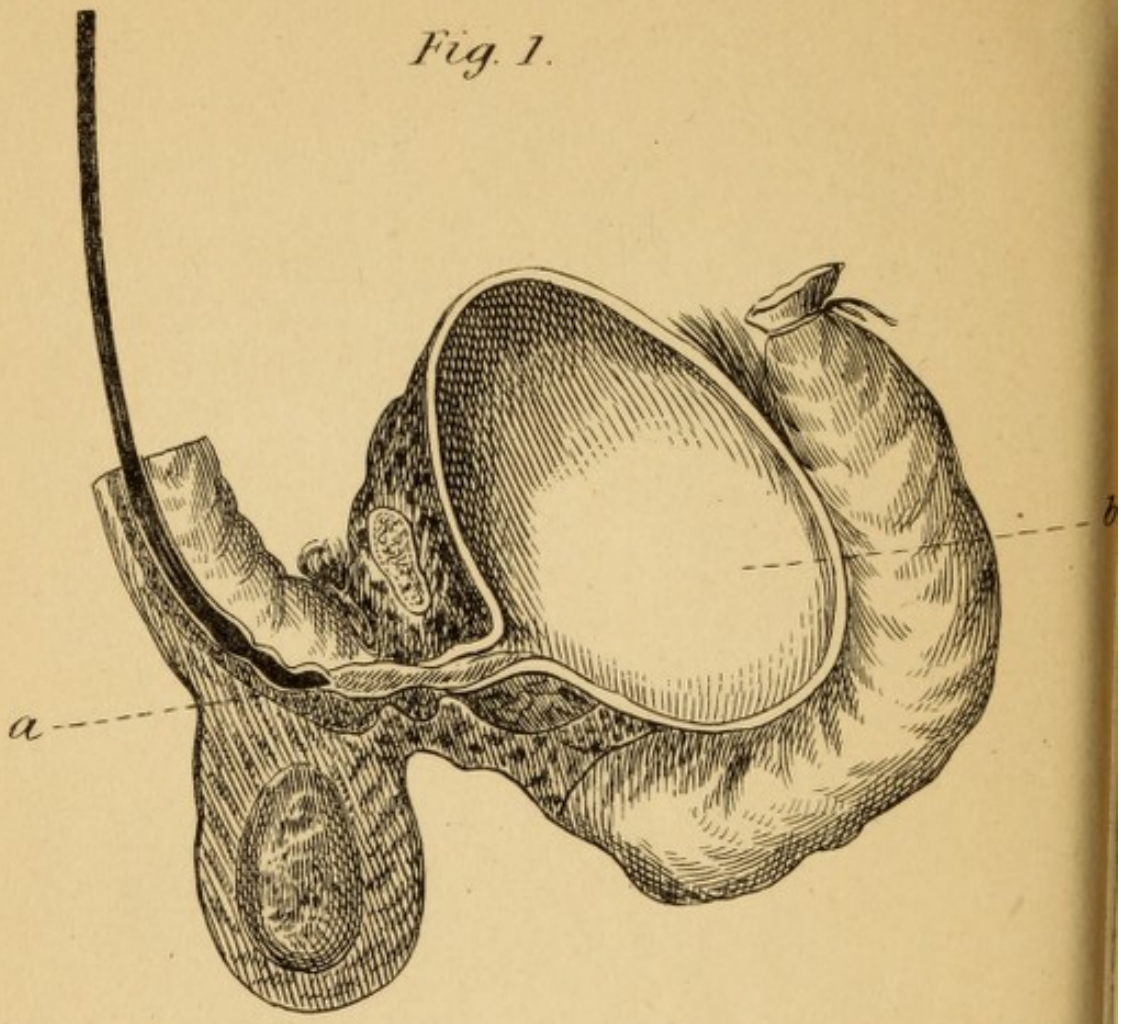


Fig. 2.

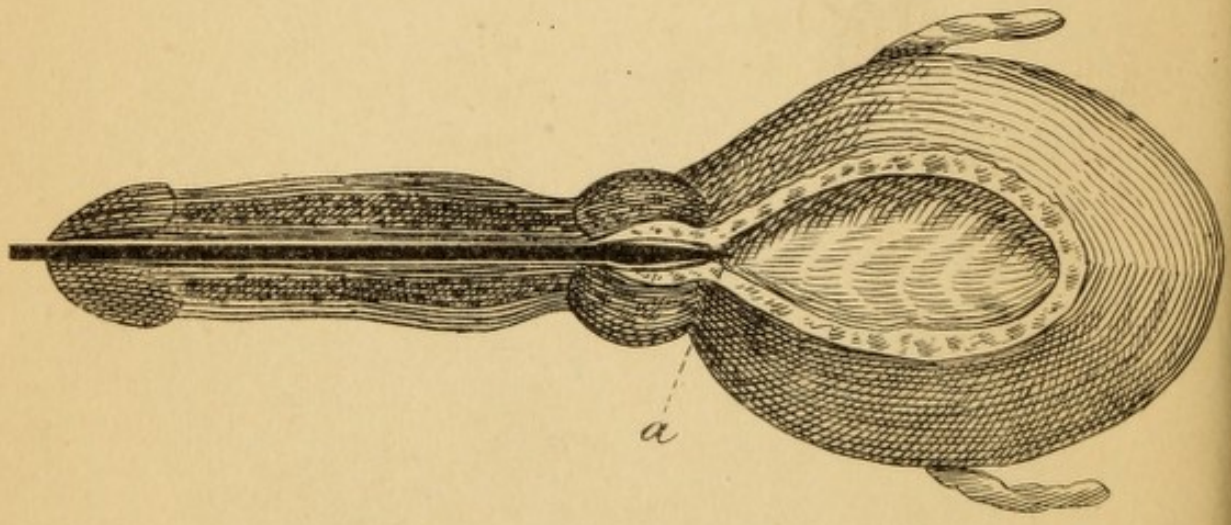


Fig. 1.

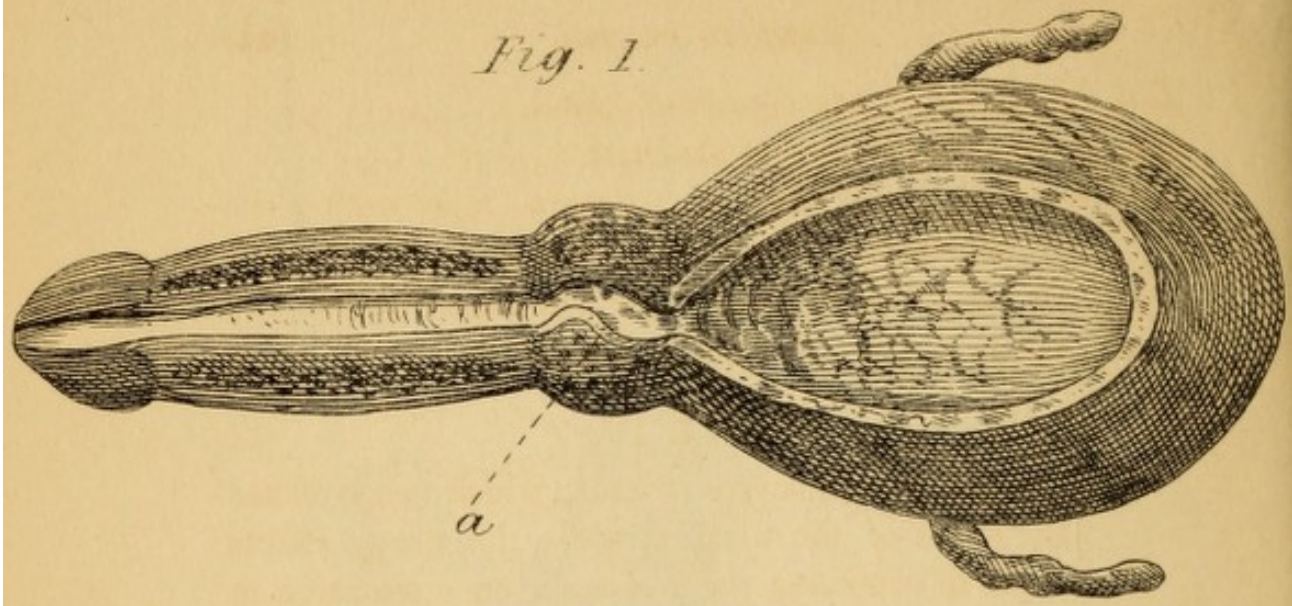


Fig. 2.

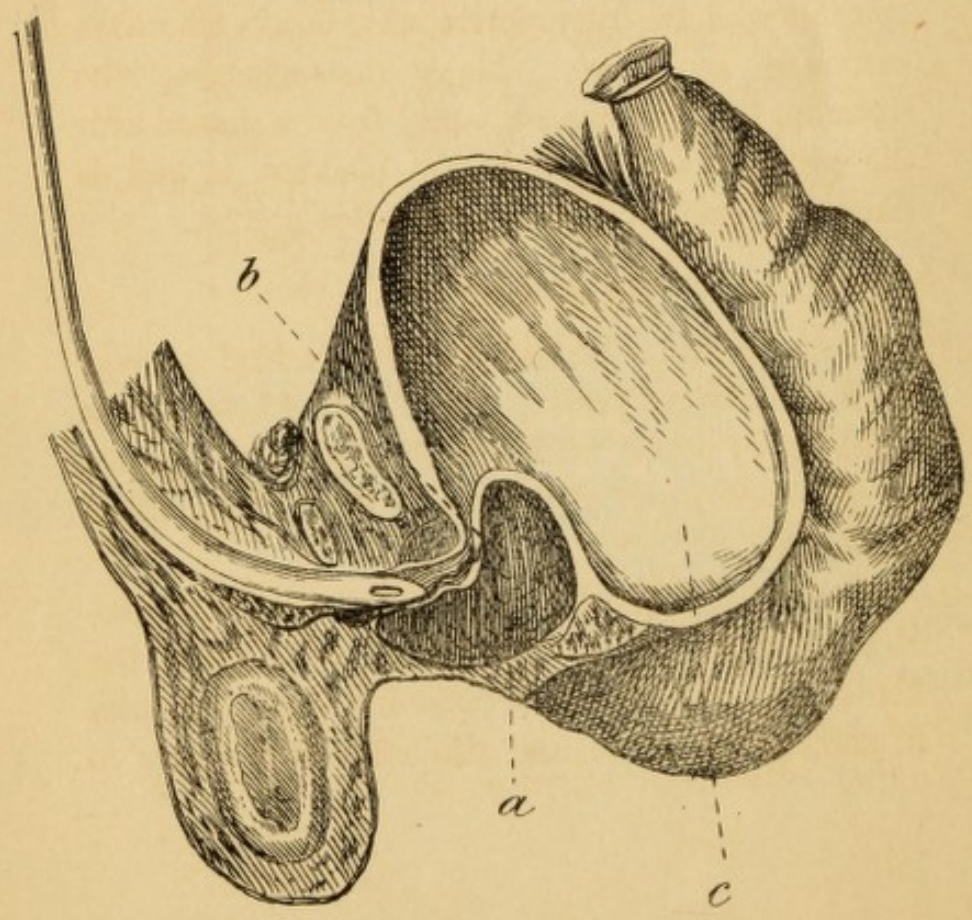


FIG. 2.—*b*. An enlarged prostate gland.

FIG. 3.—*a*. Simple case of stricture.

FIG. 4.—*a*. A severe case of stricture, representing the distortion of a bougie while being passed through it. For illustrations of the distortions of bougies, the reader should refer to Plate 9.

PLATE IV.

a.—A side view of a severe stricture which nearly closes the canal of the urethra, while the strong efforts made to overcome the resistance on attempting to empty the bladder, have dilated the urinary passage between the seat of the stricture and bladder.

b.—The cavity of the bladder.

c.—The rectum, or lowest portion of bowel.

FIG. 2.—*a*. Contraction of the muscular fibres about the neck of the bladder, barely admitting the point of a bougie. This form of disease is common to all who commit venereal excesses, and most especially to those who are intemperate, or to others who have practised self-abuse. Many masturbators, who have not had gonorrhœa, suffer from stricture near the prostate and neck of the bladder, as well as disease of the last named part.—See p. 338.

PLATE V.

FIG. 1.—*a*. An irregular course of the urethral passage from an enlarged prostate gland. The internal use of iodate of potass, with scarification of the gland, or the application of nitrate of silver, may afford great relief.

FIG. 2.—*a*. A diseased prostate gland, with very considerable enlargement, nearly closing the neck of the bladder, *b*, and thereby occasioning great difficulty in passing the urine, and also a frequent desire to

do so. A portion of urine always remains in the space behind the gland *c*; this undergoes decomposition and acquires a peculiar and fœtid odour. This most painful disease is very frequent in old age, especially to those who have committed venereal excesses, have had frequent attacks of gonorrhœa, or lived very intemperately. The disease generally proves fatal, though the sufferer may survive, even when the gland is ulcerated for several weeks or months.—See p. 332. 351.

PLATE VI.

FIG. 1.—*a*. Represents an enlarged prostate gland, with a catheter passed through it, often the result of unskilful practice, and not depressing the handle of the instrument sufficiently in passing it. The irritation of the prostate frequently causes inflammation and ulceration of the bladder, *b b b*, with a thick mucuous or purulent discharge, and also a painful state of the testicle, with a frequent desire to void the contents of the rectum, *c*.—See last Plate; and also pp. 332. 351.

FIG. 2.—*a*. A very severe case of stricture closing the passage; the urine, from pressure, has caused dilatation of the urethra, and an abscess which has burst in the perineum, *b*; and from the constant efforts to void the urine, inflammation and thickening of the coats of the bladder have been induced *c c*.

d.—The situation of a stone in the bladder.

FIG. 3.—*a*. A stone in the urethra, causing complete retention of urine, and death.

b.—A stone which has passed through the muscular fibres and become firmly grasped by the coats of the bladder, in which position it could not be felt by means of an instrument. Some years since,

Fig. 1.

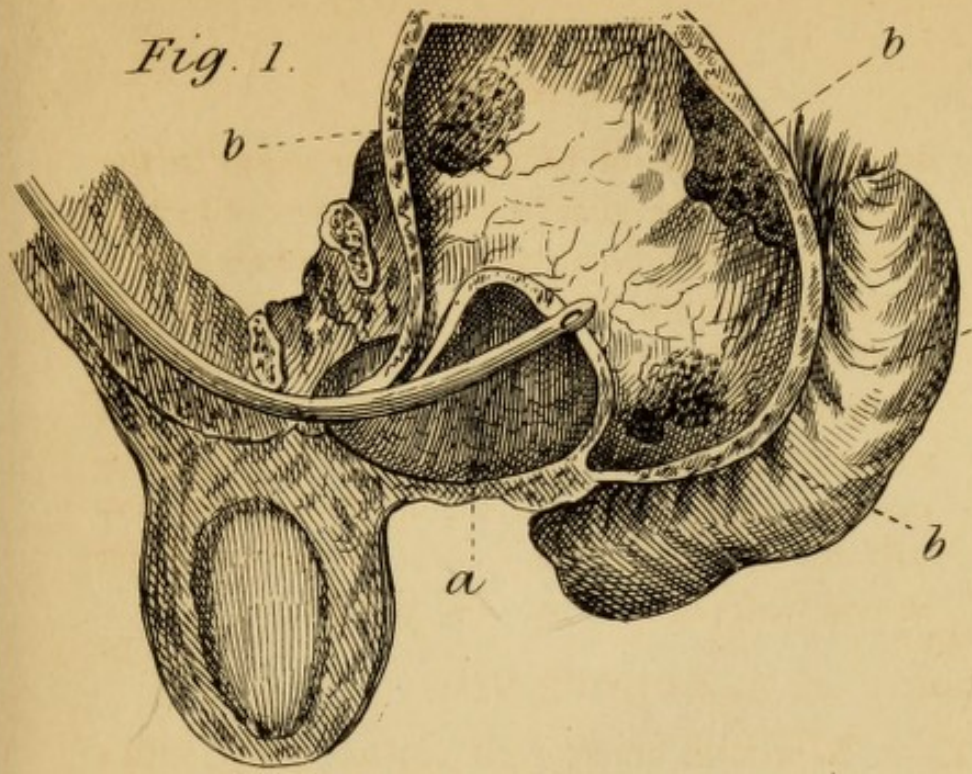


Fig. 2.

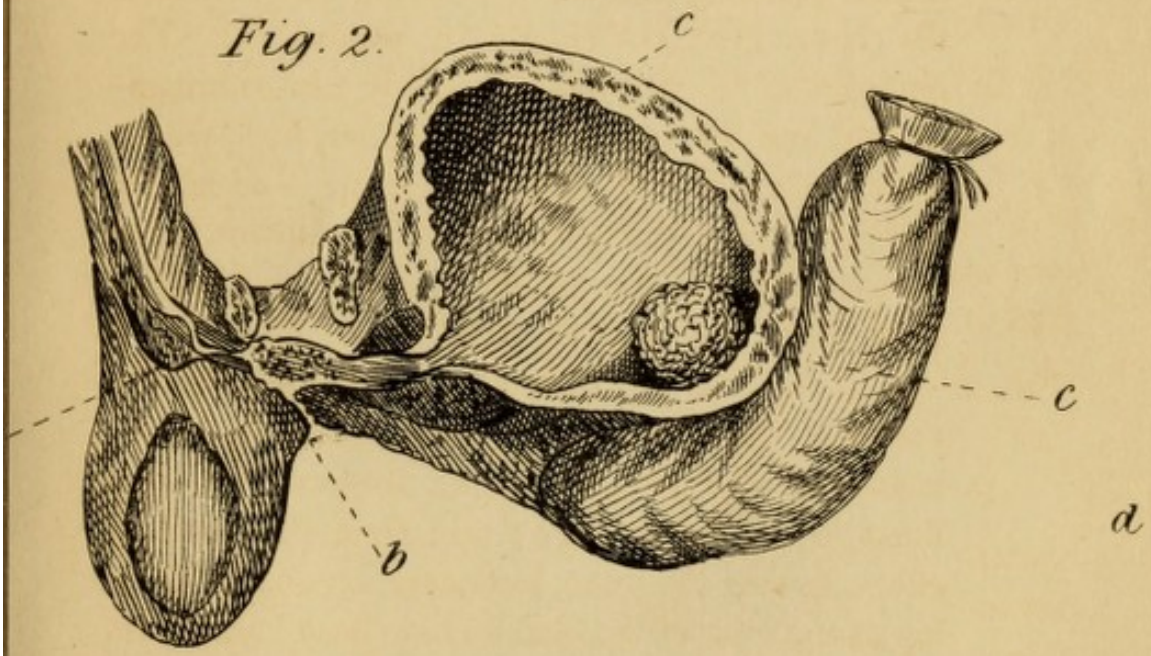


Fig. 3.

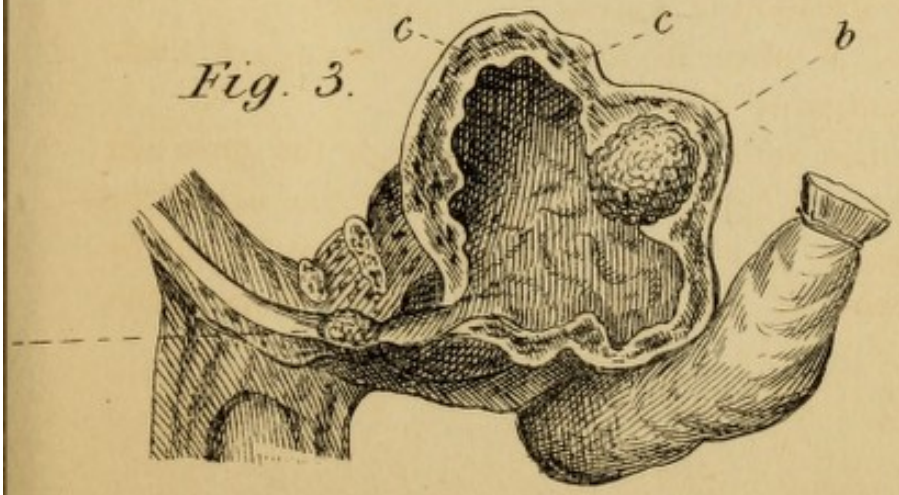


Fig. 1.

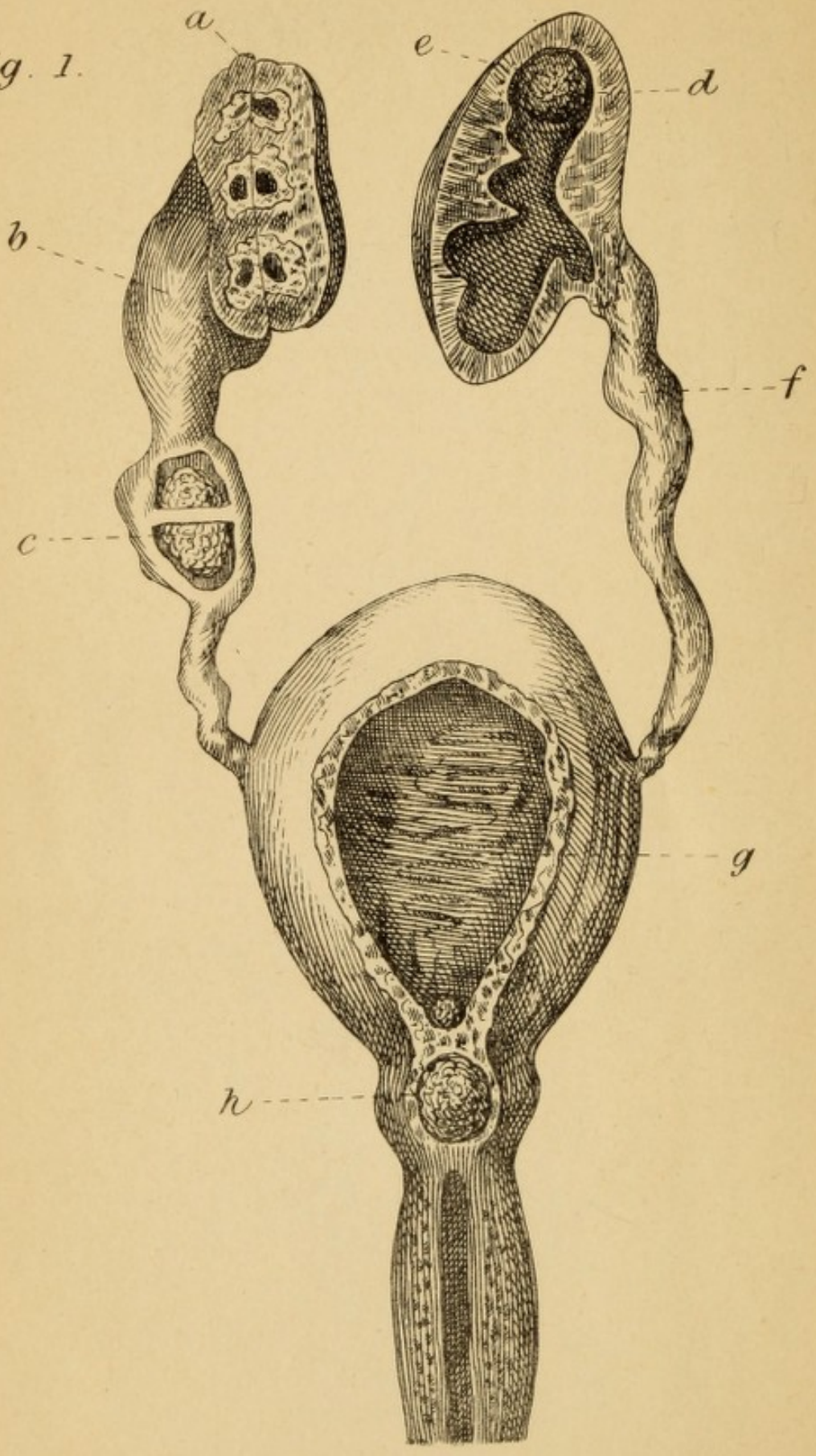


Fig. 1.

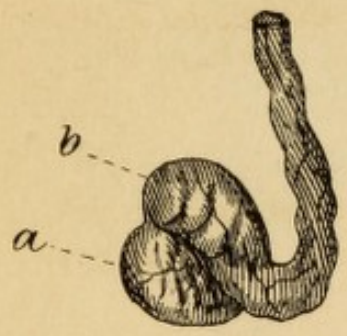


Fig. 2.

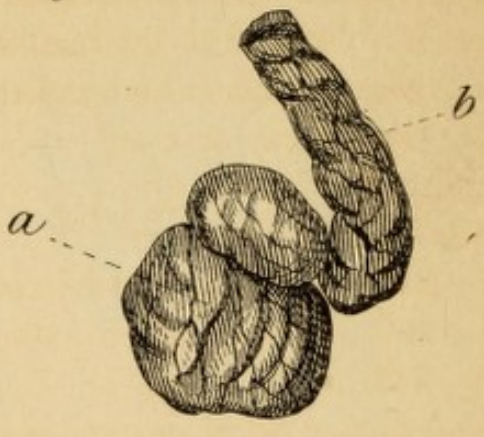


Fig. 3.

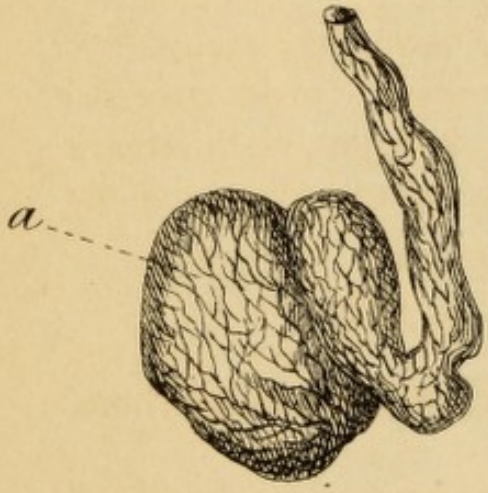
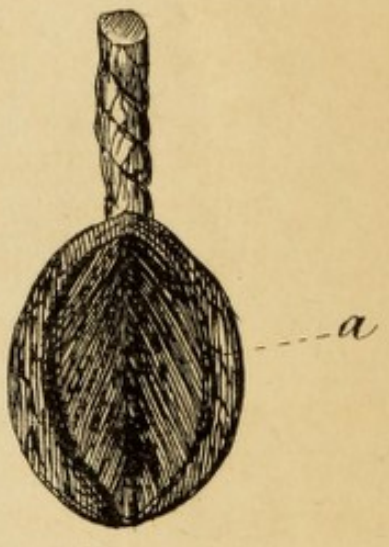


Fig. 4.



Mrs. Sommerville obtained a grant from Government for destroying the stone, but she only gave relief in cases of this kind, as after death the stone was detected in the manner here represented. The great irritation has caused much thickening of the bladder *c c*.

PLATE VII.

a.—A diseased kidney with its structure nearly destroyed, and the organ much reduced in size.—See pp. 341, 343. 350.

b.—A dilated pelvis or upper part of tube which conveys the urine from the kidney to the bladder, caused by the obstruction of the stone *c*.

d.—The other kidney destroyed from irritation of a stone *e*.

f.—The urinary tube or ureter much enlarged by the irritation proceeding from the kidney.

g.—The interior of the bladder, with thickening of its coats.

h.—A stone in the prostate and neck of the bladder.

These numerous and destructive diseases were induced by intemperance, gonorrhœa, and excess in venery.—For a further account of diseases of the kidney, see p. 354.

PLATE VIII.

Fig. 1.—*a*. A Testicle, very much wasted from gonorrhœa, contracted while young.

b.—The Epididymis—for ever after remains large and hard.—See also fig. *b*, and p. 344.

Fig. 2.—A hypertrophy, or enlargement of the testicle, and deferent seminal duct, with enlargement of the epididymis and from chronic inflammation. See p. 343. *b*.

FIG. 3.—*a*. Acute inflammation of the testicle, with enlargement of the epididymis and spermatic cord.

FIG. 4.—*a*. Acute inflammation of the internal structure of the testicle.

These diseases are often caused by gonorrhœa, and and very much injure the structure of the testicle, diminish its secretary power, and often causes sterility.—For farther account of diseases of the testicles and spermatic cords, see pp. 344. 352.

PLATE IX.

This plate illustrates the various impressions made by strictures on wax bougies. The obstruction will correspond to the depression made in the instrument. It may exist in any part of the urethra, from the external orifice to the neck of the bladder. —See Plates 3, 4, 5.

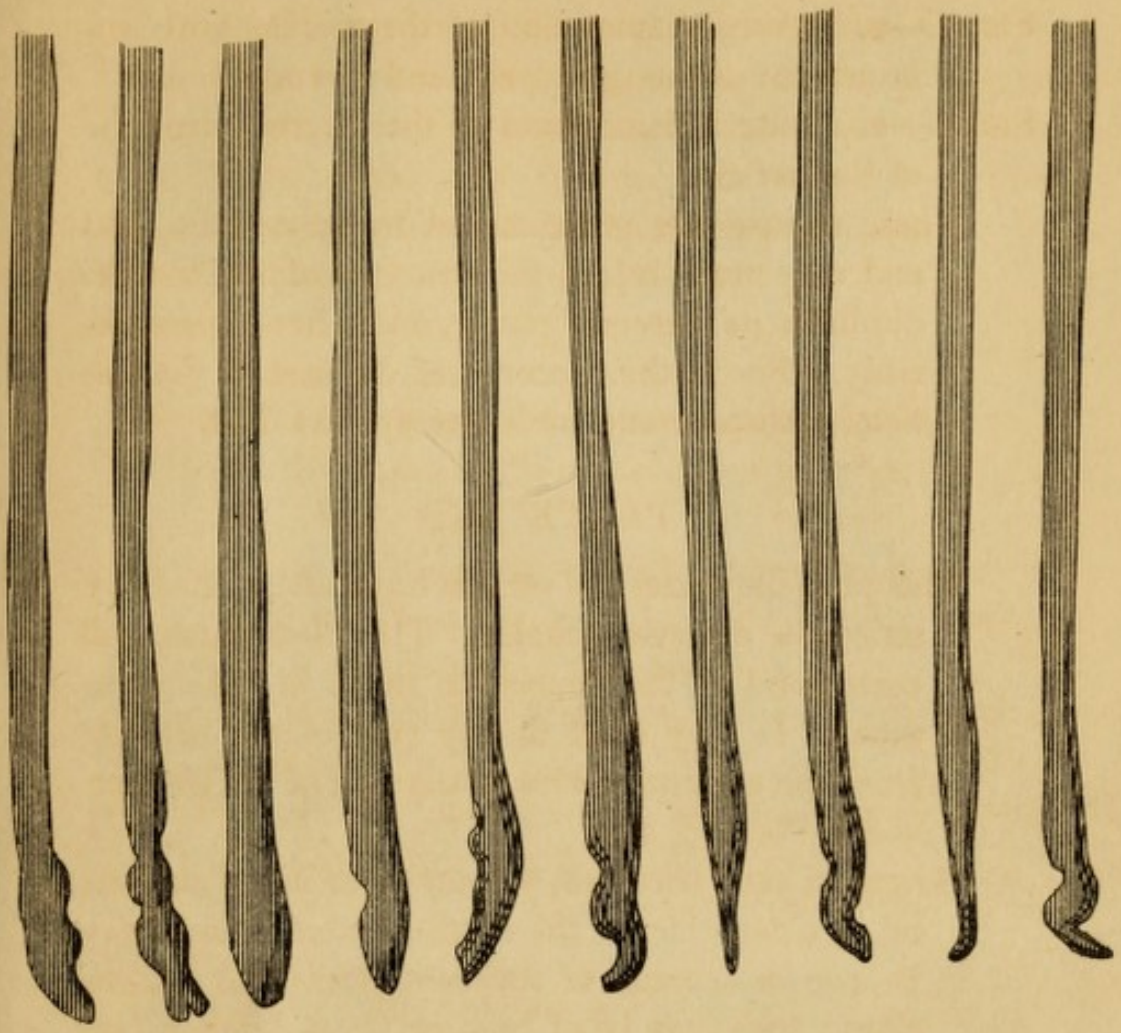
Strictures may occur on the under or upper surface, or on either side of the urethral canal; there may be one or several, of different forms and dimensions; they may be of long or short duration (see Chapter on Stricture); and they can only be cured by a judicious use of bougies. There is no medicine as yet discovered, which can cure them by being administered internally, though some suppose that the iodate of potass possesses this property.

In some cases it will be necessary to continue the use of the bougie for several weeks or months, while other cases, a cure is effected in two or three months.

PLATE X.

FIG. 1.—*a*. Chancre on the glans penis.

b.—Chancre on the inner surface of the prepuce or



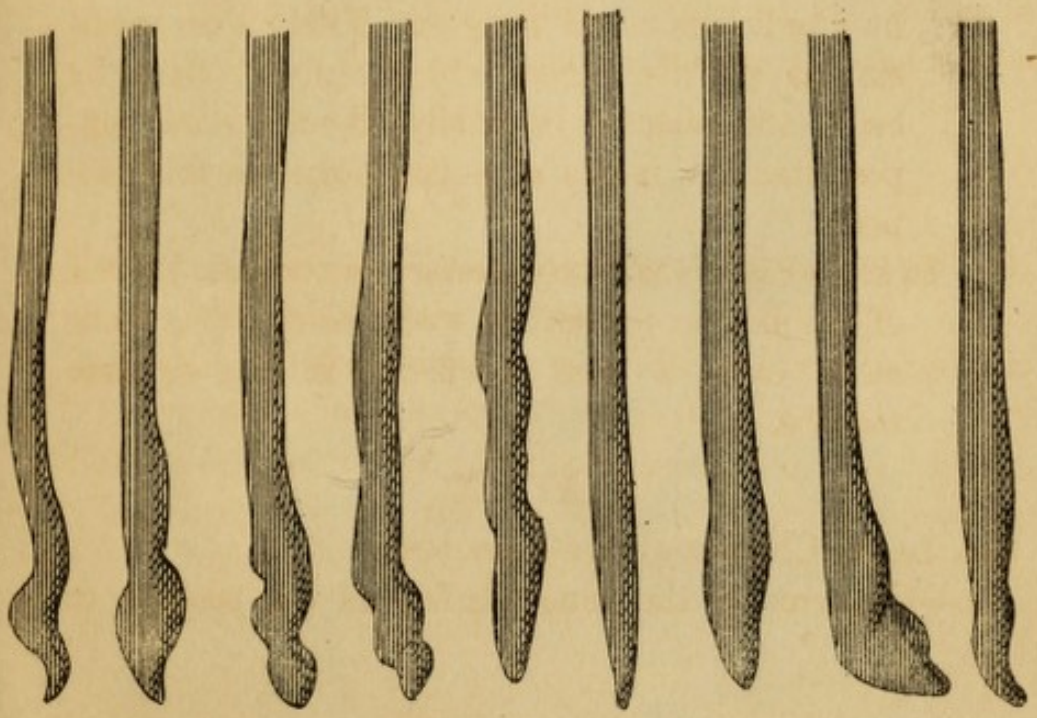


Fig. 1.

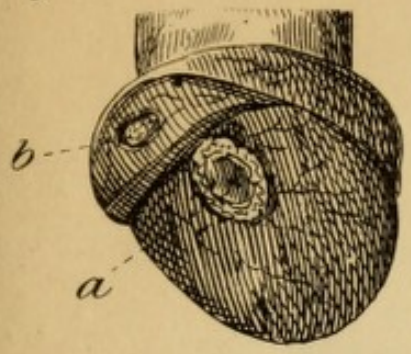


Fig. 2. Pl. 10.

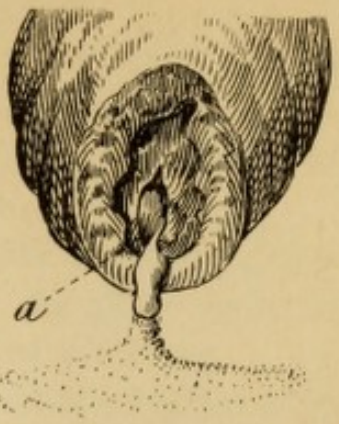


Fig. 3.

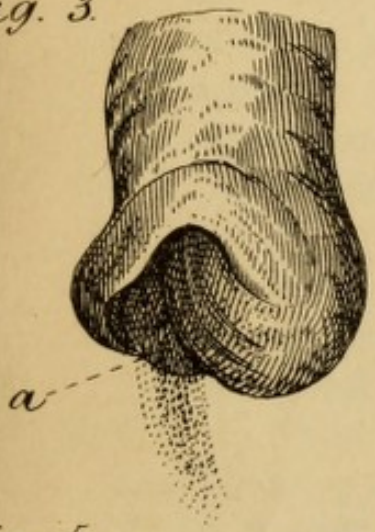


Fig. 4.

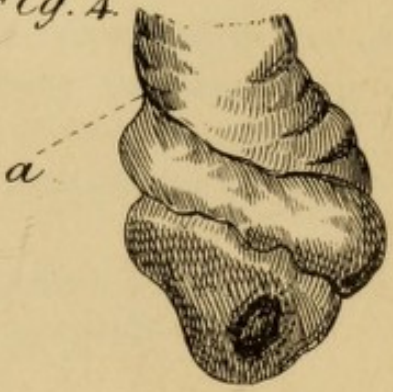


Fig. 5.



Fig. 6.

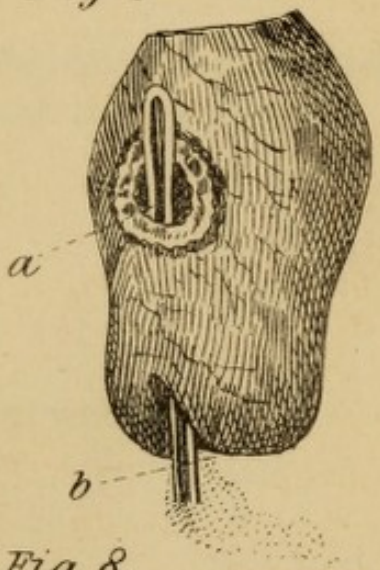


Fig. 7.

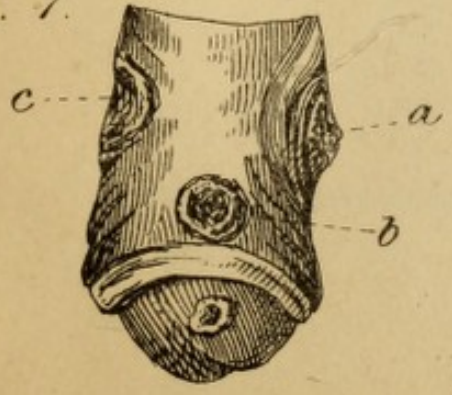


Fig. 8.



foreskin, which partly is forced behind the glans, as in fig. 4, and is termed paraphymosis.

Fig. 2.—*a*. A Gonorrhœal discharge, with inflammation of the edge of the prepuce.

Fig. 3.—*a*. Phymosis; the prepuce being so tight, that it cannot be passed behind the glans penis, in this case accompanied gonorhœal discharge.

Fig. 4.—*a*. Paraphymosis; the prepuce being forced behind the glans penis.

The reader will find an account of the nature and treatment of the diseases now illustratad, in the chapters on Syphilis and Gonorrhœa.

Fig. 5.—*a*. Chancre on the external surface of the prepuce.

b.—Phymosis in an aged patient, with gonorrhœa.

Fig. 6.—*a*. Ulceration of the prepuce.

b.—Gonorrhœal Discharge.

Fig. 7.—*a*. Tubercle on the prepuce.

b.—Excavation on falling off of the tubercle.

c.—Ravages of the ulcer.

Fig. 8.—*a*. Sloughing of the penis; which rapidly destroyed the whole organ to the pubes.

PRINTED BY W. WILCOCKSON, ROLLS BUILDINGS, FETTER LANE.